THE MAGUS ERA

BOOK 10

Blood Red

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Magus Era

(巫神纪)

by

Blood Red

(血红)

Synopsis

Long ago, there were people who stood upon the earth with their heads held high. They never bowed to anyone because of their indomitable spirit. They were capable of controlling wind and lightning, and conquering dragons and serpents. They seemed strong enough to split the earth and shatter the stars with their fists. They traveled throughout the land and called themselves Magi. Eventually, one of them would become a Supreme Magus! These men are the ancestors of human beings. Their blood is what we all share today.

Qing Long is the former strongest man in the world. He traveled through space and time and was reborn as Ji Hao in the Fire Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland. It's a complicated world. Forces from both inside and outside of the clan want this young and talented boy to die. Under great pressure, Ji Hao makes a deal with a mysterious man, who resides in his spiritual space, never showing his real face. He gains two drops of blood from a dragon and phoenix. Afterwards, Ji Hao becomes increasingly more powerful.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Law @ Qidian International

Translation Edit by Hitesh_ @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 901: Gong Gong's Power

Priest Corpse was a powerful prehistorical being. He was a spirit corpse that had cultivated himself properly. The guidance of Priest Hua and Priest Mu allowed him to attain his great powers and abilities from the death. His power was immeasurably great, and he could literally move mountains and turn oceans upside down, chase the stars and grasp the sun.

Gong Gong was the current Water God who inherited the Water God bloodline from the ancient Water God. He was born with a strong power and great abilities. Added with those, countless secret magics and divine treasures passed down from the original Water God through generations, he was also immeasurably powerful.

Priest Corpse guarded Zhu Rong Tianming obstinately, and Gong Gong couldn't even harm a hair of Zhu Rong Tianming, no matter how crazy he was right now.

A faint golden layer of divine light drifted and formed a flame-shaped light screen, silently covering Priest Corpse's body. Gong Gong had been launching attacks with incomparable fierceness, yet, this light screen stayed perfectly motionless.

Gong Gong's eyes were glowing-red, that made him look like a mad lion. He roared and roared, even sending all rivers within the area tens of thousands miles in radius around him, up into the sky. They roared across the sky like white water dragons, wildly and rampantly striking on Priest Corpse's defensive divine light.

Black smoke puffed up while a watery mist spread out. Gong Gong hid in the rolling black smoke while those dragon-like rivers turned more and more violent in the sky. Those flying rivers swished faster and faster, and occasionally, a few rivers would bump into each other and cause a thunderous bang. After that, dazzling thunderbolts would burst.

"Break!"

Gong Gong abruptly burst with a resonant roar. Meanwhile, he raised both of his hands. High up in the air, a purple, enormous hammer and a golden chisel clashed fiercely against each other. In the following moment, an earth-shaking boom could be heard and a thumb-sized, as extremely sharp thunderbolt dazzled down from the chisel and struck on Priest Corpses's divine light.

Gong Gong had broken the heaven and swept across countless divine palaces. No one knew how many ancient divine treasures kept in secret places in the heaven had been taken away by him.

This enormous purple hammer and golden chisel were called thunder hammer and lighting chisel, and were inherited supreme treasures that belonged to the ancient Thunder God. This pair of treasure were naturally created by the great Dao of thunder and lightning, along with the world itself.

The thunderbolt seemed to be nothing special, yet it was generated by the great Dao of thunder and lighting of Pan Gu world, and was incredibly powerful. Even though Gong Gong wasn't a descendant of the Thunder God, he could release thirty to fifty percent of the powers of this pair of treasure.

Priest Corpse didn't manage to react timely, and as a result, the mountain-steady defensive divine light was punctured and the golden thunderbolt, which struck on his head. Following a loud bang, the thunderbolt blasted out, burned Priest Corpse's long hair and exposed his smooth scalp.

As black smoke puffed up from his head, Priest Corpse fell from the air and created a human-shaped dent on the ground.

Bo Qiujia and the group of disciples of Priest Corpse were infuriated, but were frightened badly as well. When Priest Corpse was struck down from the sky, they made their moves simultaneously. Countless treasures and magic weapons, including all kinds of beads, jade and gemstone bottles, ruyi, and lotuses

were sent up into the sky. They were shining brightly and transforming into splendid light streams as they descended on Gong Gong's head.

Gong Gong raised his head, gave a long, shrill, bright, resonant and sad roar. Then, he glowered at the trembling Zhu Rong Tianming and growled, "Zhu Rong kid, today, you have to die! Go! Kill! Kill! Kill!"

A tremendous serpent showed its figure in the sky. Snake Xiu roared towards the heaven, then his ten-thousand-meters long body slightly twisted, coiled into a snake magic formation and blocked the attacks launched by Bo Qiujia and those disciples.

Following a series of clang, puffs of fire sparkles rose against Snake Xiu's thick scales. The fierce attacks launched by Bo Qiujia and those disciples only managed to leave a slight few marks on Snake Xiu's body, and not even a single scale was broken.

Snake Xiu proudly roared, then opened his jaws and released a stream of black poisonous mist.

Tens of Bo Qiujia's disciples didn't manage to defend timely, and the poisonous mist sprayed on their bodies. Next, they watched their skins turn purely dark. They fell to the ground and showed the whites of their eyes. Bo Qiujia gave a loud shout and hurriedly flicked his hands, sending out a jade ring that was embossed with dragons and birds. The ring spun in the air along with a cyan stream of light and surrounded those poisoned disciples.

However, once the jade ring flew out, Xiang Liu had already reached out his nine hideous snakeheads from the black mist.

Opening his mouths and taking deep breaths, Xiang Liu laughed viciously, then let out nine streams of black and sticky venom.

A stream of venom struck right on the jade ring. Bo Qiujia screamed, then a mouthful of blood was squeezed out of his mouth. The light released from the jade ring dimmed down

quickly, and soon, it was corroded into a piece of stone by Xiang Liu's venom, falling onto the ground.

Gong Gong reached out his hands and attempted to grab Zhu Rong Tianming.

Hundreds of Fire Qi Lin Clan warriors flew up, raised all kinds of weapons and fiercely attacked Gong Gong's large and slim hands.

Behind Gong Gong, thousands of Water God Family warriors growled out together, trod on watery clouds and rushed up, encircling those Fire Qi Lin Clan warriors and launching a mad series of attack. Those Fire Qi Lin Clan warriors were circled up, with enemies coming from every direction. Under the current situation, they couldn't manage to save Zhu Rong Tianming anymore.

Zhu Rong Tianming stood on the ground, shivering intensively. Seeing Gong Gong came closer and closer, he screamed out hoarsely and hysterically, "Gong Gong! Do you even dare to kill me?"

Gong Gong laughed wildly out in a fury, then his face twisted as he growled, "You dared to kill Wuyou, my son! Why do you think that I dare not to kill you? Today, Even Zhu Rong wouldn't be able to save you!"

Gong Gong swung his hands down and clenched his fingers, seeming to seize Zhu Rong Tianming right away. Priest Corpse, who was struck to the ground by the thunderbolt, leaped straight up and wielded his arms. Two golden and shining hands roared up into the sky, fiercely slapping towards Gong Gong's hands.

Gong Gong's hands were hit by the enormous pair of golden hand in a row, then a thunderous series of booms could be heard. Gong Gong began shaking slightly, then black watery mist and frigid thunderbolts surged out of his palms without an end, shattering that pair of golden hands.

Priest Corpse rose again into the air and barfed, "Gong Gong, this kid is valued by my Master Shifu. Tianming is meant to be the next human emperor, how dare you kill him? Don't you fear my Master Shifu?!"

Gong Gong's face twisted. Then, he gnashed his teeth, looking at Priest Corpse, laughed viciously and responded, "Priest Mu and Priest Hua? They were indeed mentioned in the records left by my ancestors. According to the records, they are powerful beings. However, my only descendant has died. Why should I worry about any of those priests?"

A shrill dragon roar resounded across the sky. From behind Gong Gong, nine black dragons swooshed into the air, hovered and then transformed into a weirdly-shaped trident. It was coiled by nine embossed dragons, descended and was gripped in Gong Gong's hand.

Gong Gong banged the trident loudly against the air. Followed by his move, a loud, overpowering wave-like sound came from all directions.

Magically, water rose from the ground and covered the area a hundred thousand miles in radius.

At first, the water was merely hundred-meters deep. But after a blink of an eye, it grew to a thousand meters deep. At last, waves surged and roared, and the whole area was submerged by five-thousand meters deep water.

The water flew rapidly while countless whirlpools were generated. With the help of the water, Gong Gong's power was raised crazily fast.

He dipped the tips of the trident into the water, then raised again. Next, a destructive wave rose for hundreds of meters tall and slapped down on Priest Corpse's body like an immense hand.

Priest Corpse gave a muffled moan as he was sent backward for

hundreds of miles by this wave. Meanwhile, blood gushed out of his nose, eyes, mouth, and ears together.

Gong Gong lunged the trident violently towards Zhu Rong Tianming while growling out resonantly.

"Little bastard, die!"

Chapter 902: Hundred Dragons Take up the Water

A fiery light rose from Zhu Rong Tianming, within which, Zhu Rong's figure flashed across, fending against the lethal strike launched with the trident. But still, Zhu Rong Tianming vomited blood. He screamed in fear while desperately fleeing.

"Man Man?"

When Gong Gong spread his arms and attempted to seize Zhu Rong Tianming, Ji Hao turned around, glanced at Man Man and called her name with a low voice.

Wuzhi Qi was pouring the tea into his mouth with the teapot. Hearing Ji Hao, he immediately put his hand on his iron stick while casting a fierce glance at Ji Hao. Although they didn't truly start a life-risking fight tacitly, Wuzhi Qi had his own bottom line.

If Ji Hao did not do anything to save Zhu Rong Tianming, they would be fine. But if Ji Hao intended to do something, Wuzhi Qi would be having no choice but try his best to stop him.

"Nah, nah, let him die!" Man Man sat on a hassock with her legs crossed while swaying her body like a tumbler. Her little face was twisted at the moment, and her eyebrows were knitted.

Pondering for a while, Man Man seriously nodded and continued, "Let him die! Ahh, he liked to take things from me ever since we were little kids. He's not a good guy. Hmm, even the berries Abba gave me, he tried to snatch them. Just let this asshole die!"

"Fight harder, make it louder." Ji Hao didn't say anything else, only picked up a cup of tea and turned around, saying to those Jia Clan warriors who were pretending to fight.

Those Jia Clan warriors raised their heavy weapons while gasping loudly, trying their best to clang their weapons. As fire sparkles dazzled towards all directions, the muffled clangs grew

louder and quicker while the power vibrations coming from these Jia Clan warriors turned stronger and fiercer.

Wuzhi Qi gave a few loud and long shouta, then cursed towards the air to prove that he had been engaging in a life-risking fight against Ji Hao.

The group of people quietly sat in the watery mist, silently looking at Zhu Rong Tianming desperately running and Gong Gong viciously laughing. Just like a giant chasing an infant, Gong Gong reached out his large hands and madly scratched Zhu Rong Tianming.

Gong Gong's fingers streaked across Zhu Rong Tianming's body from time to time, leaving deep and bleeding slashes on him. Blood spurted out from Zhu Rong Tianming's body ceaselessly, making him scream in pain. His face was even covered in tears by now.

If Zhu Rong Tianming didn't understand that Gong Gong would never forgive him for killing his son, he would have kneeled down, crying and begging Gong Gong for mercy long ago.

"Ahh, so humiliating!" Man Man looked at Zhu Rong Tianming disgustedly and said, "He truly is not a good guy. My big brother told me that ever since he took that Bo Qiujia as his assistant, for a while, he tried to take my big brother's positon...The entire Zhu Rong Mountain is thrown into a mess by him."

Man Man sounded cruel and coldhearted, yet on seeing the blood flowing out from Zhu Rong Tianming's body, her small face twitched time from time. Obviously, she was hesitating. Man Man seemed to be a heartless one to Zhu Rong Tianming, that she wasn't willing to think too much about him and truly disliked him. However, seeing Gong Gong torturing Zhu Rong Tianming so brutally, that feeling coming from their shared bloodline made Man Man hesitate.

Save him or not?

Zhu Rong might be sad if Man Man did not save Zhu Rong Tianming. But if she saved him, Man Man and his friends had to fight against Gong Gong. Not to mention how terrifying Gong Gong was, Wuzhi Qi, Xiang Liu, and Snake Xiu, as three senior ministers under Gong Gong's command, were never easy to deal with either. If she endangered Ji Hao and the other of her friends for saving Zhu Rong Tianming...Subconsciously, Man Man believed that it would be better to just let Zhu Rong Tianming die.

Just now, Priest Corpse was sent flying away by a giant wave rose by Gong Gong. But now, he rushed back while gasping quickly. Seeing Gong Gong torturing Zhu Rong Tianming, he shouted out angrily with a high-pitched voice, "Gong Gong, today, one of us will die! I am fighting you!"

Gong Gong gripped Zhu Rong Tianming's neck, slightly clenched his fingers and made him show the whites of his eyes. Tauntingly, Gong Gong looked at Priest Corpse and said, "Eh? One of us will die? Why do you think you can talk to me like that?"

Tens of miles away, Snake Xiu flicked his tail and sent Bo Qiujia and tens of disciples up into the sky. Snake Xiu was way too powerful, that except for Bo Qiujia and a few disciples who were under the protections of great defensive treasures, the other tens of people were torn apart by this destructive power. Their bodies blasted in the air, looking like pink blooms in the sky.

"Ah, broken, not tasty!" Snake Xiu laughed creepily, then opened his mouth and sucked, swallowing all blood and body pieces.

Seeing his disciples killed and eaten by Snake Xiu like a snack, Bo Qiujia's eyes turned red in a fury, then hysterically roared out towards Priest Corpse, "Fight! Fight with all your powers today! Gong Gong Family dares to go against us, they won't end well! Not a single one of them!"

Priest Corpse gasped deeply. Following his breath, his skin and muscle withered quickly and soon, turned into a transparent

golden layer that tightly wrapped around his skeleton. From his shining golden skeleton, a splendid glow spread out. Meanwhile, Priest Corpse said with a deep and evil voice, "Indeed, fight with all our powers. Gong Gong, remember... Today, you caused a destructive disaster for your family!"

Gong Gong gave a twisted smile. He slanted his head, looked at Priest Corpse, scornfully shook his head and said, "A destructive disaster? You were talking about yourself, weren't you? Priest Mu and Priest Hua? Hehe, I'll remember this! Sooner or later..."

Priest Corpse chuckled and interrupted him, "Gong Gong, merely with the power of your Water God Family, you don't get to talk about our Master Shifu. Today, I will annihilate you in both your body and soul. You will disappear from this world, and will never be saved!"

Gong Gong remained silent, but raised his trident high. The thousands of meter deep water that covered a hundred thousand miles area rose into the sky. Countless different sized whirlpools moved and collided in the water, causing muffled, thunder-like rumbles. They roared towards Bo Qiujia and the few survivors like giant mouths.

Priest Corpse turned his palm around with a dark face. Next, a purely dark coffin appeared in his hand.

The black coffin was completely lusterless, dark and heavy, and over three meters long. With a slight hesitation, Priest Corpse glanced at this coffin, then gnashed his teeth. He abruptly opened the coffin and sent the lid up into the sky. Afterward, he began to quickly incant a spell.

A sky-devouring stream of evil power slowly flew out of the coffin. Visibly, black mist surged out of the coffin like water streams. Followed by a serious of frictional noise, an enormous dragon head slowly reached out from the coffin. The dragon-head came out along with a strong aura of death. It took a glance at

Gong Gong, then slowly let out a deep and hoarse dragon roar. Then, this dragon head moved abruptly and swooshed into the air.

Within the blink of an eye, a five-hundred meters long Dragon flew out from the coffin, hovering int he sky. Next, more enormous dragons flew out one after another. Within the span of a single breath, a hundred enormous dragons hovered in the sky. Every single one of them was with a strong vibe of death, and blazing green fire in the eyes.

Wuzhi Qi leaped up, pointed at those enormous dragons and shouted, "What the...These are ancient divine dragons... All living dragons in the world are their descendants. Someone truly dares to make zombies with ancient divine dragons!"

A hundred zombie dragons flew out from the coffin, hovered for a while then lowered their heads and took a long and deep breath.

The water surging in the air was drawn up into the higher sky, being swallowed by the hundred dragons. Within the span of a few breaths, this water raised by Gong Gong was drunk entirely up, without leaving even a drop.

Chapter 903: The Silence of Tianming

Dragons were able to tread on clouds and mist, raise waves, cause thunder and lightning, start hurricanes and storms. Ever since the prehistorical era, dragons were the dominators among all aquatic creatures.

Back in the peak period of the ancient heaven, by relying on the heaven, the family of Gods with the nature of water could still, barely suppress the dragon-kind. But now, the heaven had fallen, and among all these Gods, only Gong Gong survived. However, the dragon-kind remained domineeringly powerful.

The hundred zombie dragons dried the water. This dreadful pressure given off by them even made Gong Gong's heart shake. Snake Xiu, Xiang Liu, who had been widely attacking Bo Qiuji and his disciples, subconsciously transformed back into the shape of a human being, trod on watery clouds and hurriedly fled back.

Both Snake Xiu and Xiang Liu were strong prehistorical creatures. They were snakes, but the dragon-kind were the domineer of all aquatic creatures. Therefore, dragons could naturally frighten and suppress all creatures with scales. As the hundred zombie dragons roared out, Snake Xiu and Xiang Liu felt that even their bones had been softened. Before they could make any move, their powers were weakened by seventy to eighty percent.

Gong Gong's eyes shone with a bright divine light. He glanced at the hundred dragons, laughed out loud and said coldly, "Ancient divine dragons? If they were alive, I would turn around and walk right away. But they're nothing but a hundred dead bodies...How, how dare you, how dare you make zombies with the bodies of ancient divine dragons?"

Despite the fact that Gong Gong was now burning in rage, cold sweat still flowed down from his forehead because of the

daringness of Priest Corpse.

A whole hundred ancient divine dragons, where did Priest Corpse find so many ancient divine dragon bodies? And how dare he make so many divine dragons into zombies? If the members of the dragon-kind saw these dragon zombies, they would definitely hunt Priest Corpse till the end of the day.

Priest Corpse took out an especially long golden spine with an evil look. The spine was over thirty meters long, especially soft, twisting in his hand like a living thing. This was a magic weapon made from the spine of a divine dragon.

"Gong Gong, today, one of us will die... I've told you this already!"

Priest Corpse took a deep breath, then his scrawny body bumped through space, dashed to before Gong Gong's face while lashing the golden dragon spine onto his head. Meanwhile, a linden seed magic talisman blasted in his left hand, released a bright beam of light and struck on Zu Rong Tianming's body. Zhu Rong Tianming's body transformed into a golden sphere of light, abruptly flashing out from Gong Gong's hand.

Gong Gong roared out fiercely while lunging his trident towards the golden dragon spine violently.

Following an earth-shaking boom, the dragon spine and the trident bumped into each other. Nine black dragon silhouettes flashed across the trident. Priest Corpse let out a mouthful of blood while the golden spine was cut into two by the trident. From the cutting edge of the bone, countless tiny spell symbols flew out in streams.

High up in the air, the thunder hammer and lightning chisel clashed thunderously against each other, sending down golden bolts of lightning, descending towards Priest Corpse's head.

The bodies of the hundred zombie dragons shrunk to around three-hundred meters long, swishing in the air like ghosts. After

each thunderbolt descended from the sky, a zombie dragon would rush over and block the lightning with its body. These dragons wielded their claws, fiercely slapping and shattering the thunderbolts. But at the same time, smoke puffed up from their claws, and a few zombie dragons even had their claws struck into pieces.

Some dragons roared down towards Gong Gong. They hit Gong Gong with their horns, bit him with their teeth, tried to tear him apart with their claws and smash him with their tails. Those dragons tried their best to attack Gong Gong, making a dense layer of water ripple spread quickly out from around his body, forcing him to pay attention to these fearless zombie dragons.

Some dragons hovered in the sky with their jaws opened, ceaselessly letting out green streams of poisonous flame, that was generated from the power of death. These poisonous death flame were made by Priest Corpse with his spirit magic; it was powerful and brutal. With a slight touch of it, one would fall into a huge disaster.

Facing that poisonous flame, even Gong Gong dared not to be careless. He threw out a fist-sized purple web that transformed into a purple stream of mist and wrapped his whole body up. The death flame spread on the purple mist, causing clouds and purple smoke to rise. Yet, it couldn’t harm Gong Gong at all.

With the help of these dragons, Priest Corpse easily withdrew from Gong Gong’s attack range, even though the long golden spine of his had been destroyed. He flashed across the sky and caught up with Zhu Rong Tianming, who was sent a hundred miles away, grabbed him up and attempted to escape.

Gong Gong snorted coldly, then shouted, "Nothing but dead bodies, how can they save that little bastard?"

Before Gong Gong’s voice faded, the sky dimmed down.

Ji Hao and the others raised their heads in a great shock, and saw

an enormous pair of wing cover almost the entire sky. This pair of wings slightly flapped and instantly threw the sky into darkness. Then, countless whirlwinds roared up from the ground.

Clouds of mist rose into the sky, covering that tremendously huge, nearly a million miles wide pair of wings up. Then, a scrawny silhouette floated below the pair of wings, looking at Priest Corpse and gave a cold smile.

"Damn it!" Seeing that scrawny silhouette, Priest Corpse yelled out and immediately locked his fingers together. Thirty-six golden dragon beads flew out from his sleeves and formed a complicated magic formation that surrounded Zhu Rong Tianming.

The thirty-six dragon beads shone and spread their faint golden light on Zhu Rong Tianming's body.

Through the golden light, a large lotus with a pearl-like luster was faintly visible.

High up in the air, the scrawny silhouette laughed scornfully, raised a giant hammer with both of his hands, then dove straight down from the sky. He violently smashed the hammer on Zhu Rong Tianming, leaving a black trace in the air. The hammer seemed to be ordinary.

"Kun Peng! You old bastard! You are seeking death!" Priest Corpse screamed hoarsely and furiously, "This kid is chosen by my Master Shifu!"

"Bull-shit! Will I be afraid of them? Come deep into the North Sea to find me, if you have the guts!" Kun Peng was awfully scrawny and ugly. He gave a twisted grin, and next, as a black stream of light sparkled on his body, a full-power strike was already launched by him.

Above Zhu Rong Tianming's head, the lotuses collapsed while the thirty-six dragon beads were struck into ashes. The giant hammer held in Kun Peng's head smashed right on Zhu Rong Tianming's

head. A fiery light was released from Zhu Rong Tianming's head, within which, Zhu Rong's furious face was faintly visible.

'Kun Peng!' It was Zhu Rong's voice.

"Your son has died!" Kun Peng laughed viciously. He lifted up the hammer, then swept across the air with his right hand.

Zhu Rong Tianming gave a howl. In the next moment, his head was sent flying into the sky. Kun Peng had beheaded Zhu Rong Tianming. Blood ejected out from Zhu Rong Tianming's neck in endless streams.

Priest Corpse screamed shrilly while Gong Gong laughed out wildly.

In Priest Corpse's sleeve, a magic talisman exploded and released a splendid light. From the light, Priest Hua walked out in big steps, with a wooden staff held in his hand, and a grim face.

Kun Peng, who sounded so fierce earlier, now gave a loud shout and flew up into the sky right away, desperately fleeing like a homeless dog. However, no matter how fast he ran, how could he escape so easily from Priest Hua's hands?

The wooden staff vibrated in Priest Hua's hand, then spun up. Next, Kun Peng let out a resonant howl, because the wooden staff abruptly showed up behind him and struck violently on his back, even though he had already fled ten-thousand miles away.

From ten-thousand miles away, Ji Hao and his friends all heard a thunder-like, muffled series of booms, along with the noise of bone cracking. God knew how many bones of Kun Peng were broken by this strike, that made him flee towards the North like a drowning mouse, along with a strong gust of wind and a series of black clouds while vomiting blood. He dared not to even turn around.

Priest Hua looked at Zhu Rong Tianming's head that hadn't fallen on the ground yet, slightly sighed, then showed a faint smile on his mouth corners.

"Alright, since you've already been silenced, this is your destiny. Come, come, come... Today, you shall break up with Zhu Rong Family... and join us formally!"

Chapter 904: The Holy Blood From Xuanyuan

Gods didn’t have souls, because their bodies and souls were combined. Therefore, once their bodies were damaged, their souls would be injured as well. For this reason, despite the powerfulness of Gods, they would need a long time to recover once they were injured.

Zhu Rong Tianming wasn’t a pure-blood God. Instead, he was a mixblood, given birth by Zhu Rong and a human girl.

Priest Hua pointed his finger out, and followed by his move, Zhu Rong Tianming’ s head exploded, letting out a cloud of blood mist. Within that cloud, a fire-red human-shaped silhouette was faintly visible, that looked like Zhu Rong Tianming.

Gasping heavily and quickly, Zhu Rong Tianming kneeled in the blood mist, desperately kowtowing to Priest Hua while yelling, "Master Shifu, Master Shifu, save me, please save me! I don’t want to die! I haven’t become the human emperor yet! I don’t want to die, I don’t want to die!"

The wind blew fiercely. Zhu Rong Tianming’s voice was as slight as the roar of an ant. Yet, along with the wind, what he said was clearly heard by Ji Hao and the others.

Wuzhi Qi showed his teeth, gave a loud scornful laugh, then said with a deep voice, "Zhu Rong raised such a ‘backboned’ son... Hehe, next time when I see Zhu Rong, I have to ask him if someone had peed in the ancestral temple of his family!"

Laughing wildly, Wuzhi Qi abruptly raised his iron stick and fiercely smashed down towards Ji Hao.

Although Ji Hao had invited Wuzhi Qi to have the tea and fruits with his friends and himself, and everyone seemed to be friendly to each other all this long, but in fact, Ji Hao had been silently

vigilant towards this violent old monkey, who was incredibly moody. Seeing Wuzhi Qi swing the iron stick down, the Pan Xi divine mirror released a dim light and flashed across Ji Hao's body. Followed by a loud bang, Wuzhi Qi's stick violently slapped on his own forehead.

Fire sparkles were sent out in all directions along with blood drops. Wuzhi Qi broke the skin on his own forehead and almost smashed his own scalp. He howled out in pain, turned around and attempted to leave. But Ji Hao moved at lightning speed, made the steps according to the locations of stars, and dashed swiftly to beside Wuzhi Qi. Meanwhile, the nine suns devil-destroying sword gently poked on the back of Wuzhi Qi waist, along with a stream of fiery light.

Wuzhi Qi was wearing a flax long shirt on the outside and the dragon-scale tight armor underneath it. The armor sparkled brightly, seeming to be an especially powerful defensive treasure. However, the sword easily penetrated the armor and also punctured Wuzhi Qi's body.

A golden stream of flame puffed out as the nine sun spell symbols dazzled on the sword. Followed by a loud boom, a sphere of pure positive thunder-flame burst from one sun spell symbol and drilled into Wuzhi Qi's body through the sword. Wuzhi Qi's long hair stood up one after another, and every single hair had a strand of smoke rising from it. Fire puffed out from his nostrils, ears, and mouth. He hurriedly flew out of the watery mist, rushing towards Gong Gong while shouting and howling.

He ran pretty fast, yet Man Man and her friends did not move slowly at all. When Wuzhi Qi started to run, Man Man's pair of hammer heavily landed on his forehead while Yu Mu's handful of poisonous powder spread right on his face, Shaosi's spear pierced into his left arm, and Taisi's life-taking magic curse talisman slapped straight on his back. Yemo Shanye and Feng Xing cooperated perfectly; Yemo Shanye opened her erect eye and

released a dark beam of divine light that struck on Wuzhi Qi's back and dimmed down the protective light screen on his back. Immediately after that, an arrow released by Feng Xing screamed over and went into Wuzhi Qi's body through the dim area of the defensive light screen.

Within a few seconds, Wuzhi Qi's body was covered in wounds. Fire and smoke rose from all over his body, making him scream in pain while leaping to Gong Gong. Before he could say a word, a flake of essence sun fire came from his mouth.

Gong Gong had been glowering at Priest Hua, seemed to start a fight against him. Yet, he dared not to. Seeing Wuzhi Qi flee back and be seriously injured, Gong Gong was startled. Hurriedly, he patted on Wuzhi Qi's body with a pair of hands that were wrapped in flowing watery light. As streams of watery light flowed into Wuzhi Qi's body, the essence sun fire and all the other powers lingering inside Wuzhi Qi's body were finally dispelled for good.

Working on Wuzhi Qi for a while, Gong Gong finally boosted up the courage, took a step forward and growled out towards Priest Hua, "Priest Hua, you're an elder. Back then, you signed an agreement on Sky Pillar. Do you still remember it?"

"I do, I do... I surely do." Priest Corpse gave a faint smile, nodded to Gong Gong and said, "Unless the humankind is facing a destructive disaster, we cannot step in the interior affairs of the humankind."

Frankly admitting the agreement he signed back then, Priest Hua changed his tone and continued, "But, today, I didn't step into any interior affair of human beings. Instead, I came to save my disciple...I can't watch you kill my disciple, can I?"

Gong Gong opened his mouth, glanced at Zhu Rong Tianming's soul, which was surrounded by the blood mist. Gong Gong's eye corners even began to twitch in anger.

If Zhu Rong Tianming were a pure-blood god, he would have died

just now when Kun Peng beheaded him. But, Zhu Rong Tianming was a mixblood, half god, half human. His soul wasn't entirely combined with his body. Instead, it was separated from his body.

Priest Hua saved Zhu Rong Tianming's soul. Therefore, Gong Gong could no longer decide his fate.

Forcibly restraining his rage caused by Gong Gong Wuyou' death, Gong Gong gnashed his teeth, sneered and said, "Good, good, good... In this case..."

Casting a vicious, cold glance at Priest Hua, Gong Gong said with a deep and creepy voice, "Today..."

Priest Hua flicked his wooden staff and asked with a mild voice, "Lord Gong Gong, are you going to fight me? Although I don't want the others to see me as a bully, with the powers you inherited, you're only slightly weaker than your ancestors. Actually, I would love to know what you can do!"

Gong Gong raised his trident, but hesitated for quite a while. At last, he turned around silently, trod on a black cloud, rose into the air and disappeared within the blink of an eye.

Wuzhi Qi, Snake Xiu, and Xiang Liu each gave a complicated glance to Priest Hua, then nodded. They silently led the thousands of Water God warriors and followed Gong Gong away.

All three of them were famous Chaos creatures who lived since the prehistorical era. They deeply understood that they could never bear to offend a few beings from the Chaos, and on this blacklist, Priest Hua and his brother, Priest Mu, were definitely top-ranked.

If one offended Priest Yu, he would do nothing more than giving you a sword hack. If one could survive this sword strike, he would let them go, because he would be too lazy to hunt them down. However, if one offended Priest Mu and his brother, it would be like stirring up a hornet's nest. They and that giant group of

disciples of theirs would follow one literally everywhere until one was dead, and would never give up before that.

Therefore, Wuzhi Qi and the other two all remained silent, daring not to say a single word, and left quite gloomily.

Priest Hua smilingly glanced where Ji Hao and his friends were, then slowly took out a transparent bottle. A fist-sized drop of yellow-colored spirit blood floated inside the bottle, giving a strong pressure, that even made Ji Hao feel hard to breathe.

Gently, Priest Hua began talking, "This is your fortune too. Tianming, this drip of spirit blood belonged to Emperor Xuanyuan. It’s perfect for rebuilding your body."

"From now on, you have pure Gong Sun Family bloodline, from Emperor Xuanyuan himself. You can now compete for the throne of the human emperor even more reasonably."

Chapter 905: Lotus Body

The dense watery mist drew back into the cloud bag and disappeared within a blink of an eye, like a pool of water drained by a whale.

Ji Hao floated in midair with his eyes popped out widely, fixed on the beautifully glowing glass bottle in Priest Hua's hand. The holy blood from Emperor Xuanyuan, was it truly a drop of spirit blood left by Emperor Xuanyuan? Where did Priest Hua find such a treasure?

And, what did he mean?

Rebuilding the body with a drop of spirit blood that came from Emperor Xuanyuan, then Zhu Rong Tianming would become a descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan? This, this, this, seemed to be reasonable though. In terms of bloodline, this was absolutely reasonable. But on another aspect, Zhu Rong Tianming's soul came from Zhu Rong Family after all. Even if all his blood were replaced by Emperor Xuanyuan's spirit blood, something would still be wrong!

Man Man had already leaped up and shouted angrily out, "Zhu Rong Tianming, how dare you betray Zhu Rong Family?"

Within the blood mist, Zhu Rong Tianming proudly glanced at Man Man, then laughed out loud, but didn't even say a word to explain. Priest Hua was there to protect him and support him. Before, Zhu Rong Tianming dared not to offend Man Man indeed. After all, she was the most beloved little girl of Zhu Rong...

But now, supported by Priest Hua, Zhu Rong Tianming was like a fierce dog which had found its owner, proud and fearless. He didn't take Man Man seriously anymore. Even if Zhu Rong were right here, he would dare to act provocatively, not to mention Man Man.

Seeing Zhu Rong Tianming's proud face, Man Man stomped her foot in anger, but she understood that Priest Hua was not someone she would want to provoke. Therefore, she could only stand beside Ji Hao without making any reckless moves. Man Man wasn't stupid at all. Everyone saw that just now, even Kun Peng was nearly smashed to death by Priest Hua with that wooden staff.

Ji Hao flew up, waved his hand towards Priest Hua from a distance away, and said, "Elder Hua, we just met in Southern Wasteland, I didn't think you would come to my Yao Mountain territory as a guest so soon. Hehe, is this the spirit blood of Emperor Xuanyuan?"

A hundred zombie dragons roared thunderously as Priest Corpse controlled the whole hundred zombie dragons, blocked Ji Hao's way and laughed coldly. With fear, he glanced at the nine-sun devil-destroying sword, which was been releasing the purest possible sun power, then shouted harshly out, "Earl Yao, back off! No closer!"

Bo Qiujia and a group of disciples, who were all covered in wounds and dirt by now, flew over as well and stood in front of Ji Hao. At the moment, they were all with glowing faces, seeming ready to rush up together to attack Ji Hao if he dared to take another step forward.

Priest Hua flicked the bottle in his hand and smilingly looked at Ji Hao. His eyeballs rolled in his eye sockets, quietly scanning across Ji Hao's sword and cloak, then took a glance at the Pan Xi divine mirror.

He smilingly nodded and said slowly and unhurriedly, "This is not only Emperor Xuanyuan's blood, but is a drop of spirit blood left by him after he left his position, achieved the supreme level, reached the peak stage, and left Pan Gu world for the Chaos."

Ji Hao's face twisted, then he said in a deep voice, "I thought Emperor Xuanyuan has died!"

Priest Hua narrowed his eyes, gave a quite gentle smile and responded, "Therefore, kids like you are indeed too ignorant. Emperor Xuanyuan has reached such a high level, and has been nourished by the power of faith from billions of human beings. Added with the power of natural rewards, he attained a holy body and a holy soul. He is nearly immortal, so how can he die so easily?"

Raising his head, Priest Hua looked at the sky, chuckled and continued, "Our sect have countless scriptures, recorded countless secrets of Pan Gu world. Ji Hao, my young friend, if you..."

Ji Hao turned around and walked right away. Treading on a streak of golden light, he flew back to Man Man and his friends. While leaving, he yelled loudly, "Elder Hua, you fought against my Shifu's spirit sword earlier, and now you come to persuade me to join you. I cannot bear to offend you. Therefore, please, do whatever you want, then leave immediately after you have finished!"

Pausing briefly, Ji Hao continued in that deep voice, "I've set a Heaven and Earth great formation here in my Yao Mountain territory. Elder Hua, you surely are not afraid of that, but these disciples of yours...hehe...Therefore, please leave as soon as you can."

Priest Hua's face turned slightly dark, but soon, that smile showed again on his face.

He said while smiling, "Alright, alright, since you don't want to join us, I shall just show you the great magic of our sect!"

With a grin, Priest Hua rolled up his sleeves and slowly took out three sparkling lotus leaves, placing them on the ground. Next, he took out over ten pieces of glowing lotus roots, forced those apart with his hands and placed them on the ground, roughly forming a human skeleton.

Ji Hao's eye corners twitched on seeing all this— This set of

moves made by Priest Hua seemed to be quite familiar, but why?

Next, Priest Hua took out a few lotuses, which were wrapped in coiling warm mist streams. He placed them on the lotus root skeleton according to the locations of human internal organs. Thus, this 'human body' was roughly completed. Priest Hua seemed to be not satisfied yet. He pondered for a while, then took out a black bead and a white bead, both surrounded by Chaos power streams. Then, he placed them into the eye sockets of this 'human body'.

After all was well prepared, Priest Hua poured the holy spirit blood onto the 'human body', and began waving his hands. A series of lotus seeds glowing with a seven-colored light flew into the 'human body' along with a beautiful melody.

The great power vibration released from Emperor Xuanyuan's spirit blood spread out speedily, transformed into an enormous blood-red sphere and wrapped that 'human body' up. As those lotus seeds flew into the blood sphere one after another, and the power vibration turned even stronger.

These lotus seeds were generated by Priest Hua's true body. Same as Priest Mu's linden seeds, these lotus seeds were also supreme treasures that could be cultivated into clones. These lotus seeds were also extremely rare natural treasures, and every single one of them contained thriving life-force and natural powers. To any cultivator, swallowing one of these seeds equaled tens of thousands of years of severe cultivation.

But now, hundreds of seven-colored, brightly glowing lotus seeds were thrown into the blood-red sphere by Priest Hua.

Priest Corpse, Bo Qiujia and the other disciples watched Priest Hua throw out more lotus seeds in a daze, with their eyes filled with jealousy. Their eyes even seemed to pop out from their eye sockets.

Compared to Yu Yu and his two brothers, Priest Hua and Priest

Mu were way too poor. Their disciples didn't have too many good weapons and tools, neither did they have much of high-quality magic medicines. These lotus seeds were highly attractive even to Priest Corpse, not to mention Bo Qiujia and those lower level disciples.

The blood-red sphere rolled from the inside and then began shrinking. Gradually, bones, tendons, blood, and muscles emerged from it. As the spirit blood was absorbed by the 'human body' bit by bit, a beautiful, almost perfect, young and male human body showed up in front of everyone.

Priest Hua chuckled, then slightly pushed his palm forward, sending Zhu Rong Tianming's soul into this body.

The eyes of this tall and strong body, that was flawless and had perfect lines, suddenly opened. From those eyes, black and white mist rose into the sky. Then, he slightly moved and leaped straight up.

Priest Hua waved his hand, and a white cloak, which was decorated with the patterns of lotuses, landed on this young man.

Renascent Zhu Rong Tianming blinked his eyes, then abruptly flashed across the air. He showed up right before Ji Hao's face, as swiftly as a ghost. He raised his fist and launched a punch to Ji Hao's head.

Followed by a thunderous bang, Ji Hao sensed a piercing pain from his right arm. Then, a strong force drilled into his body. He was punched flying away by Zhu Rong Tianming.

Chapter 906: Gong Sun Tianming

Ji Hao was punched straight away, while Zhu Rong Tianming remained perfectly unmoved.

Priest Hua chuckled with a reserved manner.

Priest Corpse laughed loudly out, sounding rather scornful.

Bo Qiujia and the other disciples each gave a big grin, as their eyes were almost burning!

Just now, none of these disciples managed to see Zhu Rong Tianming's move clearly. They released their spirit powers, yet failed to grasp any of Zhu Rong Tianming's moves. The only explanation was that Zhu Rong Tianming's power had now exceeded the up-limits of Bo Qiujia and these disciples. And for such a great power, Priest Hua was the one who gave it to Zhu Rong Tianming. Bo Qiujia and the other disciples burned with jealousy. They were so angry, wondering why they didn't have such a fortune.

Ji Hao was sent over a hundred miles away. His right arm joints were all dislocated, and many bones were shattered, that caused him waves of pain.

He swung his right arm hard to let those dislocated joints to recover. Spirit blood surged up, flushed those broken bones an healed the wounds immediately. Coldly, Ji Hao looked at Zhu Rong Tianming while boosting up the powers of his over a thousand inner spirit stars, bit by bit.

Just now, he only used his physical strength to fend. But this time, the power from over a thousand inner spirit stars surged inside his body like roaring dragons, flushing across his bones and muscles like a tsunami. Ji Hao's power raised and raised, a hundred percent, a thousand percent, ten-thousand percent...

Golden blood veins bulged from under his skin, while the

dreadfully great power of his reached every corner of his body. Everyone heard the loud swooshing noise came from inside Ji Hao's body, that was caused when his spirit blood surged through his blood veins. The loud noise vibrated the air and generated waves of air blasts around him.

Zhu Rong Tianming looked at Ji Hao in shock. Just now, he punched Ji Hao as hard as he could. Although Ji Hao was sent flew away, his sensed some pain and numbness himself as well.

This new body of his was given by Priest Corpse, and was made from Emperor Xuanyuan's holy spirit blood and Chaos lotuses. Zhu Rong Tianming sensed the strength of this body when his soul merged with this body. He knew that this was a perfect, almost indestructible body.

By punching Ji Hao, he caused himself a pain and numbness. Therefore, Zhu Rong Tianming began to take Ji Hao serious. Nevertheless, he didn't think that Ji Hao was actually way more powerful than he seemed to be. At the moment, Ji Hao looked just like a burning volcano that contained a terrifying, scorching power inside his body. At any time, he could launch a destructive attack that would be much more powerful than the defense he took just now.

"What a freak!" Zhu Rong Tianming stared at Ji Hao viciously, then helplessly glanced at Man Man.

If Man Man had a good relationship with him, wouldn't he be able to bring Ji Hao under his control? With such a great power, Ji Hao could definitely serve as a good helper for the competition for the throne of the human emperor.

But now, Ji Hao would never help him, no matter how.

"Damn it!" Zhu Rong Tianming showed a fierce look, then took a step forward while straightening his right fingers. He lunged his right hand towards Ji Hao's heart like a dagger.

This was a fierce lethal attack, yet Zhu Rong Tianming's movement was so natural. No fierceness could be sensed from his moves. Instead, the moves made by him were just natural and smooth. When he launched the attack, a faint lotus aroma spread out from the air. Sensing the aroma, Ji Hao felt so calm that he even wanted to give up on fighting back and simply let Zhu Rong Tianming kill him.

"Dirty trick, not even worth mentioning!" The seed of Dao of sun suddenly burst with a dazzling golden light. Ji Hao quivered immediately, then struggled out from that weird mood that was leading to self-destruction.

He cast a glance at Priest Hua, then released all of his power and launched the combined move, which included the moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow, and everything-perish.

Ji Hao was incredibly furious. Priest Hua was such an ignoble man. Even with his status, he played a dirty trick like this when rebuilding Zhu Rong Tianming's body. Any weak-minded one might give up on resistance under the effect of this lotus aroma released when Zhu Rong Tianming attacked, and wait for death!

His fist roared out like thunder and released an eye-piercing golden light, striking on Zhu Rong Tianming's hand like a small sun that left an arc trace in the air.

Followed by an earth-shaking boom, the bones of all five fingers of Ji Hao's right hand broke. The strong counterforce reached straight to his arm and shoulder. His bones bumped into each other and shattered.

The strong spirit blood streams circulated in his body and healed those bones, even making his bones sturdier than before.

Zhu Rong Tianming was punched by Ji Hao on the hand. His right hand was smashed into a meat pie while his right arm twisted into a strange shape, with a few snow-white, nice smelling, broken bones piercing out from his skin.

Zhu Rong Tianming shouted out in panic, then subconsciously wielded his left fist and punched on Ji Hao's chest.

The nine suns stainless cloak released a layer of golden light while nine suns rose above Ji Hao's head. Streams of divine golden light shielded Ji Hao's body, because of which, the full-power punch launched by Zhu Rong Tianming only managed to force Ji Hao back for tens of miles, but failed to even leave a scratch on his skin.

"Damn it!" Zhu Rong Tianming growled while swinging his right arm. All broken bones recovered along with a series of popping noise, as well as all the other injures. In both shock and anger, he stared at Ji Hao. His lotus body was injured by Ji Hao with a single punch, was this even true?

Ji Hao floated in the air, slowly shaking his fist while silently looking down at Zhu Rong Tianming.

Zhu Rong Tianming's new body was indeed special. But Ji Hao had also discovered that, at the moment, Zhu Rong Tianming could only release about one percent of the true power of this body. Only after his soul completely merged with this body could he release the power of this body by a hundred percent.

Then, not a single Divine Magus would be able to rival him. Only Supreme Magi and powerful beings above that level could deal with him.

Over a thousand inner spirit stars dimmed gradually down inside Ji Hao's body. Those linden seeds Ji Hao swallowed had been continuously providing energy for Ji Hao's body, but these inner spirit stars hadn't reached the peak state yet. Ji Hao estimated that in half a month, when these inner spirit stars matured, he should be a few times more powerful than now.

"Not bad, truly not bad... Zhu Rong Tianming, Prince Tianming!" Ji Hao restrained his intent of fighting, smilingly nodded to Zhu Rong Tianming and said, "It's just, are you still Zhu Rong

Tianming?"

Zhu Rong Tianming pondered for a while, then turned to Priest Hua.

Priest Hua chuckled, gave a complicated glance at Ji Hao, then flashed across the air and disappeared.

From the air, Priest Hua's voice could be heard. "Tianming, you have already inherited the holy spirit bloodline from Emperor Xuanyuan. Now, you're a descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan. From now on, your name is Gong Sun Tianming, and you are going to compete for the throne of the human emperor as a prince of You Xiong Family!"

Zhu Rong Tianming nodded, held his hands behind his body, then looked at Ji Hao proudly and said, "Zhu Rong Tianming? Who is Zhu Rong Tianming? I exist in the world only as Prince Tianming from You Xiong Family!"

Ji Hao was speechless, and in the distance, the fire of anger spurted from Man Man's eyes.

Chapter 907: Disturbances

Zhu Rong Tianming left, along with the anger and hatred of the dragon-kind.

Priest Corpse let out the hundred zombie dragons. But unfortunately, Ao Li, the ninth prince of the dragon-kind, was right in Yao Mountain City. Ji Hao and the others had made such a loud noise, hearing which, Ao Li, Feng Qinxin, Tushan old man and a few others came out to see what happened. At first glance, Ao Li saw a whole hundred zombie dragons turned from a hundred ancient divine dragons!

The ten-thousand dragon-kind warriors that followed Ao Li to Yao Mountain City went crazy right on the spot. Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming didn't manage to stop them...To be honest, Ji Hao didn't want to stop them at all. The ten-thousand dragon-kind warriors formed a battle formation and crazily attacked Priest Corpse and his people.

After all, Priest Corpse was a disciple under the guidance of Priest Hua and Priest Mu, and was a powerful being who lived ever since the prehistorical era. Facing over a thousand crazy dragon warriors, he fended for a while. But at last, he protected Zhu Rong Tianming, Bo Qiujia and the other disciples, and escaped.

Ao Li couldn't catch up with them. Therefore, he hacked on his own face and almost made his brain splash out. As his face was covered in blood, Ao Li made a soul and blood oath; he swore he would do whatever he could to hunt Priest Corpse down. From hell to heaven, no matter how much time it would cost, or what price he might have to pay, the dragon-kind would turn Priest Corpse into dust, perishing his body and soul!

After making the oath, Ao Li sent a message back to the dragon-kind regarding what happened in here.

Ji Hao could totally guess what would happen next, even with his

butt. Ancient divine dragons, those were extremely noble and important beings among all dragons, and all living dragons were their descendants. Priest Corpse made those ancient divine dragons into zombies, and he had a whole hundred divine dragon zombies. No matter how he attained the bodies of those ancient divine dragons, the dragon-kind would hunt him to the end of the day.

Dragons were dominators of all creatures with scales. As the dragon-kind burst with fury, all aquatic creatures in the world were all agitated. God knew how many powerful spirit aquatic creatures would try their utmost to hunt Priest Corpse and everyone related to him, only to kiss the asses of those dragons.

As for the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, dragons and phoenixes were all proud and arrogant, and the relationship between these two kinds had always been complicated. Normally, even a massive war could happen between them for a slight benefit. But on facing strong enemies, these two kinds would join hands immediately to fight. After all, dragons inherited the strong body of Pan Gu while phoenixes inherited the powerful soul.

Therefore, if one offended the dragon-kind, they would offend the phoenix-kind automatically. Besides, phoenixes were the leaders of all birds in the world; rosefinches, Luan birds, peacocks, all legendary birds worshiped the phoenix-kind. Therefore, with nothing but an order from the phoenix-kind, all of the powerful birds in the world would start hunting Priest Corpse as well.

All in all, Priest Corpse was now in a hell of a trouble.

Zhu Rong Tianming was on Priest Corpse's side. Therefore, Ao Li memorized him as an enemy as well. The information about Zhu Rong Tianming, his face, his background, Ao Li messaged the dragon-kind regarding everything he knew about Zhu Rong Tianming as well.

Even Ji Hao felt sad for Zhu Rong Tianming.

Priest Hua rebuilt his body with a spirit lotus, after which, his appearance changed entirely. Therefore, Ao Li shouldn't even be able to recognize him. However, Zhu Rong Tianming still had a sweet sister. Man Man was enraged by Zhu Rong Tianming when he attacked Ji Hao. Therefore, when Ao Li burst in a fury, Man Man told Ao Li everything about what happened to Zhu Rong Tianming, along with the identities and backgrounds of Bo Qiujia and everyone else around Zhu Rong Tianming. She told Ao Li everything.

One had to mention that back in Southern Wasteland, many powerful creatures with the nature of fire were under the command of Zhu Rong Family. Among them was a family of fire dragons. The dragon-kind was never happy about this. In their eyes, that fire dragon family was supposed to follow the orders of the Dragon Emperor, instead of serving Zhu Rong. Because of this fire dragon family, the dragon-kind and Zhu Rong Family never had a good relationship.

After Man Man told Ao Li what she knew, Ao Li sent the information of Zhu Rong Tianming back to the dragon-kind. After that, Zhu Rong Tianming's name was added to the killing list, released by the dragon-kind. But of course, Zhu Rong Tianming's name had changed, it was Gong Sun Tianming now.

Ji Hao stayed in Yao Mountain City for big half a month. He swallowed those linden seed one after another and focused on improving his power. But meanwhile, news came from the outside ceaselessly, allowing Ji Hao to know everything.

The biggest news that happened recently was Gong Sun Meng, the current leader of You Xiong Family, suddenly announcing that he had an illegitimate son named Gong Sun Tianming. Testified by family elders, Gong Sun Tianming's bloodline was indeed pure, passed down from Emperor Xuanyuan. Besides, Gong Sun Tianming was much more talented than all You Xiong Family people.

This Gong Sun Tianming, who suddenly popped out, was entitled as a prince. Meanwhile, Gong Sun Meng took away the powers of Gong Sun Yuan and all the other princes of the family, and gave their powers and territories all to Gong Sun Tianming.

Because of this, You Xiong Family nearly split from the inside. Family elders behind quite a few princes even started fights against Gong Sun Meng. The private troops of all branch clans of You Xiong Family were all gathered up in their holy land, seeming to be preparing for war; those were millions of elite warriors.

This caused a great disturbance in the human world, that Emperor Shun headed to You Xiong Family himself to appease this, along with hundreds of clan leaders he gathered, all from influential human clans.

When Ji Hao heard about this, this whole affair hadn't ended, and Emperor Shun was still in the holy land of You Xiong Family. Before this could be wrapped up, the pressure given by the dragon-kind had descended like a mountain. Under the order of the Dragon Emperor, the few dragon elders stationed in Pu Ban City furiously raised an army and marched to You Xiong Family's holy hand to force Gong Sun Meng to hand out Gong Sun Tianming and Priest Corpse.

Once the few dragon elders made their move, the few phoenix elders stationed in Pu Ban City followed. An elite phoenix army launched a surprise attack on You Xiong Family and started an intense fight against Gong Sun Meng's private guards.

The dragon-kind, phoenix-kind and humankind had now tangled up, and the whole society seemed even to collapse. Before all this finished, Gong Gong Family made an announcement to the entire human world — Gong Gong Family would fight Zhu Rong Family till one of them died! If Zhu Rong refused to kill his own son to allay Gong Gong's anger, Gong Gong Family would fight Zhu Rong Family without sparing any effort.

Ji Hao could imagine the dumbfounded faces of those human leaders when they read the announcement made by Gong Gong Family.

Compared with the disturbances happening in the human world, the raging official letter sent by Yemo Luoye, the Emperor in power of Dark Sun, seemed to be less eye-catching.

Also in rage, Yemo Luoye issued an ultimatum to Emperor Shun - If the humankind refused to send her sister back, she would come to Pu Ban herself with her people to bring Yemo Shanye back. As for if a mass casualty of human beings would be caused during this process, this wouldn't be a concern of hers.

What a mess, what a mess! Because of Zhu Rong Tianming, the human world was thrown into a huge mess, both from the inside and the outside.

Ji Hao stayed in Yao Mountain City without taking a single step out. He swallowed the last linden seed, slightly sighed and said, "It seems that troubles are turning huge!"

A golden light spread out inside Ji Hao's body. Inside his broad Magus acupoints and meridians, over twenty-thousand golden light spots had been sparkling.

Chapter 908: The Beginning of Unrest

In a broad and dark hall, twenty-four pillars embossed with dragons had been sparkling with a faint golden light. Ji Hao sat in the hall with crossed legs. A thin golden light glowed between his eyebrows while a three-meter golden cloud hovered above his head. From the edge of the cloud, beams of golden light were releasing constantly.

Except for the cloud above his head, Ji Hao's power was tightly restrained, that made him seem like a lifeless status. But inside his body, twenty-four thousand, six-hundred and eighty golden light spots had been quickly moving, releasing scorching hot streams of power, flushing his meridians and acupoints. His skin was cool, as cool as the jade ground. Yet, the inner temperature of his body was high enough to melt almost everything in Pan Gu world, except for a few types of pre-world divine material.

For ordinarily human Magi, with the power from real stars in the sky, they could grow eighty-one inner spirit stars inside their bodies, and this was the upper limit of cultivation of Divine Magi. With one more inner spirit star, the body of a Divine Magus would burst from the inside and turn into a puff of blood mist.

However, Ji Hao had attained the spirit blood of dragon and phoenix and generated Pan Gu bloodline. His physical body was dreadfully great while the powers of over twenty-thousand inner spirit stars were boosted up to an extreme level. Nourished by the spirit star power, his body grew stronger and stronger, more and more powerful.

Buzz! A bronze-bell-like ring could be faintly heard from Ji Hao's body. The fifth level of the cultivation method with nine turns was achieved. Abruptly, Ji Hao's skin turned faintly golden. His muscles, meridians, bones and marrow, even internal organs all turned golden, like golden glass beads, with a crystal luster.

"Can I rival supreme Magi now merely with my physical strength?" In the spiritual space, the seed of Dao of sun shone with a dazzling golden light. Ji Hao asked in a low voice.

"Why do you have to think so much?" The mysterious man's voice was rumblingly loud, like thunder that resounded across the sky, "Once an inner spirit star grows in each of your millions of acupoints, even if your Pan Gu body is still at a low level...you can tear the so-called Supreme Magi into pieces with your bare hands."

"The purest power is the greatest power." said the mysterious man proudly, "No need to think about levels, or any other insignificant things. As long as your power is great enough, you can destroy any enemy with a single punch...When you truly have attained a Pan Gu body, you will even be able to shatter this world with your fist!"

"No skills needed?" Ji Hao laughed embarrassedly.

"Eh?" The mysterious man paused. A while later, he also laughed in an embarrassed tone and responded, "Of course, skills are important too. The greatest power with the greatest skill generates the perfect power! This, I...now understand!"

"So you didn't understand this before?" Ji Hao continued the question, "Were you like those Southern Wasteland warriors from those uncivilized clans, who know nothing but swinging their weapons?"

The mysterious man gave a roar in both anger and shame. Then, no matter how many questions Ji Hao threw out, the mysterious man never spoke another word.

Ji Hao knew that this old man was like those uncivilized Southern Wasteland warriors who could do no more than hacking or punching his enemies to death, bullying the others merely with physical strength. However, Ji Hao was more and more curious about this mysterious man. As far as Ji Hao knew, among those influential prehistorical powerful beings, not many relied merely

on physical strength.

A golden stream of light rose from Ji Hao’s head. Then, that three-meter cloud immediately drew back into his body. The golden light on his skin dimmed down while streams of hot mist puffed out from his opened pores.

Standing up and gently twisting his body, Ji Hao suddenly launched a short-distance punch in the air.

He didn’t activate his spirit star power for this punch. Instead, he used the pure physical strength. Having reached the fifth level of the cultivation method with nine turns, Ji Hao’s physical strength had now improved largely, such that he created a human-head-sized black hole in front of him easily. Space was broken, and the emergency protective function of the Heaven and Earth great formation was activated immediately. Seven-colored light streams flew over one after another and fixed the black hole in no time.

The nine suns stainless cloak started waves of air ripples. Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and murmured, "Only if I can seize thousands of more linden seeds...Priest Hua’s lotus seeds are not bad as well. It’s just that without my Shifu’s help, I can’t deal with those two old freaks."

"Growing an inner spirit star in each acupoint, how many years of severe cultivation would that take?"

"The Pan Jia sun!" The mysterious man’s voice came again, "You have suddenly become stupid. Is the Pan Jia sun only a puff of fire for you to burn people? Digest the sun with the cauldron, you can have over a hundred thousand inner spirit star after that."

Ji Hao was enlightened. His spirit power sank into his body, and the Pan Jia sun silently fell into the small caldron, which was surrounded by the five-colored flame. A burning-hot stream of power surged out from the caldron, then the slightly blurred caldron turned sturdier and clearer. Meanwhile, golden light spots began growing from Ji Hao’s few acupoints.

Hesitating for a while, Ji Hao thought about whether he should keep staying in the city until the Pan Jia sun was digested completely. But abruptly, a silvery series of jade clangs came from the outside.

He reached his hands out, clenched his fingers and gently moved his hands apart. Followed by his moves, the heavy door of the hall opened, letting in the daylight. Elder Destiny was wearing a black cloth, standing aside with a worrying face. He politely bowed to Ji Hao.

"Master, I've been worrying in the recent few days. I always feel that a destructive disaster is coming."

Seeing Ji Hao, Elder Destiny headed straight to the point. He looked at Ji Hao and said in a worrying tone, "In Yao Mountain City, I can still settle my mind, barely. But once I left the city beyond ten-thousand miles, my mind and soul started shaking, and I nearly fainted."

Pointing out at the sky, Elder Destiny continued in a deep voice, "Back then, even when Pan Xi world was hunted by Pan Gu world, I didn't have this feeling. I think, you really need to do some preparation."

Ji Hao pondered for a while, then raised his voice.

"Ji Tian, Ji Di, Ji Xuan, Ji Huang, spread my word. All Yao Mountain people come to live around Yao Mountain City within a radius of ten-thousand miles. Hoard food as much as possible. Hunt and store dried meat, as well as all kinds of medicines... Store as much as you can."

"Open all storages. All Yao Mountain people, fourteen years old and above, get armed. Take out all magic formation tools, and set up defensive formations around Yao Mountain City."

Remaining silent for a short while, Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and continued in a calm tone, "Take Yao Mountain City as the center,

and flatten the mountains in a radius of thirty miles and build a fence wall. Surround the entire area."

Four silhouettes flashed across the air. Ji Tian, Ji Di and the other Ji Hao’s disciples and private guards rushed over, carefully memorizing his orders, then split up.

At the moment, Feng Qinxin’s clear, slightly sharp voice came.

"Good, good, good, we’ve worked for so long. This damned formation is finally set up!"

"Earl Yao, Earl Yao, Ji Hao, Ji Hao, hurry, get me the coordinates of that world!"

Chapter 909: Departing

In the middle of Yao Mountain City, the magic formation base of a perpetual portal silently floated in midair. The magic formation base was formed from tens of thousands of different sized jade tablets. A thirty-meter sphere of glow was spinning slowly in the core area of the formation. Within the glow, countless stellar-map-like patterns had been sparkling quickly. The deep glow seemed to lead to another world, giving a shocking, stunning sense of beauty.

Ao Li, Feng Qinxin, Tushan old man and Si Wen Ming silently stood beside the great formation while holding their breath, looking at this stunning great formation.

In terms of magic formations, the non-humankind was much more advanced than the humankind. With the power of mere human beings, such a complicated and great, yet detailed and exquisite magic formation could never be accomplished.

According to Si Wen Ming, the humankind might be able to build such a great teleporting magic formation across worlds after over ten-thousand years of studying. But since Ji Hao got a large batch of Xiu Clan technicists from the non-humankind, with their help, the humankind attained the advanced knowledge regarding this great portal ten-thousand years in advance.

When this great magic formation was being built, many senior magic formation artists from the Magi Palace had joined. Guided and taught by Xiu Clan people, these senior magic formation artists improved at an amazing rate. Their improvements represented the humankind’s improvement regarding the study of magic formation. This suddenly raised knowledge accumulation of the humankind saved at least ten-thousand years of hard work.

"Truly an amazing magic formation." Si Wen Ming laughed mildly.

Even if there wasn’t a new world for them to explore, only for

this great formation, all these works were worthy.

Thousands of Magi Palace Magi stood beside Si Wen Ming while smiling, with a gentle and peaceful sense of power releasing from their bodies. Their eyes sparkled with the lights of wisdom. They had already thoroughly understood all secrets of this great formation, and this great formation was a peak-level piece, even based on the knowledge structure of the non-humankind.

They thoroughly understood this great formation, which meant they had already reached a considerable level of studying, regarding all types of magic formations, space and time. At this moment, every one of these thousands of magic formation artists on the scene could be counted as a master.

They were satisfied, excited, and thrilled with happiness.

Tushan old man was grinning, his eyes squeezed into two curved lines. He wasn't interested in this magic formation itself. Instead, he was especially passionate about the fact that this great formation could lead to other worlds.

With Tushan Family's financial strength, the resources from any world could raise the power of this family at a soaring rate. More resources, more wealth, more armies, more weapons, all of these meant more power. Tu Shan old man felt like he could already see the future of his family as the top-grade super clan, the most powerful one among the entire humankind. And he himself could sit straight in the Town Hall to discuss with the human emperor about worldly affairs.

This feeling was, in one word, wonderful!

Feng Qinxin was chuckling. She impatiently reached her hand out towards Ji Hao, who came from a distance away, while saying, "Earl Yao, hurry! Give me that coordinate! I can't wait!"

While laughing with a silvery voice, Feng Qinxin's eyes sparkled as she laughed loudly, "A new world, how wonderful! It will be

perfect if it's a world with rich fire power!"

Slightly shaking, Feng Qinxin narrowed her eyes and seemed to imagine the new world, "I will plant fire Firmiana trees all over that world. With enough Firmiana trees to live on, those little ones of our kind can grow faster. Then, the power of our kind can grow faster!"

Ji Hao gave an embarrassing smile.

'A world with rich fire power? Feng Qinxin, young master Feng, I'm afraid that you will be greatly disappointed.' thought Ji Hao.

Pan Jia world was a pure water world. Pan Jia's cultivation style was extreme. Even the tiny sun of her world was given to Ji Hao. All the other natural powers were cast away by her. Planting fire Firmiana trees in that massive water? Ji Hao only smiled without saying a word.

Ao Li stood beside the great formation with a darkened face. He was surrounded by a strong aura of killing. Obviously, Ao Li was still in a rage because he didn't manage to kill Priest Corpse personally, who was daring enough to make zombies with the bodies of ancient divine dragons.

Eight dragon warriors, who were even taller and stronger than Ao Li himself, stood behind him. They were nearly ten meters tall, having human bodies and dragon heads. They were wearing golden armors and releasing strong power vibrations. Scars and marks could be seen on the scales of their heads. These dragon warriors were hundred-thousand years old at the very least.

The so-called dragon kings were dominators of water areas, and were incomparably powerful. The dragon-kind had a different cultivation system, but these ancient dragons could rival Supreme Magi merely with their incredibly strong bodies!

According to a powerful human being, 'Every ancient dragon, every dragon king, is a human-shaped magic treasure, a pure

killing machine.’

The eight dragon kings stationed in eight areas in Midland each guarded a water area for the dragon-kind. However, after Ao Li informed all the dragons about what Priest Corpse had done, the eight dragon kings came to help immediately. Each of them brought countless descendants of warriors.

Ji Hao glanced at the eight dragon kings and couldn’t help but nod.

Pan Jia world was definitely not a good place for phoenixes, as not a single being of the phoenix kind was with the nature of water. However, for the dragon-kind, Pan Jia world was perfect. The massive water in Pan Jia world could accommodate at least a million dragons, to start a life.

Ji Hao had already made an agreement with Pan Jia, that as long as no one disturbed her cultivation, she would do nothing to interfere with Ji Hao and his friends. With the domineering power of Pan Jia herself, if she wasn’t willing to show up, the eight dragon kings could never find a trace of her, not even if they turned the entire world upside down.

Pan Jia world was quite fertile, and those natural treasures with the nature of water were rather valuable. No matter how, the dragon-kind led by Ao Li would gain the most from Pan Jia world.

Di Yantuo quickly walked over to Ji Hao.He politely bowed and said, "Master, the great formation is accomplished. According to our spy in Liang Zhu City, the other twelve clans finished building their portals as well, almost at the same time as we did."

Making a swallow, Di Yantuo continued with a deep voice, "We have to hurry up. Otherwise, once the portal of Dishi Family is activated, we will run straight into them in that world. Then, we will have to fight them. With our powers..."

Ao Li carelessly waved his hand and laughed out loud, "They’re

nothing but Dishi Family, no big deal. This time, our dragon-kind have prepared hundreds of millions of elite warriors. We will own that world. No matter who comes to stand in our way, we can simply wipe them all out!"

Ji Hao nodded, then said to Di Yantuo, "Get ready, we're departing!"

Chapter 910: The Great Formation Activated

At the Liang Zhu City, the fence wall reached straight into the sky. The new fence wall was taller, thicker and sturdier than the old one.

Divine towers stood silently on the ground, looking like Gods and devils. Cold and emotionless erect eyes floated upon those towers, looking down at the world. Occasionally, those erect eyes would release beams of lights, flashing across the air. Then, thick waves of air ripples would scan across the sky, such that not even a tiny bug could hide from these divine towers.

In palaces and mansions around the city, large troops of Yu Clan and Jia Clan warriors had been gathering ceaselessly. Twelve perpetual portals were located in twelve manors around Liang Zhu City, each surrounded by countless troops, different sized large-scale weapons, floating castles, and mountains.

Beside a brightly glowing magic formation portal base, Dishi Yanluo was wearing a blood-red cloak, underneath an exquisite, luxurious blood-red armor. He was holding a golden staff with his left hand while staring at the magic formation with sparkling eyes.

"Those traitors should be ready to depart as well, right?" Dishi Yanluo murmured to himself with a cold and vicious look.

A fat non-humankind slave lied under Dishi Yanluo’s feet, facing the ground as he deferentially smiled and responded, "Your Majesty, you’re right. According to the intelligence department, they've already known about things that happened in here. Unless something unexpected happens, they will surely start their journey soon. After all, a whole new world, it’s way too attractive."

Dishi Yanluo gave an evil smile, then crooked his finger towards a Jia Clan warrior beside him and said, "Get your men ready. You

will kill every last one of those traitors in that world, including Di Yantuo."

With a long face, Dishi Yanluo continued murmuring to himself, "No matter what excuse they have, for whatever reason, traitors are traitors... and traitors have to die."

Dishi Yanluo then knitted his eyebrows, he was in a bad mood right now. A new world, that was an extremely precious wealth. But the coordinates had been leaked out. Di Yantuo and the other traitors were so damnable.

Dishi Yanluo turned around while burning with envy and anger, glanced at the other eleven portal base magic formations, then unhappily snorted. These lucky ones, they could peacefully enjoy their new worlds, all by themselves.

But that was fine. As long as he killed everyone on Di Yantuo's side, Dishi Family would also be able to own the entire new world.

"Dishi Cha..." Dishi Yanluo called this name with a low voice, "Hm, let all twelve families do this together? This guy, what on earth is he planning on? We are now out of touch with Holy Realm. The constructional work of the portal leading back to our hometown has failed for a couple of times in a row. Did you do that?"

"You, or, the unknown powerful being in Holy Realm, the one you have hooked up with, what on earth do you want?" Dishi Yanluo agonizingly sighed, then took a glance at an enormous bronze sundial standing in the manor.

The sunlight poured on the sundial, and the shadow of its long needle accurately pointed at a thin mark. Dishi Yanluo gave a long and resonant shouted, then waved his hand and growled, "Let's go!"

Almost at the same moment, people from the other eleven manors let out deep yet resonant roars as well. Meanwhile,

exquisitely decorated top-grade magic crystal pieces burned out in a moment in the twelve great magic formations portal bases. Next, the light sphere in the core area of each magic formations began spinning swiftly. Natural powers from all directions surged over, being swallowed by the light spheres.

The ground of Liang Zhu City began shaking slightly. Except for members of the families of the twelve emperors in power, people from the other families flew into the sky, looking at the twelve quickly sparkling light spheres with jealousy.

Twelve whole new worlds, how many benefits would that deliver!

But this time, the twelve families prepared to have all those benefits all to themselves. They gathered up their family armies to do this long journey, without giving anything out. One could easily imagine that when these families each occupied a new world, how crazily their powers would improve.

As for the other families who failed to join this banquet, they could never, ever threaten the twelve powerful families in the future. Perhaps, they would be suppressed by the twelve families forever and ever.

Some curses came out of the months of the nobles ones from the other families. They prayed to whoever they worshiped, and wished that the twelve families would never come back from this long journey. Things like this did happen before, and if the same thing could happen this time, that would be so satisfying!

The ground was quaking, and the air was vibrating along with a loud buzzing noise. Miles long light streams rose into the sky. Reaching over a thousand miles far from the earth, those light streams shattered the space and dazzled into the immeasurably deep cracks of Chaos.

Dishi Yanluo and the other twelve emperors in power threw the crystals, that sealed the coordinate of those new worlds gave by

Dishi Cha, into the portal base magic formations. Tiny spell symbols rose up in lines, then sparkling light beams emerged in the twelve huge light streams, as the base formations for the twelve portals began adjusting themselves according to the coordinates they were given.

If everything went right, in about three to five days, each base magic formation could generate a portal leading to a new world.

Dishi Yanluo and the others stood beside their base formation, silently waiting. Countless non-humankind warriors stood around the base formation, staring at the dazzling formation while gasping quickly and loudly. They couldn't wait to rush in, to be the first one to arrive in the new world, and start to kill and loot.

A new, unexplored world, a virgin land, with countless natural treasures, powerful, natural crafted weapons, and countless slaves, waiting to be conquered.

They wanted to take away all they had, turning all local creatures into slaves. If the local females could fulfill the aesthetic needs of these non-humankind warriors, these warriors wouldn't mind venting some of their desires on them.

For the past countless years, the Yu Clan had been doing things exactly like this. With all kinds of powerful magics or treasures, as long as a new world was located, they would rush in like locusts. As the first step, they would crazily sweep across the new world, then begin to plunder resources from the new world with plans, until the world was emptied and drained.

Resources from countless worlds had been sent back to their hometown through portals, back to that overexploited, barren world. This nourished that great and scary world, to generate countless new warriors to allow them to grow stronger, and to let more and more warriors join the conquering of the universe.

The non-humankind had been doing this for countless years.

Gradually, the eyes of all non-humankind beings turned blood-red. They gasped loudly, like mad bulls; they were surrounded by a fierce aura of killing, without any patience left. They eagerly needed to vent their desires.

Hundreds of miles away, on a mountain floating in the sky, Dishi Cha stood beside a cliff, looking at the twelve enormous light streams reaching into the sky.

"It has begun! Finally!"

"I am the ultimate conqueror of Pan Gu world. When I take the origin of this world..."

Chapter 911: The Weapon Chooses Its Owner

Back in Yao Mountain City, a dazzling light stream rose from the core area of the portal's magic formation base.

Golden beams of light released from Ji Hao's forehead, surging into this light stream like water. He activated the golden bridge and helped the base formation to locate Pan Jia world quickly and more accurately.

Ji Hao had been to Pan Jia world once with the golden bridge. With the help of this supreme treasure, the base formation only took around half an hour to locate Pan Jia world. Abruptly, a deep buzz was let out by the formation, and the light stream expanded speedily, soon covering the area with a radius of ten miles.

The shaking light stream turned steady and dense, looking like sparkling glass.

Ao Li, Feng Qinxin, Tushan old man and Si Wen Ming laughed out together. Only Di Yantuo and those Xiu Clan people sneakily glanced at Ji Hao in a great shock.

Powerful beings from the humankind, dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind didn't know much about teleporting magic formation portal bases, but these non-humankind beings knew everything about it. To locate a new world with the power of a base formation required three days at the least. Locating a new world within half an hour, while the base formation remained so steady, was completely beyond all the experiences of these non-humankind beings. They had never even heard anything like this, despite their rich experiences!

"We've found ourselves a good master!" Di Yantuo laughed proudly.

No matter how Ji Hao managed to do it, that was power, that was the foundation. Di Yantuo and his people would only be benefited

by Ji Hao’s power and a great foundation.

"Brothers, go!" Ao Li burst with a resonant roar. Meanwhile, a heavy dragon-scale armor appeared on his body. He held a dragon-head shield with his left hand, a dragon spear with his right hand, while two smaller shaped dragons coiled on his arms, showing their teeth. With big steps, Ao Li walked into the portal.

The large dragon heads of the eight dragon kings were shaken. Soon, they also armed themselves to the teeth. Excitedly, the eight dragon kings rushed into the portal as well.

Dragons were proud and impulsive. Ao Li took the lead and rushed into the portal. Following him were the eight dragon kings and their descendants and warriors. All of them had been waving their weapons, roaring thunderously while treading on clouds, swooshing into the portal. Dragon whales, enormous sea turtles, ocean horses and flood dragons, all kinds of gigantic aquatic creatures all rushed up, carrying countless smaller shaped aquatic creatures into the portal.

Feng Qinxin gave a resonant and silvery shout. Her body sparkled as she rode on a seven-colored, enormous phoenix and swished into the portal, leaving a rainbow behind her. Once she moved, all phoenix warriors and warriors from clans ruled by the phoenix-kind, including peacocks, rosefinches, Bi Fang and all other kinds of birds, spread their wings and flew into the portal while singing loudly.

The dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind had led the way, but Yao Mountain people under Ji Hao’s command, Tushan Family people brought by Tushan old man, and Magi Palace people led by Si Wen Ming, all remained motionless.

Tushan old man was smart and cunning, he was a businessman. He loved to do businesses, yet he would never send his people to lick the blood from the edges of swords. He was waiting for those dragons and phoenixes to clear the way and build a solid

foundation in the new world. Then, he would lead his people in.

Ji Hao knew everything about Pan Jia world. The dragon-kind would certainly be thrilled, as Pan Jia world was a hugely pleasant surprise for them. But the phoenix-kind would definitely burst in anger, probably complaining day and night. Therefore, Ji Hao surely didn't want to go see Feng Qinxin's sulky face.

With Feng Qinxin's temper, when she and the group of proud phoenix girls found out that Pan Jia world was actually a massive world of water, without even a sparkle of fire, even without a piece of land, she would definitely flip out on Ji Hao.

As for Si Wen Ming, he was planning to lead Magi Palace warriors and warriors from his family, You Chong Clan, into the portal. But before he could give the order, a blood-red, triangle-shaped jade talisman drifted out of his sleeve. Next, a blood-red light screen, that represented the most urgent message, was released from the jade talisman.

Si Wen Ming flicked his fingers and sent out a few power streams into the talismans. Then the blood-red light screen transformed into an extremely thin beam of light and drilled into the spot between his eyebrows.

All of a sudden, Si Wen Ming's calm look changed as he shouted directly out in shock, "How did this happen?! This, this, this...Ji Hao!"

Si Wen Ming turned around, squeezed his eyes towards Ji Hao. Si Wen Ming had always been calm, but now, Ji Hao clearly discovered the unsettledness from his eyes.

"Tushan Elder, please, keep an eye on this place for us!" Ji Hao didn't have the time to say anything else, only smiled at Tushan old man, then hurriedly followed Si Wen Ming away.

Tushan old man paused briefly, then a jade talisman in his sleeve began vibrating intensively.

Tushan old man instantly gripped the jade talisman. A while later, his eyes suddenly popped out widely, shining with a dazzling light. But within a blink of an eye, he calmed back down and murmured, "Such a great disturbance! Our Tushan Family is nothing but a small one, we can not afford to get involved. Hmm, this has nothing to do with us, nothing to do with us!"

Turning around, Tushan old man narrowed his eyes, glanced at Si Wen Ming, then continued murmuring with a lower voice, "Ah, Marquis Chong has indeed said that You Chong Clan and our Tushan Family should be united by marriage. Good, that's good, this kid, Wen Ming, good, good, good!"

Lowering his head and giving a faint smile, Tushan old man nodded to another elderly man behind him and whispered something to him. The elderly man raised his eyebrows, then his figure gradually faded in a breeze. But not too many people noticed that a person disappeared just like this.

Not too far away, in a corner of a street, Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming faced each other.

Si Wen Ming's eyebrows were knitted, as he looked at Ji Hao and said in a deep voice, "That Gong Sun Tianming, is he truly Zhu Rong Tianming? Zhu Rong's son?"

Ji Hao nodded. Zhu Rong TIanming was killed by Kun Peng, but then Priest Hua saved his soul, rebuild his body with a Chaos spirit lotus, and gave him the holy spirit blood from Emperor Xuanyuan, allowing him to inherit Emperor Xuanyuan's bloodline. Ji Hao witnessed all that!

Gong Sun Tianming was Zhu Rong Tianming, this couldn't be wrong.

Si Wen Ming took a deep breath and told Ji Hao about the message he received just now.

Emperor Shun went to You Xiong Family to appease the inner

conflict of that family, while the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind were hunting Priest Corpse. A dragon army and a phoenix army also marched to You Xiong Family, and almost started a massive fight. But unexpectedly, Gong Sun Tianming forcibly took Emperor Shun's spirit holy weapon away with the power of his bloodline.

"Emperor Shun's spirit holy weapon is called Xuanyuan sword, crafted by Emperor Xuanyuan himself." said Si Wen Ming with a serious look while looking at Ji Hao, "Xuanyuan sword has an esteemed position in the hearts of human beings. People all believe that the one holding Xuanyuan sword is the human emperor!"

"Gong Sun Tianming's not qualified." Ji Hao said hurriedly, "Emperor Shun is not dead."

"But in the recent years, Emperor Shun has been restraining his power with Xuanyuan sword." said Si Wen Ming anxiously, "Xuanyuan sword is now taken away, and soon, Emperor Shun will break into the level of Supreme Magus. Once he becomes a Supreme Magus, he would have to give up the throne and focus on his own cultivation. This is the rule of our humankind. The lifespan of Supreme Magi is way too long. Therefore, none of those large human clans would allow a Supreme Magus to be the emperor!"

"We now have to find out who will be our next emperor...before Emperor Shun abdicates."

Si Wen Ming worryingly looked at Ji Hao.

Chapter 912: You Xiong City

The golden bridge released a dim golden light and swiftly moved across space.

Mist rose from the green land. Flying across a mountain area, a fertile plain area was right in the front.

A magnificent city lied silently on this plain like an enormous Chaos beast. The sky was dark, with mist rising silently. This city was sparkling with light, and from the air, one could see winged dragons hovering and patrolling in the sky.

This was You Xiong City, the base of You Xiong Family.

Unlike Pu Ban City, which was natural and less organized, this city was well designed, with streets were as straight as lines on a chessboard. Large buildings built from giant rocks mixed with metal stood by the sides of the streets. Every building in this city could serve as a residence, and also as a battle fort.

Emperor Xuanyuan was physically the most powerful among all human emperors. He ruled his people with military laws, and this tradition was inherited by You Xiong Family over generations. You Xiong Family people lived in the city as civilians and left the city as warriors. With farm tools, they worked as farmers, but with weapons, they fought as soldiers. Every single one of You Xiong Family people was brave and strong. In any large human clan, they could be as good as the top-grade elites.

You Xiong Family was thriving and strong. Other than Gong Sun Clan as their most lineal descendants, You Xiong Clan, Mi Clan and the other few top-grade branches of this family were all impressively powerful. According to Si Wen Ming, not to mention Gong Sun Clan, which inherited the bloodline of Emperor Xuanyuan, You Xiong Clan, Mi Clan and the other branch clans were as powerful as the combination of seven to eight top-grade Southern Wasteland clans.

This showed that You Xiong Family was such a powerful, enormous one.

If Gong Sun Meng could truly support Gong Sun Tianming with all the resources possessed by You Xiong Family, one could say that Gong Sun Tianming already had half a butt sitting on the throne. Added with the fact that he had already taken the Xuanyuan sword, one could almost tell for sure by now that he had seventy percent chance of becoming the next human emperor.

If Gong Sun Meng could truly persuade all branches of You Xiong Family to support Gong Sun Tianming, even Si Wen Ming would be having no choice but to give up. In terms of bloodline, You Chong Clan led by his father, Si Xi, was actually a branch of You Xiong Family, and Si Wen Ming was a direct descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan.

Once You Xiong Family gave the order, Si Xi and his son, Si Wen Ming, could only follow.

Si Wen Ming wanted to be the next human emperor, but what he wanted was not the power. Instead, he simply wanted to change things with his passion and efforts, to make the humankind stronger.

It would be perfect if he could become the human emperor. But if he couldn’t, Si Wen Ming would still believe that he could change the humankind bit by bit with his work, and make the humankind better.

Nevertheless, Si Wen Ming couldn’t tolerate Gong Sun Tianming as the next human emperor!

If Gong Sun Tianming were a true descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan, if he truly wanted to dedicate himself to the humankind, Si Wen Ming wouldn’t say a word to disagree. But the truth was Gong Sun Tianming had his body rebuilt in such a weird way and attained Emperor Xuanyuan’s bloodline with a single drop of spirit blood…Was he even a human being?

Not to mention the fact that Gong Sun Tianming had tangled up with Priest Corpse, Bo Qiujia and the other cultivators.

Once, Si Wen Ming read countless ancient books in the secret library of the Magi Palace with Emperor Shun. Then, they paid the Netherworld Priest a high price, and learned some historical facts which were intentionally erased by the ancestors of human beings.

Priest Hua, Priest Mu, and the other powerful beings, who had been staying away from all worldly affairs, certainly wanted something from the humankind. Therefore, if Gong Sun Tianming became the next human emperor, would the humankind remain the same as before, the pure humankind in Si Wen Ming's heart?

As for Ji Hao, his attitude was clear and simple — Si Wen Ming was a close friend of his. Therefore, Ji Hao would be benefited the most if Si Wen Ming became the next human emperor, instead of his competitors.

Letting Gong Sun Tianming be the next human emperor? Why? Because of the conflicts that burst between Gong Sun Tianming and Ji Hao, and the hatred between Ji Hao and Priest Hua, Priest Mu, and their disciples, Ji Hao could never let Gong Sun Tianming attain the throne!

Therefore, as Si Wen Ming went to Si Xi to meet up on the situation, Ji Hao came to You Xiong City by himself.

You Xiong City was covered in spell symbols. A great defensive magic formation surrounded this large city while releasing a strong, prehistorical sense of power.

The golden bridge slightly vibrated while the dim golden light sparkled. Ji Hao passed the seal of the city easily and sneaked into You Xiong City. The Pan Xi divine mirror released a dim stream of light and wrapped his entire body up, without letting out any power vibration. Like a ghost, Ji Hao drifted across, heading to the ancestral temple in You Xiong City.

Large troops of armored warriors had been patrolling on the street, while a great number of Maguspriests with long robes stood on tall buildings, glancing around with serious looks. Additionally, countless fierce beasts had been swishing in the darkness, sniffing around in every corner.

High up in the air, at least three-thousand winged dragons had been hovering. Ji Hao observed their armors and weapons, and discovered that these winged dragons and warriors on their backs belonged to two different sides. The ones with faintly golden armors should be You Xiong Family warriors, while the ones with dragon scale tight armors were obviously from the dragon-kind.

Back then, Emperor Xuanyuan led all living creatures fought the non-humankind, large batches of elite dragon warriors followed him. After the great war, a part of dragon warriors admired Emperor Xuanyuan for his power and bravery. Therefore, they chose to stay under the command of You Xiong Family. Those flying dragons in the sky should be descendants of those dragons who followed Emperor Xuanyuan back then.

Winged dragons were flying in the sky, and from time to time, a few dragons would brush against each other in a rather dangerous way. If they didn’t control their bodies so well and ended up bumping into each other, they would be severely injured and fall to the ground.

The atmosphere was intense, with a strong aura of killing; all swords were pulled out and all bows were pulled open. Ji Hao couldn’t help but silently shake his head. It seemed that the dragon-kind didn’t come with kindness, while You Xiong Family never showed a friendly attitude.

Ji Hao couldn’t understand what on earth did Gong Sun Meng want? Was he truly going to ruin the entire You Xiong Family for Gong Sun Tianming?

The threats came from the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind

directly. You Xiong Family was strong indeed, but compared with the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, You Xiong Family was just not powerful enough!

No one had noticed him on the way, so Ji Hao successfully sneaked into the ancestral temple of You Xiong family.

By the gate of the temple was a pair of tall bronze totem columns. Each column was over three hundred meters tall, and needed a couple of people to put their arms around it to fully cover it. Ji Hao stepped into the temple, then his eyesight expanded immediately. In the front was a hundreds of meters tall mountain. Down the mountain was a large flat area. Warriors armed to the teeth had formed battle formations, facing each other.

A giant number of warriors gathered in this place, such that no edges of those troops could be seen.

At first glance, Ji Hao saw thousands of different battle flags that belonged to the dragon-kind, phoenix-kind and large human clans. But of course, the number of battle flags of You Xiong Family's branches was the biggest. Those battle flags fluttered in the air, creating a strong vibe of killing. Each of those flags was painted with bears in different styles.

The ancestral temple was located on top of the mountain. At the moment, the fire burned ragingly in a giant bronze caldron, while a cold and harsh voice came from the mountaintop.

"Tianming, my son, is able to control the Xuanyuan sword. He should be the new emperor...You, what are you hesitating for?"

Chapter 913: Possessed by Sky Devil

A stair led straight to the mountaintop. Each stage was three-hundred meters wide, filled with You Xiong Family warriors.

Other than armored warriors, many three meters tall, entirely metal human-shaped puppets had also been standing on the stages in ordered lines. These puppets had spell symbols sparkling all over their bodies, releasing strong power vibrations.

More surprisingly, these puppets all held heavy and huge weapons, and the edges of those weapons still had bloodstains. If Ji Hao guessed right, these puppets should be the ones who followed Emperor Xuanyuan's lead and fought the Chi You Army. No one knew how Emperor Xuanyuan made these puppets back then, but these puppets were incredibly powerful.

At one time, when the human army led by Emperor Xuanyuan almost collapsed under the great pressure given by the Chi You Army, only this strangely strong puppet army blocked the attacks launched by the Chi You Army. Eventually, the human army defeated Chi You Army and sealed Chi You, and these puppets had indeed made their contributions.

Ever since Emperor Xuanyuan abdicated, this puppet army was not as powerful as before. But today, the You Xiong Family activated it.

Ji Hao was surrounded by the divine light from the Pan Xi divine mirror. He avoided You Xiong Family warriors guarding on the stages and sneaked to the door of the ancestor temple.

Looking from the foot of the mountain, this ancestor temple wasn't large at all. But when Ji Hao arrived at the mountaintop, he realized that this place was definitely covered by an especially powerful magic space seal, that was even far more powerful than the greatest magic space seal created by the Magi Palace.

The square on top of the mountain was five-thousand meters in radius, paved by yellow jade tiles. The anciently styled ancestral temple stood silently in the middle of the square like a Chaos breast.

A large caldron had a raging fire burning in it, while hundreds of men with long robes stood around the caldron, quarreling loudly.

Ji Hao took a glance at the broad square and subconsciously and instantly took a long gasp in shock — Gong Sun Meng had truly taken out all that the You Xiong Family had. The countless surprisingly powerful warriors arrayed on this square even made Ji Hao stunned.

Not to mention those powerful warriors from You Xiong Family, Ji Hao was now powerful too. He believed that at the level of Divine Magi or under, no matter how many human warriors came to attack him, he wouldn't be harmed at all. Only with the few supreme treasures he had, he could even deal with a thousand Divine Magi all at once.

What shocked Ji Hao were those enormous spirit creatures standing like human beings on the ground, and still having features of beasts. According to the legends, back then, when Emperor Xuanyuan led all living creatures and fought the non-humankind, countless powerful spirit creatures joined the human army. When the human army defeated Chi You Army and won the war, most of these spirit creatures left, but a part of them was especially grateful to Emperor Xuanyuan, and chose to join You Xiong Family to serve as guards.

Ji Hao glanced around and saw at least a hundred thousand creatures that didn't look like human beings at all, and had been releasing strong power vibrations. The sense of power released from each of these creatures was incredibly strong. These creatures had distinctive features of non-humankind creatures, but they stood side by side with You Xiong Family warriors.

Among the most eye-catching few creatures, one of them had a human head and a dragon body, with fire sparkles puffing out from his mouth; apparently, he was a pureblood candle dragon!

This candle dragon's face looked like an eighty to ninety years old man, rather old. But the sense of power came from his body was the strongest. Occasionally, he would blink his eyes, and the air around the mountaintop would vibrate because of that.

A middle-aged couple had human-like upper bodies and snake tails. The male one had dark golden scales on his tail while the female one had silver-white scales. Their scales were smooth and shining, like crystals, seeming to be magical and special.

This middle-aged couple was not human, yet their positions were obviously especially high among all You Xiong Family people. They stood side by side, with their tails gently swaying behind their bodies. Tens of You Xiong Family warriors with vividly colored armors surrounded them. Apparently, these warriors were the middle-aged couple's guards.

Beside this middle-aged couple, a girl silently stood aside. She looked around thirteen to fourteen years old, yet the sense of power released from her body was as steady as that from an ancient tree. She was fiddling with a tender flowering branch, wearing a long white dress. The backside edge of her dress was split, with ten snow-white fox tails slightly shaking behind her, disordering the surrounding natural powers.

Ji Hao praised in shock, once again, silently.

'This is how powerful You Xiong Family is!'

The legendary ten tailed sky fox! Many believed that ten tailed sky foxes were extinct since long ago!

People said that Tushan Family was related to the kind of sky fox in terms of bloodline. Therefore, Tushan Family men were all handsome and women all beautiful. But according to the legend,

Tushan Family only had a few nine tailed sky foxes in their holy land.

But, a ten tailed sky fox was actually under the command of You Xiong Family. People believed that sky foxes could have nine tails at most, and now that upper limit was broken! This creature, who seemed like a fourteen years old young girl, was definitely an extremely powerful one who had lived since the prehistorical era. She might even be related to Emperor Xuanyuan in some way. Ji Hao made a guess about her power. She was certainly less powerful than Yu Yu, but if a fight happened between Po, Gui Ling and her, she might not lose.

Other than that candle dragon, the fox and the couple, each one of those over a hundred thousand powerful creatures had been releasing a strong and steady sense of power, that did not seem to be ordinary at all. Apparently, they were all too powerful to be offended. They had different powers and abilities. Physically, they might not be as strong as human Divine Magi, but with their comprehensive powers, they could definitely rival powerful Divine Magi! It would still be amazing even if these creatures could only rival the weakest one star Divine Magus, just because their number was way too huge!

Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao looked at those people, who had been having a stormy quarrel around the caldron.

At first glance, Ji Hao saw Emperor Shun. Emperor Shun was wearing a simple flax shirt, and his face was covered in purple mist. Dense purple mist was rising from his head, forming a meters wide cloud upon his head. Within the purple mist, sparkling light spots were visible, that looked like stars. The dreadful sense of power released from the purple cloud even made Ji Hao tremble in fear.

Obviously, Emperor Shun could no longer restrain his power, and he seemed to be on the edge of a breakthrough.

But what confused Ji Hao was that Emperor Shun was a peak-level Divine Magus tops. Then why was the sense of power that came from him much stronger than that from Yi Shen and the other peak-level Divine Magi that Ji Hao had met? Tens, hundreds, and even thousands of times stronger!

Were there some secrets about human emperors that Ji Hao didn't know about?

Beside Emperor Shun, Gong Sun Tianming was holding a dark-golden long sword, scornfully smiling and looking at the group of loudly talking people.

He showed a dismissive attitude towards human ministers that came with Emperor Shun, elders from the other branches of You Xiong Family, such as elders of You Xiong Clan and Mi Clan, and elders from the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind.

Only when he occasionally glanced at a tall and sturdy, fierce-looking middle-aged man would he would instinctively show a slight trace of respect.

Sneakily listening to these people for a while, Ji Hao learned something. That tall and sturdy middle-aged man was Gong Sun Meng, the current leader of You Xiong Family.

Carefully observing Gong Sun Meng, Ji Hao's heart suddenly twitched. Why did Gong Sun Meng have a five-colored, dim layer of light in his eyes? This special glow belonged to no one else but those sky devils Ji Hao had earlier encountered!

Chapter 914: Divine Thunder Descend

Over a hundred human ministers stood behind Emperor Shun, angrily staring at Gong Sun Meng.

For an illegitimate child with an unknown background, Gong Sun Meng insisted on making him the only prince of You Xiong Family, and was preparing to push him up to the throne with all resources possessed by the entire You Xiong family!

Didn't Gong Sun Meng understand how many troubles he would cause the humankind by doing this?

Once internal conflicts burst in You Xiong Family, more internal strifes would start to happen among the humankind. Didn't he know about this?

On another side, tens of elders from large branch clans of You Xiong Family had also been staring at Gong Sun Meng with sulky faces. They didn't have too many complicated thoughts by now, as they now had no spare attention to pay to the overall situation of the humankind. They were simply angry. Even though Gong Sun Meng was the current family leader, a direct descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan, but which You Xiong Family member wasn't a descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan? Why did Gong Sun Meng take away the prince titles of the other princes, and give all they had to an illegitimate child of his, who was with an unknown background?

To these elders, if Gong Sun Meng promised them enough benefits, they might agree to support Gong Sun Tianming. However, Gong Sun Tianming was an absolute idiot, who actually offended the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind. As a consequence, two formidable armies were raised by the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, and had marched into the You Xiong Family!

He was a troublemaker. How could he be the only prince of You Xiong Family? Such a bearer of disaster, he should be strangled to

death and thrown into a toilet until he became a pile of compost, instead of staying in You Xiong Family to cause more troubles.

‘Look at all three dragon-king-level dragon elders, six phoenix elders, and twenty to thirty elders that came from the dependency family and clans of these two kinds, all as powerful as dragon kings!’

If the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind insisted on starting a real war against You Xiong Family, they could never manage to rival these two powerful kinds! Not to mention You Xiong Family, the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind were unstoppable, not even if all human clans combined their powers. After all, the human kind was the weakest among the three kinds generated by Pan Gu’s bloodline. The dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind had always been much more powerful than the humankind, always!

"No matter how, Gong Sun Tianming cannot be a prince of our family!" A You Xiong Family elder growled in rage. He squeezed out from the crowd, pointed at Gong Sun Meng and shouted, "Gong Sun Meng, you said this kid is your son, right? Who is his mother? Which clan dose his mother come from? Bring her over, let us testify her bloodline. Then, we can discuss!"

Gong Sun Meng popped out his eyes and responded with a harsh tone, "You said he is my son, then he is my son. His mother died long ago. Do you want me to dig her bones out for you?"

Laughing coldly, Gong Sun Meng raised his head and continued, "He is my successor. I cultivated him with all resources I had in these years. He is the future human emperor, and the future leader of You Xiong Family. He can probably attain greater achievements than our ancestor, Emperor Xuanyuan himself!"

"How dare you!"

"Shut it!"

"Nonsense! Gong Sun Meng, are you out of your mind?!"

Gong Sun Meng said that Gong Sun Tianming might even do better than Emperor Xuanyuan. Hearing this, all You Xiong Family elders, even the ones who were on his side, exploded. They rushed up one after another, furiously cursing Gong Sun Meng for what he said.

Not only these elders, human ministers who stood behind Emperor Shun and leaders, elders from the other large human clans, were all infuriated.

Even elders from the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind stared at Gong Sun Meng with unhappy looks!

Emperor Xuanyuan was admired even by the Dragon Emperor and Phoenix Emperor. The current leader of the dragon-kind, who was also the Dragon Emperor, fought side by side with Emperor Xuanyuan back then; they were brothers.

Gong Sun Meng bragged that his son could be better than Emperor Xuanyuan. By saying this, he didn’t only show disrespect to Emperor Xuanyuan, but also offended the current Dragon Emperor and Phoenix Emperor.

While sneering, a dragon elder raised his head and gave a resonant roar towards the sky. A golden and shining pair of dragon horns flashed upon his head, while an overwhelming power vibration spread out from his body. It even started a hurricane on the mountaintop.

The dragon elder stared at Gong Sun Meng angrily and shouted out loudly, "Leader Gong Sun, don’t call this kid your son so soon! As far as we know, this son’s real name is Zhu Rong Tianming. He is the seventh son of Zhu Rong, the Great Libation of the humankind! This body of his is made from a lotus! How can he be your son?"

Gong Sun Meng smilingly bowed to the dragon elder, then responded with a bland tone, "He is my son. How can I not know my own son?"

Sighing slightly, Gong Sun Meng looked at the dragon elder, as if he was wronged, and continued, "In order to cause my son troubles, you even made up such a ridiculous story? Make a human body with a lotus? Hehe, hehe, hahaha!"

Gong Sun Meng spread his arms, looked around for a while, then laughed, "People, people, everyone on the scene is influential and famous among human beings. You're all heroes, you're all powerful! May I ask, which one of you is capable of making a human body with a lotus? And giving him the bloodline of our ancestor, Emperor Xuanyuan?"

Emperor Shun remained silent, so did those human ministers. You Xiong Family elders didn't say anything, neither did those dragon elders and phoenix elders.

The dragon elder said that Gong Sun Tianming's body was made with a lotus by a powerful being, because Ao Li said so in the message he sent back. However, Ao Li didn't witness the whole thing. Instead, Man Man told him that.

This was the problem. Man Man was Zhu Rong's daughter, a young and naive little girl. Her words...To be honest, what Man Man said was truly not so convincing.

If Zhu Rong said the same thing, no one dared to not believe it! But these words were from Man Man, so no one took her words seriously.

Hearing Gong Sun Meng, the dragon elder blushed in shame, lowered his head and couldn't say a word.

He wasn't doubting Ao Li's words, but making a human body with a lotus? This sounded indeed too strange, like a myth. This sounded as magical as creating a world and creatures living in it. Only the ones as powerful as world-creators could do things like this! The scalp of the dragon elder was even numbed when he thought so.

Emperor Shun’s face twitched as well. He looked at Gong Sun Tianming, who was with a serious look, standing beside him. Abruptly, Emperor Shun gave a long sigh and said, "Gong Sun Tianming, are you truly a descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan?"

Gong Sun Tianming glanced at Emperor Shun smilingly, then responded with a bland tone, "I can swear to the heaven that I, Gong Sun Tianming, am indeed a direct descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan! If any word I said is not true, I will be struct to death by the thunderbolt descending from the heaven!"

Standing in the distance, Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. He boosted up an extra pure stream of power of Dao and silently cast a thunder magic that he learned from Priest Qing Wei. Slightly, he waved both of his hands and next, a rumbling thunder descended from the sky. Thirty-six water-tank-thick purple thunderbolts struck down, along with an overwhelming and unstoppable positive power.

Gong Sun Tianming didn’t manage to react timely. He didn’t even have the time to raise the Xuanyuan sword before the thunderbolts struck on his head in a row.

Chapter 915: Facing The Sky Devil

"Who is it?!"

Struck by the thunderbolts, streams of smoke puffed out from Gong Sun Tianming's head. The sword tip pointed on the ground. He gripped the hilt of the sword with both hands to support his body while screaming hoarsely in a fury.

The thunderbolts released by Ji Hao were way too powerful. Even though Gong Sun Tianming's body was made from a Chaos spirit lotus and was nearly indestructible, he now felt that all his internal organs had been twitching, and his body nearly collapsed.

The ten tailed sky fox reacted the fastest. Her body nimbly flashed across the sky while a faintly sensible sense of power spread out. The mountaintop was surrounded in darkness, but as the fox moved, the area was immediately lightened up by sunlight. Flower aromas came from all directions, while a warmth descended from the air. It made people feel so relaxed that it even softened their bodies.

Anyone but Ji Hao might have been disabled by this warm and peaceful, yet lethal attack launched by the fox already, and became soft and powerless, having no choice but to let the enemy kill them. However, Ji Hao once faced the leaders of Sky Devils, and was under the protection of supreme treasures. Therefore, before the power of the fox could approach him, a raging fire rose from the stainless cloak while nine golden spheres of light swooshed up hundreds of meter high. As the dazzling golden light shone in the sky, the power released by the fox slightly trembled, then began burning.

A silver-white fire in the air was eye-piercing. That was the special fire generated by the fox's power, after it was set ablaze by the essence sun fire.

The ten tailed sky fox screamed out and leaped backward

immediately, quickly stepping away from Ji Hao and hiding behind that old candle dragon. She stared at Ji Hao in both anger and startle and yelled, "Where is this kid from? The essence sun fire...It’s the only thing that I am afraid of. Old candle dragon, you go!"

The old candle dragon slightly shook his coiled, enormous dragon body, straightened his dimly sparkling scales one after another, then raised his head. He looked at Ji Hao with a serious look and asked, "Little thing, why did you attack the future leader of our You Xiong Family?"

Gong Sun Tianming saw Ji Hao’s face. He popped out his eyes in shock, then opened his mouth, seeming about to yell something. But then, he shut his mouth, as if he was worried. Tens of You Xiong Family warriors approached Ji Hao with heavy steps, each holding a heavy shield with the right hand and a long spear with the left hand.

Except for these people, none of those human ministers behind Emperor Shun and those elders from the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, or other branches of You Xiong Family, said a word. They were glad to see Gong Sun Tianming being struck by the thunderbolts!

Ji Hao made two steps forwards, smilingly bowed to the old candle dragon and said, "How are you? Elder Candle Dragon Gui from Candle Dragon Clan is my friend. I have two fiancées, and one of them is a disciple of Elder Candle Dragon Gui."

The old candle dragon popped out his eyes in surprise, "Candle Dragon Gui likes him? Hmm, then this kid can’t be bad...Hmm, why did you strike the future leader of You Xiong Family with thunderbolts? If nothing goes wrong, he will also be the next emperor of the humankind! You, kid, you are too reckless!"

Ji Hao grinned, so did Emperor Shun and those human ministers behind him, and those elders who came from the dragon-kind,

phoenix-kind and other branches of You Xiong Family.

This old candle dragon obviously knew Candle Dragon Gui, and they were certainly close friends. Otherwise, he wouldn’t say anything like that. Just now, he was angrily growling at Ji Hao, but once he heard him talking about his relationship with Candle Dragon Gui, this old candle dragon immediately changed his tone. He criticized Ji Hao with the word ‘reckless’, meaning that JI Hao shouldn’t have done this because it might cause trouble for Ji Hao himself.

According to what he said, this old candle dragon was apparently trying to protect Ji Hao, and everyone on the scene understood that.

Gong Sun Meng angrily roared out, looked at the old candle dragon and yelled, "Elder Candle Dragon, I..."

The old candle dragon cast a slow glance at Gong Sun Meng and responded with a serious tone, "This kid attacked the future leader, he should not do that. But, as a young man liked by Candle Dragon Gui, he will not do unreasonable things. Therefore, regarding what he has done, we should dig deeper to tell the right from wrong."

Gong Sun Meng opened his mouth, but failed to say anything.

The old candle dragon had shown a clear attitude. If Ji Hao wasn’t related to Candle Dragon Gui, the old dragon would have captured or killed Ji Hao already by himself. But since Ji Hao was indeed related to Candle Dragon Gui, and Shaosi was Candle Dragon Gui’s disciple, Ji Hao was a member of Candle Dragon Clan. Candle Dragon Clan never had a large population, and this poor blood old candle dragon would certainly help his own people!

Although he was now worshipped by You Xiong Family people and had been serving this family, he joined You Xiong Family only because he admired Emperor Xuanyuan for his achievements and reputation. Emperor Xuanyuan was long gone, and no one knew where he was. As a young one, Gong Sun Meng was far from

qualified enough to order the old candle dragon.

If Gong Sun Meng peacefully negotiated with the old candle dragon, things might be easier. But if he ordered the old candle dragon to capture or kill Ji Hao only because he was the current leader of You Xiong Family...

Hehe, did he think these countless years old candle dragons were all nice old people? Candle Dragons were similar to dragons, but they were not dragons. They were mysterious Chaos creatures. Back in the prehistorical era, many believed that they were descendants of ancient devil Gods, and were famous for their bad tempers!

The old candle dragon's attitude was clear. The fox remained silent, and so did the middle-aged couple. They all stood on the old candle dragon's side. These four were the leaders, the most powerful ones among all powerful spirit creatures on the scene. As they all remained silent and motionless, the other spirit creatures all shut their mouths while staring at Ji Hao from head to toe with bright eyes.

Gong Sun Meng took a long gasp and looked at Ji Hao viciously.

In the holy land of You Xiong Family, Ji Hao attacked the future leader of this family. But still, so many You Xiong Family people tried to protect and help him. This almost infuriated Gong Sun Meng.

"Bring him over!" Gong Sun Meng gnashed his teeth and shouted, "Who are you? Why did you attack my son?!"

Tens of armored warriors stopped, while Ji Hao smilingly walked passed them. At first, he seriously and politely saluted to Emperor Shun according to the official etiquette for ministers meeting with the emperor. Then, he saluted to every single one of those human ministers and elders, including the old dragon and those dragon elders and phoenix elders according to the etiquette for young ones meeting with elderly ones.

Ji Hao was polite and well-mannered, and those ministers and elders all smilingly nodded at him.

Compared to Gong Sun Tianming, who was standing aside with a twisted, vicious face, all these people felt that Ji Hao was far, far better. The difference between Ji Hao and Gong Sun Tianming was a huge as the difference between the sky and the earth. Of course, in these people' eyes, Ji Hao was as high as the sky while Gong Sun Tianming was as low as the earth.

Gong Sun Meng restrained his anger with some efforts until Ji Hao finished his salute and then growled, "So You're that Earl Yao Ji Hao?! Hehe, I haven't left You Xiong Family for many years, but I didn't even know such a reckless, unruly one has emerged from the humankind!"

"Say, why did you attack Tianming, my son?" Gong Sun Meng growled harshly, "Give me a reason. Otherwise, I will kill you myself, and no one can save you!"

Ji Hao looked at Gong Sun Meng, smiled and responded blandly, "Why did I attack Zhu Rong Tianming? We can talk about it later."

Laughing coldly, Ji Hao continued loudly, "But you, you devoured the original soul of Leader Gong Sun, took his body and pretend to be him to raise such a disturbance...You bastard, do you really think no one in Pan Gu world can deal with you?"

Roaring out resonantly, Ji Hao let out the Pan Xi divine mirror and flashed towards Gong Sun Meng.

Chapter 916: All Attack

Ji Hao moved too fast.

Or in other words, no one thought that Ji Hao was daring enough to attack Gong Sun Meng. He was the current leader of You Xiong Family, a direct descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan. His family was one of the top-three among all clans in the alliance. As the leader of this family, he could even be mentioned in the same breath with Emperor Shun!

Which human being dared to show disrespect to him, not to mention attack him!

Therefore, no one stepped up to stop Ji Hao. Instead, everyone watched Ji Hao let out the Pan Xi divine mirror and release a dim stream of divine light, pouring it on Gong Sun Meng.

Weirdly, Gong Sun Meng's body twisted slightly. This three-meter and two-foot tall, tall and sturdy man had actually twisted his waist like a young girl, making a graceful dancing pose.

Emperor Shun's face twitched intensively with his eyes popped out in a great shock.

All human ministers shouted out in shock. This pose Gong Sun Meng made was nothing like him!

Elders from the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, the old candle dragon and the other spirit powerful creatures, all fell into confusion. They looked around, not knowing what to do. Something was definitely wrong with Gong Sun Meng, but what was it?

As for those princes of You Xiong Family who had their titles forcibly taken away by Gong Sun Meng earlier, and the elders behind them who were forced to support Gong Sun Tianming with all of their powers, all grinned delightfully while nodding.

No matter what was wrong with Gong Sun Meng, as long as

something was wrong with him!

A five-colored light blasted from between Gong Sun Meng's eyebrows. A colorful lotus floated before the spot between his eyebrows, releasing a misty, colorful light, rotating swiftly and transforming into a transparent cocoon of light that wrapped him tightly up.

Gong Sun Meng's manly and strong voice became soft and silvery as he said, "Ah, ahaha! Did someone see my true face? Interesting, interesting, this mirror of yours is quite something. It has actually forced my true power out."

Under the light released from the Pan Xi divine mirror, Gong Sun Meng's body turned translucent. Everyone on the scene clearly saw that inside his body was a three-foot tall, slim and stunningly beautiful girl holding a jade pipa, grinningly looking at Ji Hao through Gong Sun Meng's body.

Ji Hao released a golden beam of light from his right forefinger into the mirror, maintaining the suppression on the sky devil.

He shouted coldly, "The soul of Lord Gong Sun Meng has perished, hasn't it? The others might not be able to recognize you, but I have just killed many of your kind a couple of days ago."

Ji Hao looked at that girl, sneered and continued, "One named Yu Zun, one named Xia Zun, both died in my hands. Who are you?"

The surrounding people were stirred up immediately. A large group of You Xiong Family warriors who were loyal to Gong Sun Meng were enraged. Did Ji Hao say that the leader they followed was murdered? Had his soul perished? If this was true, Gong Sun Meng's soul would not even be able to go into the ancestral temple and accept the power of worship from his people, would he?

Some You Xiong Family warriors with bad tempers growled out in a fury. They wielded their weapons and fiercely stared at Gong Sun Tianming. These You Xiong Family people were not stupid.

Gong Sun Meng had been acting so weird these days, trying so hard to push Gong Sun Tianming up to the throne. This meant, Gong Sun Tianming and the one who killed Gong Sun Meng were together!

"Kill him!"

"Chop him into pieces!"

"Take out his soul and let our Master Maguspriest torture it!"

"Who is behind all this? Who killed our leader? Who? We have to find out, kill him, destroy him! Kill all his families! Wipe out his entire clan!"

You Xiong Family warriors approached bit by bit. They burst in tsunami-like roars. You Xiong Family warriors from the foot of the mountain, Pu Ban warriors brought by Emperor Shun, added with the armies that came with those dragon elders and phoenix elders al became unsettled, with their mounts roaring deeply and resonantly.

Seeing a massive disturbance about to happen, Emperor Shun’s voice resounded across the entire holy land.

"I am Shun. People, Gong Sun Meng, the leader of You Xiong Family was harmed by evil beings, and we are looking for the truth. Please be patient, don’t do anything that might make the ones love you sad, and the ones who hate you delighted! In any circumstances, our humankind cannot surrender to internal strifes!"

The shouts let out by warriors leaders of You Xiong Family, the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, came from all directions.

Emperor Shun was highly influential among human beings. At the moment, something was wrong with Gong Sun Meng, and he could no longer lead his people and solve problems. A word of Emperor Shun calmed and stabilize You Xiong Family warriors.

The girl inside Gong Sun Meng’s body slightly moved and

released a puff of five-colored mist from the lotus between Gong Sun Meng's eyebrows. Then, the girl's figure showed from the mist.

Gong Sun Meng thudded heavily against the ground. Along with a puffing noise, his bones and muscles withered quickly, only leaving his skin on the ground. Except for his skin, all his internal organs, bones, fleshes and spirit blood were devoured by this girl.

"I'm so full!" The girl looked at Ji Hao, narrowed her eyes and said, "Yu Zun, Xia Zun, you killed those two bitches? I should really thank you. Hehe, so now, I, Xie Zun, is the only leader of our kind in this world, right?"

Ji Hao cautiously shielded himself with the Pan Xi divine mirror. Yu Zun, Xia Zun and sky devil under their commands only devoured original souls and occupied human bodies. But this Xie Zun, she even devoured the spirit blood of her target.

Yu Zun and Xia Zun were not as fierce as Xie Zun, not even after combining their powers. Ji Hao dared not to let this Xie Zun approach.

Emperor Shun stood aside, looked at Xie Zun for a while, and finally started talking, "Where are you from? How dare you murder Gong Sun Meng? He was a senior human minister!"

Xie Zun cast a sideways glance at Emperor Shun and laughed, "You? Hehe, eight months ago, you were resting in a bamboo woods. I wanted to take your body back then, but that nasty Xuanyuan sword was guarding you inside your body, so I couldn't approach."

Emperor Shun popped out his eyes while a layer of cold sweat oozed out of his forehead immediately.

Slowly, Xie Zun continued, "Since the highest leader of the humankind is untouchable, I can only find some slightly lower ones. Therefore, this Gong Sun Meng...Hehe, he was lecherous, yet

he thought no one could harm him in You Xiong City. Therefore, he didn’t even care to take a mind-protecting treasure with him. I easily occupied his body."

Emperor Shun and the group of human ministers remained silent. Such a powerful devil, if she got to do whatever she wanted, how could the humankind ever stop her?

Ji Hao smiled coldly and said, "Xie Zun, cut the crap. This Gong Sun Tianming, why do you want him to be the human emperor? What do you want exactly?"

Xie Zun sighed slightly and responded in a cold voice, "Don’t you think controlling the human emperor is interesting?"

Ji Hao nodded, cast a pitiful glance at Gong Sun Tianming, who now had a deathly pale face, and said, "Prince Tianming...You are...hehe!"

Shaking his head, Ji Hao pulled out the nine suns devil-destroying sword, slowly pointing it at Xie Zun.

From all directions, You Xiong Family warriors, dragon warriors and phoenix warriors and Pu Ban warriors all pulled out their weapons, slowly encircling Gong Sun Tianming and Xie Zun up.

No one noticed who let out the first shout, but following that, swords lights and blade lights condensed into a dazzling rain of light, striking down towards Gong Sun Tianming and Xie Zun.

Chapter 917: Killed by Gong Gong

It was a brutal mass brawl.

Xie Zun swiftly moved across the crowd, leaving streams of colorful mist and countless glowing afterimages behind. She laughed with that silvery voice from time to time while sweeping his fingers across the strings of her pipa. As her soft little hands slightly touched the body of those warriors coming at her, a huge stream of spirit blood would be extracted from their body and absorbed by her.

Many warriors touched by Xie Zun's hands had their bodies softened right away, lying on the ground and disabled from moving. They were all strong male warriors, but within a few breaths, they seemed to become at least twenty years older, and around sixty percent of their life-force had been taken away.

Touching over ten warriors in a row, Xie Zun laughed so happily that she even squeezed her eyes into a pair of curved lines. In her eyes, powerful human beings were no more than this.

But soon, those warriors who had ragingly rushed up were shouted back by their elders and leaders in anger.

Led by Emperor Shun, leaders of large human clans stepped up themselves and launched a fierce wave of attacks on Xie Zun. Tens of supreme-level magic treasures were activated, releasing dreadfully strong power vibrations and sweeping across Xie Zun's body like a tsunami.

Xie Zun completely underestimated the powers of Emperor Shun and those clan leaders, especially Emperor Shun. He had been cultivating himself with the secret cultivation method that belonged only to human emperors. Additionally, he was under the protection of the power of his spirit star, the Zi Wei emperor star. Therefore, despite the fact that Emperor Shun was only a Divine Magus, his power could only be described with the words like

‘terrifying’.

Emperor Shun lost the Xuanyuan sword, but he straightened his forefingers and middle fingers as a pair of swords was gently and slowly wielded. Followed by his move, endless sword light dazzled over from all directions, even creating black space cracks in the air. Xie Zun was careless, letting tens of sword attacks launched by Emperor Shun fall on her body. The sword power released by Emperor Shun contained immeasurably great faith power from the humankind, and great power of natural reward from this world. Struck by a sword power like this, Xie Zun howled out shrilly in pain.

Some countless years old powerful spirits, such as the old candle dragon, mingled in the crowd and launched their moves as well. Within a few breaths, the figure of Xie Zun turned dimmer, seeming about to collapse at any time.

Xie Zun was nearly defeated by the great pain. She raised a huge rainbow, reaching to the sky and attempting to run. However, Ji Hao had been waiting aside for a very long time. Finally, he got his chance. The Pan Xi divine mirror released a dim stream of light and rolled in the air. Before Xie Zun could run, she was thrown straight into the small colorful caldron inside Ji Hao’s body by the mirror.

The mirror quaked intensively and released strong waves of power vibration spreading out, that was great enough to make everyone feel hard to breathe.

Smilingly, Ji Hao pointed at the mirror, nodded and said, "Lords, that devil is caught. Now, the question is..."

Ji Hao pointed at Gong Sun Tianming, who was encircled by warriors from all clans, holding the Xuanyuan sword with a pale face. He was trembling in fear yet dared not to leave. The long sword held in his hands released golden streams of light. The strong sword power injected into his body, and soon, the sense of

power came from his body could even be compared with Emperor Shun.

Emperor Shun and the others witnessed Ji Hao ‘kill’ the devil with a supreme treasure, nodded and praised. Then, they turned around and looked at Gong Sun Tianming.

A dragon elder said with a muffled voice, "Kid, give us the ones behind you! No matter who they are, they are the enemies of our dragon-kind for making zombies with the bodies of our ancestors. Hand them out, then I can kindly let you die as a whole piece!"

Another dragon warrior leader gnashed his teeth tight, even causing a creaking noise. He said with a deep and cold voice, "You can remain silent while I chew you and swallow you inch by inch. I haven’t tasted human beings for many years!"

Ji Hao didn’t say anything.

He came to You Xiong City to do nothing but stop Gong Sun Tianming from becoming the only prince of this family, and causing him some troubles to keep him away from the throne.

But this time, the result was way better than his estimation. Gong Sun Meng was actually possessed by the sky devil. By discovering this fact, Ji Hao ruined the plan of Gong Sun Tianming and Priest Corpse, and the others on his side. Ji Hao had already captured Xie Zun, so he needed to say no more.

No matter how, Gong Sun Tianming was actually Zhu Rong Tianming. Because of Zhu Rong, Ji Hao couldn’t kill him personally. Maybe, being chopped into a pile of meat paste by warriors from all clans was the perfect end for Zhu Rong Tianming,

Gong Sun Tianming looked at all those people coming at him with a badly pale face. Gritting his teeth, he said in a low voice, "The Xuanyuan sword admitted my bloodline... I am a direct descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan. I am holding the Xuanyuan

sword, and I’m am the only one who can be the next emperor!"

A You Xiong Family elder stepped out and said in a cold tone, "You colluded with the evil being, murdered our leader. You said you’re a descendant of You Xiong Family... Ask around, see which one of our family members admits that you’re one of us?"

A dragon elder said with a deep voice, "We’ve told you, this kid gained a drop of Emperor Xuanyuan’s bloodline from an unknown source and rebuilt his body with an unknown magic. That’s how he attained Emperor Xuanyuan’s bloodline."

A phoenix elder also said in a cold voice, "Why are you talking so much? Capture him alive, torture him, and use soul-torturing magics on him. He will even tell you how many times he peed on his bed when he was a child. Why are you wasting time on him now?"

Hundreds of powerful beings surrounded Gong Sun Tianming up. Even though he now had an especially strong body, he could never manage to free himself from such an encirclement.

Outside You Xiong City, on a nameless hill, Priest Corpse sat on a hassock, holding a string of dark-golden beads and cursing with a sour face, "Useless things, that devil thing, and so is Tianming the kid. And that Earl Yao Ji Hao, what have we ever done to you. Why do you ruin our plans over and over again?!"

Bo Qiujia stood beside Priest Corpse and carefully asked, "We, should we save him?"

Priest Corpse paused briefly and said in a lower voice, "He has been seen through by those people now. If we save him...How many efforts we would have to spend to cover this? After that, we would need to arrange a new identity for him. How many resources we might waste for that? We’ve spent too, too many efforts on this kid, Tianming."

Bo Qiujia gave a bitter laugh, "We have indeed spent too many

efforts on him. For this exact reason, if we abandon him just like this, wouldn’t we be too wasteful?"

Priest Corpse’s eye corners twitched intensively for a few times, then he murmured with a low voice, "But he is now surrounded by so many people. Unless the two Master Shifu go save him by themselves, you, me, who can save him now?"

A slight sigh came from beside Priest Corpse. Following that, Priest Hua’s voice came slowly, "It seems that this Earl Yao Ji Hao will not join us. Give out my words to all our disciples. The one who kills Ji Hao will be able to learn all top-grade secret magics of our sect."

A bronze, old lamp flew out from the air and airily landed on Priest Corpse’s hand.

"Go save him for the last time. Didn’t we bury a chess piece in Mi Clan of You Xiong Family back then?"

Priest Corpse politely took over the lamp, looking at the beam-sized, cyan-white lamp fire on it, and said reverently, "Yes, Shifu."

Glancing at You Xiong City, Priest Corpse raised the lamp and slightly blew towards it. The cyan-white lamp fire drifted out.

Before the ancestral temple of You Xiong Family, Gong Sun Tianming’s body was abruptly wrapped up by a cyan-white fire. Then, as a breeze blew across, his figure faded away gradually, then disappeared without leaving a trace.

Outside the city, Gong Sun Tianming showed up in front of Priest Corpse, seemed to be ravished with joy. He thudded his knees against the ground and began kowtowing to Priest Corpse.

Before Gong Sun Tianming could thank Priest Corpse, a furious roar came from the sky. Next, a trident descended from the sky along with a raging thunder-flame, striking on Gong Sun Tianming’s back and penetrating his body,

Chapter 918: A Fight Between Fire and The Water

In the Northern Wasteland, the ice field was silent and boundless.

Heading north and moving across countless glaciers and icebergs, one would see a vast, dark-blue ocean.

This was the North Sea, occupying around ninety percent of Northern Wasteland. The base of Gong Gong Family was located in this place. Countless ancient, enormous creatures had been hiding in the North Sea, cultivating themselves severely. Innumerable clans with long histories lived in this frigid place.

In the core area of the North Sea, on a three-hundred-thousand miles wide island, ninety-nine black dragons had their heads raised high, and were surrounded by countless enormous water boas and flood dragons. These fierce creatures were moving around an evil-looking altar that was built from bones of aquatic creatures, while incanting a spell with a low voice.

The air of the north was filled with an endless coldness. The ice spirit, which was generated by the souls of countless creatures which died miserably on this piece of land, and the ancient evil power accumulated deep under the ground of this frigid area were attracted by the altar. They were transformed into a green fire, blazing on the middle of the altar.

Countless Gong Gong Family Maguspriests stood around the altar, expressionlessly wielding their obsidian daggers and slaying large groups of salves right on the spot. Before these slaves died in fear, their twisted souls were drawn into the altar and turned into the nourishment for the green fire.

Kun Peng was wearing a long black robe, standing on top of the altar, hoarsely incanting an evil spell. He swore to the Gods and

ghosts in the world, all creatures which were willing to follow the lead of Gong Gong Family, and those devil Gods from the ancient Chaos, who were long gone but still had traces of souls lingering in the Chaos... He swore that Gong Gong Family would trade for power that was great enough to destroy everything in the world with the souls of countless slaves.

High up in the air were countless, immeasurable, invisible, insensible beings. Once one saw them or sensed them, a dreadful power that could destroy souls would immediately start to gather.

They looked down at Kun Peng. Although they had lost their wisdom and only had the last trace of instinct left, the souls of countless slaves were truly attractive to them.

Streams of evil power descended from the Chaos, merging with the pale green fire on the altar.

"Master, this is the power you need!" Kun Peng chuckled with a weird tone, with a malicious light flashing across his eyeballs.

On this large island, which had countless Northern Wasteland clans living on it, a half of all slaves belonged to these clans were killed, numbering ten-billion at the very least. The sky-devouring evil power traded with their souls and spirit blood all gathered on this green fire.

The pale green fire was quickly changing its color. By the end, this fire turned to the size of a fist, as dense as a sticky glue and as dark as ink.

Kun Peng slightly clapped his hands. Next, all black dragons, water boas and flood dragons around the altar roared out towards the sky. Their roars seemed even to shatter the sky, while this tiny dark fire merged with the sky

Outside You Xiong City, Gong Gong rushed over while roaring resonantly. Then, his trident penetrated Gong Sun Tianming’s chest.

Gong Sun Tianming screamed in pain. He lifted his head, with black and white Chaos divine light dazzling out of his eyeballs and striking on Gong Gong's body, causing a loud cracking noise. Even Gong Gong's defensive watery light screen was shattered by the Chaos divine light that came out from Gong Sun Tianming's eyes.

How powerful was Gong Gong? But as the black and white divine light landed on his body, his long robe was ripped open, and his body was punctured.

Gong Gong shouted in pain. A pure black space crack appeared on the trident while a dense and dark evil fire flew out and drilled into Gong Sun Tianming's body through the trident.

Gong Sun TIanming's body twitched intensively while hazy lotuses drifted out from his body one after another.

Gong Sun Tianming's body was made by Priest Hua; it was nearly indestructible and immortal. The body was made with lotus roots and seeds generated by Priest Hua's true body. Although it was not as strong and powerful as Priest Hua's own body, it was indeed, almost immortal and deathless.

Ordinary weapons could never harm Gong Sun Tianming's body, not even a little bit. Even if his body was harmed by an ordinary weapon, it could recover immediately under his will, and no actual harm would be made. Even if that body were harmed by an extremely powerful natural-crafted treasure, even a world-accompanying spirit treasure, with the protective magic cast by Priest Hua on that body, Gong Sun Tianming's soul would be safe.

Even if Ji Hao activated the powers of the Pan Xi divine mirror and the nine suns devil-destroying sword with his current power, he might be able to injure Gong Sun Tianming severely, but could never kill him! The lotus magic body made by Priest Hua himself was not that easy to be destroyed.

However, Gong Gong had paid a huge price. He sacrificed half of the slaves owned by all Northern Wasteland clans and let Kun Peng

cast an ancient, banned magic to summon the powers of those powerful, mysterious fallen beings from the Chaos, and launched the attack with that evil power.

Gong Sun Tianming's lotus body was penetrated by that evil power. His body started to collapse quickly while his soul was melting speedily.

All of a sudden, Priest Hua burst with a furious roar. That earth-shaking roar came from the sky, yet no one knew where Priest Hua had been hiding.

The evil power Gong Gong gathered with the altar was way too great. It was not only destroying Gong Sun Tianming, but also attacked Priest Hua through the faint connection between Gong Sun Tianming and Priest Hua's true body.

This was a gambling attack launched by Gong Gong with the power of the entire Northern Wasteland. Even Priest Hua couldn't cope with it so easily. So how could he manage to save Gong Sun Tianming at the same time?

The Xuanyuan sword vibrated intensively and burst with a golden sword light, seeming to attack Gong Gong.

But Gong Gong gave a loud, resonant shout in a harsh tone, "Xuanyuan sword spirit, you take a close look at this guy. Is he your owner?"

The sword light released from Xuanyuan sword dimmed down instantly, then the sword gave a sad scream and suddenly transformed into a streak of light. It dazzled up into the sky and flew back into You Xiong City, back to Emperor Shun. The scream given by the sword was filled with sadness and loneliness. Without a doubt, it missed Emperor Xuanyuan so much.

After shouting the Xuanyuan sword away, Gong Gong gripped the trident with both hands and violently twisted it.

A shrill howl was generated. Gong Sun Tianming's lotus body

exploded while his soul perished within a dazzling light.

Another furious roar came from the sky. Next, the sky above You Xiong City turned glowing-red. Zhu Rong dove down from a raging sky flame, wearing a long red cloak. Each hand of his was holding a fire dragon sword, fiercely hacking down towards Gong Gong.

"Gong Gong, you killed my son, fine... But you even perished his true spirit! Are you challenging the Zhu Rong Family?"

Gong Gong roared out, straightened the trident and rushed up. "Zhu Rong!" growled Gong Gong, "You have so many children, yet I had one son, one only!

"My son was murdered by this little bastard of yours, murdered by him! I want you to pay for that with your own life!"

Clang! Followed by a thunderous bang, the trident clashed loudly against the pair of fire dragon swords. You Xiong City quaked, then a massive fire roared over from the south, while an overwhelming watery mist swooshed up from the north. Fire power and water power bumped thunderously against each other, and in the following moment, a small half of the city was blown into pieces in the raging flame and watery mist.

Chapter 919: Mountain Collapsing

"Shut the gates, let them fight!"

Before the ancestral temple, the few elders with the highest positions growled out loud.

Gong Sun Meng was possessed by an unknown devil, nearly making a kid with a weird background the future leader of the family. This almost caused inner strifes in the family. But before this ended, Zhu Rong and Gong Gong had started a massive fight, which was another giant whirlpool.

You Xiong Family didn't want to get involved in things like this, neither could they at this juncture.

Although a small half of You Xiong City was blown up, fortunately, the situation had been stressful in the city these days. Therefore, relatively weaker civilians were sent out of the city long ago. Many buildings were damaged, but the casualties were not too great.

If Zhu Rong and Gong Gong wanted to fight in here, then they could just let them fight, even till death.

In front of the gate of the ancestral temple, eye-piercing light streams rose into the sky. Thirty-six thousand enormous totem columns thunderously rose from the earth, with faintly visible, gigantic silhouettes of bears on top of each column. These bears had their mouths widely opened, sending out strong earth power from all directions.

Tremendous streams of earth power were sent into the city. On the flat area around the city immense spell symbols lightened up one after another.

The ground had been quaking slightly while the surrounding mountains seemed to rise and fall. Soon, an incredibly large wall surrounded the entire city up.

An elderly You Xiong Family Maguspriest flew into the sky, stood on top of the magic formation, and growling harshly to Zhu Rong and Gong Gong, "This is You Xiong City, the territory of You Xiong Family. If you insist on fighting a deathly fight, go further. You Xiong Family has no intent to develop hatred with you two powerful Gods."

This was rather straightforward. You Xiong Family had no intent to develop hared with these two powerful Gods. Yet, if these two Gods showed an unappreciative attitude, the hatred would be planted indeed. You Xiong Family had great powers, rich resources, and solid foundations. Their people didn't need to show any fear to Gong Gong and Zhu Rong.

Gong Gong shouted out loudly. His body had already transformed into a dense dark cloud. In the rolling cloud, a water-tank-sized head was faintly visible. Two blue streams of watery light spurted from his pair of eye. Wherever that light reached, all mountains were turned into flooding water.

Zhu Rong also growled out in a fury. His body had transformed into a sphere of flame, with only a blazing head floating in the fire. Fire roared out from his eyes, nose, ears, and mouth. His eyes shone with a colorful fiery light, and wherever he scanned across with those eyes, even the water was set ablaze.

A dense dark cloud and a sphere of fiery light left hundreds of miles long, dazzling light streams in the air. They clashed fiercely against each other, seeming like two shooting stars bumping into each other. They ceaselessly caused sky-shaking booms, even thousands of times louder than thunder.

They struck into each other over and over again and sent themselves flying away. Then, they rushed back even faster and bumped into each other again.

Following the muffled sound, ice crystals and lava streams began falling from where they clashed. Fire power and water power

conflicted in the air, causing terrifying explosions, and even made the sky and earth shake.

Hearing the elderly Maguspriest from You Xiong Family, Gong Gong shouted out loud in anger. He pointed at the city and yelled, "You Xiong Family? Big deal? How dare you talk to me like that? When I have the time, I will turn all your people into floating corpses!"

The faces of all You Xiong Family elders turned incredibly dark on hearing Gong Gong. What Gong Gong Said was too impolite. Did he think that You Xiong Family would be afraid of him?

Some warriors with bad tempers even leaped straight up into the sky, seeming to be ready to fight Gong Gong and see who was truly more powerful. But You Xiong Family elders immediately burst with a harsh series of shouts and stopped these warriors, making them feel too ashamed to even raise their heads.

No matter how ugly were Gong Gong's words, the hatred was between Gong Gong and Zhu Rong, how could You Xiong Family be part of it?

The sky and the ground were both turned chaotic. Fire and water conflicted intensively and generated a massive watery mist that covered the sky. Zhu Rong shouted out, "Old water monster, don't harm the foundation of You Xiong Family. Follow me up, let's fight to death!"

Gong Gong laughed with a creepy evil voice and said, "Little fire thing, is You Xiong Family worth for you to flatter? I am harming their foundation right now, so what? What can they do to me? What can they do to my billions of Northern Wasteland elites?!"

Zhu Rong snorted coldly, then a stream of fiery light rose into the higher sky and merged into the cloud, disappearing without leaving a trace within a blink of an eye.

Gong Gong laughed loudly and wildly, transformed into a black

stream of mist and swooshed up into the air. While chasing Zhu Rong, he barfed and shouted with unbearable insolence.

Ji Hao raised his head, looking at the sky in a daze. A while later, he murmured, "Zhu Rong came so fast. It seems that he had left something in Zhu Rong Tianming's soul too..." Clicking his tongue, he continued, "Zhu Rong Tianming was Zhu Rong's son after all. He was killed, so Zhu Rong had to come to take revenge without a doubt!"

A sword scream could then be heard. Following that, Emperor Shun released a golden beam of light while swishing into the sky. The Xuanyuan sword transformed into an enormous golden dragon, following closely behind Emperor Shun.

Those human ministers followed Emperor Shun up one after another excitedly.

Ji Hao clearly saw that these human ministers were all grinning delightfully, considering the intense fight between Zhu Rong and Gong Gong as a nice large show for entertainment. Some even started discussing the result of the fight. A few clan leaders even shook hands and set huge bets.

Ji Hao shook his head helplessly. It seemed that these human ministers didn't take the fight between the water and fire Gods seriously at all.

Gong Gong Family and Zhu Rong Family had been fighting each other for countless years, for the rights from the alliance of human clans. They had started countless fights already, and even massive wars had happened between these two families for over a hundred times.

Fights like this happened too often. Surely, these human ministers would not take it seriously.

"But this time might be different!" Ji Hao showed his teeth. Then, the golden bridge released a dark golden divine light and brought

him up into the sky, rushing into the clouds before the others.

If Ji Hao guessed right, what would happen next would be...

Once he rushed out of the layer of the void gale of Midland and arrived in the starry void, a loud howl drilled into his ears. Gong Gong had transformed back into the human body, falling quickly down with blood gushing out of all over his body.

"Defeated already?" Ji Hao yelled in shock.

Zhu Rong stood in the air, seemed to be stunned as well. With confusion, he looked at the pair of swords held in his hands and said, "Did I defeat this old bastard so quickly? Have I improved so much in these years? Or has this old bastard been wasting his time all these years?"

Gong Gong was shouting with a hoarse voice, with froth in his mouth. No one knew what he was saying.

All of a sudden, Gong Gong shivered, then he gave a shrilly loud howl. Next, followed by a millions of miles long streams of watery light, he heavily bumped towards Sky Pillar, also known as Buzhou Mountain, located in the middle of Midland.

An indescribable loud bang resounded across the entire Pan Gu world. Even people in the four wastelands heard it clearly.

A giant hole was opened up on the mountainside of Buzhou Mountain. Then the upper side of the mountain quaked and slanted downwards.

"Crap!" Looking at the collapsing Sky Pillar, Emperor Shun growled in shock.

Chapter 920: Hit the Mountain

How tall was the Sky Pillar?

This was a boring question, and no one had asked it before. Anyway, everyone knew that if one went straight up the Sky Pillar, through hundreds of layers of clouds and fierce airflows, one could eventually arrive in the heaven.

However, everyone also knew that Sky Pillar was transformed from a part of the spine of Saint Pan Gu. It was immeasurably tall, and no end of it could be seen.

Half a Sky Pillar collapsed and fell. From a long distance away, Ji Hao saw a brightly glowing, incredibly huge and immeasurably tall mountain raise splendid rosy clouds and raging, world-destroying fire while roaring down towards Pu Ban City.

Looking from a great distance, one could realize that if one let this mountain fall naturally, it would smash right on Pu Ban City.

Emperor Shun's eyes were widely opened in a soul-deep alarm as he hoarsely growled, "Stop it! Stop it! Stop it!!"

Following that resonant growl, Emperor Shun led tens of his trustable ministers to fly swiftly forward, attempting to stop the falling Sky Pillar. However, they were still thousands of miles away from the mountain. But, just the hurricane raised by the falling mountain still struck heavily on their bodies. Even with Emperor Shun's power, even with the Xuanyuan sword held in his hand and the other few secret defensive supreme treasures that belonged only to the human Emperor, Emperor Shun was forced to vomit blood, and couldn't move another inch towards Sky Pillar.

"No!" Emperor Shun and the group of human ministers looked at the falling mountain, stunned in despair.

They were not afraid of death, but hundreds of millions of human beings lived in Pu Ban City. If this broken Sky Pillar truly

smashes down, countless elites of human beings would be destroyed.

"Gong Gong, damn you, damn you!" Emperor Shun and the group of human ministers roared out in a fury. Their eyes had even turned red.

Ji Hao shouted out while activating the Pan Xi divine mirror. A dim stream of divine light dazzled towards the falling Sky Pillar. The divine light reached to the Sky Pillar, broke layers of dense clouds and fierce airflows. A terrifying pressure came straight to Ji Hao’s head. Meanwhile, the mirror gave a shrill scream, then transformed into a dim light stream, drilling back into Ji Hao’s body.

Ji Hao sent out the Pan Xi divine mirror to stop the falling mountain, and the mirror managed to do it for one ten-thousandth of a second> After that, a destructive pressure struck into Ji Hao’s body through the mirror and shattered every single piece of Ji Hao’s bones, inch by inch. His internal organs were nearly turned into a pot of meat paste.

While vomiting blood, Ji Hao trembled in the air and could no longer steady his own body. As a consequence, he fell from the sky like a shooting star.

Helplessly looking at the falling Sky Pillar surrounded by surging rosy clouds and airflows, Ji Hao screamed with a hoarse voice as loud as he could, "Emperor Shun, people, move away! We can’t stop it! Can’t stop it! Pu Ban City! Damn it! Gong Gong! You did it on purpose! You did it on purpose!"

Gong Gong was much older than Zhu Rong. He served as the Water God for a much longer period of time than the term of service of Zhu Rong as the Fire God. Gong Gong could never be less powerful than Zhu Rong, but how could he be defeated by Zhu Rong so thoroughly just in a few breaths after he and Zhu Rong rushed into the higher sky?

Gong Gong wasn’t that easy to be defeated. He pretended to be defeated, pretended to be so angry and ashamed, then broke the Sky Pillar on purpose!

What shocked Ji Hao so much was that he was injured so severely by simply trying to stop the falling Sky Pillar> But Gong Gong, how could he possibly break Sky Pillar with his head? Sky Pillar was so sturdy, so no living creature should be able to break it!

"Such a smart guy! He activated the Heaven and Earth great formation in the heaven and broke Buzhou Mountain!"

The mysterious man shouted out in a great rage in Ji Hao’s spiritual space. "He has brought the Heaven and Earth great formation in the heaven under his control. Eith the power of the heaven, he broke Buzhou Mountain! Gong Gong, damn you!"

Ji Hao immediately lifted his head and saw that in the highest area he could see was a faintly visible five-colored mist. From the mist, an extremely dreadful pressure descended. The sense of power came from the mist was rather familiar to Ji Hao, because he had sensed the same kind of power from the Heaven and Earth great formation based on Yao Mountain City.

Had Gong Gong controlled the heaven?!

Did he break Buzhou Mountain with the original version of Heaven and Earth great formation in heaven?

Buzhou Mountain was damaged seriously already. Gong Gong only slightly bumped into it, and just like the last straw that broke the camel’s back, he broke the mountain entirely!

But why did he do it? What did he do it for?

"Buzhou Mountain is the core of the natural defense of Pan Gu world, the center of all natural meridians of Pan Gu world. Buzhou Mountain is broken, so the natural defense of Pan Gu world will instantly decrease by ninety percent!" The mysterious man growled almost hysterically, "The reason why those top-grade non-

humankind beings could not intrude Pan Gu world was nothing else but the Buzhou Mountain which had been supporting the natural defense of the whole Pan Gu world. Buzhou Mountain is broken..."

The mysterious man didn't finish his speech, yet Ji Hao was already soaked in cold sweat.

Yu Clan, Jia Clan, Xiu Clan, these non-humankind beings were capable of conquering countless worlds. Without a doubt, they surely had countless top-grade powerful ones among their people. But so many years had passed, yet these non-humankind beings still didn't manage to conquer the whole Pan Gu world.

Was it because of the powerfulness of Spirit Wa, Dong Gong, Ximu and the other protectors of this world?

Or it was because of the natural defense of Pan Gu world? Did the natural defense of the world disable those top-grade non-humankind beings from coming to Pan Gu world through portals?

Now, Buzhou Mountain was broken, and the natural defense of Pan Gu world was weakened by ninety percent. In all probability, those top-grade powerful non-humankind beings could now come to Pan Gu world by themselves. Then, could Spirit Wa, Dong Gong, Ximu and the other world protectors still rival those enemies?

Gong Gong did such a thing. He betrayed the entire Pan Gu world.

"Gong Gong, damn you!" Ji Hao burst with a hoarse shout in a fury.

"Stop Buzhou Mountain! Even if we die! Stop it!" Emperor Shun raised the Xuanyuan sword, bumping straight towards the falling mountain while vomiting blood. "Pu Ban is not only a city, but the civilization of humankind also started in here, grew in here and spread from here. We can die, but Pu Ban cannot!"

Ji Hao thought of the Magi Palace in Pu Ban City, thought of all

those apprentices in the Magi Palace who came from all four wastelands. He also thought of those Magi guided by Si Wen Ming and Emperor Shun with immeasurable efforts, those Senior Magi who mastered the art of magic formation, spell symbol, magic medicine, tool-making!

Emperor Shun was right, Pu Ban was where the human civilization raised from, bit by bit, since the ancient era. If Pu Ban City were destroyed, over eighty-percent of the human civilization would be destroyed as well. If the entire humankind declined to the level of the old Fire Crow Clan, the humankind would be doomed.

"Damn it!" Ji Hao growled out deeply while forcibly activated the Pan Xi divine mirror and released a divine light to cover his whole body. Then, he gripped the nine suns spear with his left hand, the sword in his right hand and boosted up the power of the stainless cloak as much as he could. Then, he activated the sun power in the surrounding area for tens of thousands of miles with the immemorial sun streamer. Afterward, he transformed into a golden flame, bumping towards the falling mountain as well.

One after another, the group of human leaders silently burned their spirit stars and released overwhelming waves of power vibrations. Some of them had fiery lights coiling around their bodies, some had thunderbolts sizzling in their hands, while some had hazy mountains floating upon their heads.

These were senior human ministers, elders, and leaders from top-grade human clans. But at the moment, they cursed with the worst language they knew with their necks straightened while bumping towards the falling half of Buzhou Mountain.

Chapter 921: Heroes

A dense purple cloud rose from Emperor Shun's head. Eighty-one spirit inner stars rose within the mist, and every single one of them shone even brighter than true stars in the sky while releasing an ocean-like, strong power vibration.

Ji Hao turned around and took a glance at Emperor Shun. Instantly, his pupils shrunk to the size of a needle point.

What cultivation method did Emperor Shun use?

The power contained in each of his inner spirit stars was hundreds of times greater than the power contained in each inner spirit star of Ji Hao. Therefore, even though Emperor Shun only had eighty-one inner spirit stars, he was scarily powerful.

Judging from such a great power, it was not hard to imagine exactly how strong Emperor Shun's physical body was. Among human Divine Magi, not too many were able to rival Emperor Shun.

"Hold on!"

Emperor Shun gave a deep yet resonant growl while the Xuanyuan sword gave a high-pitched scream in his hand. The long golden sword was pointed at the sky. The rosy clouds and fierce airflows caused by the fallen mountain struck on the Xuanyuan sword violently. Emperor Shun quivered instantly, then bone-cracking noise could be heard from his body, as quick as the sound of popping corns. The sword was pressured into a curve like a crescent, with countless golden light streams flowing on its edge. A golden light spot lit up on the sword tip and turned brighter and brighter. It eventually grew as shiny as a golden sun floating in the sky, destroying waves of fierce airflows and rolling clouds raised by the falling mountain.

"Hold on!"

Hao Tao and Xie Zhi bumped over. A black cloud had been roaring above Hao Tao's head, within which, eighty-one enormous inner spirit stars had been sparkling and hovering. Followed by a thunderous boom, tens of flakes of rosy clouds smashed on Hao Tao's body along with a sharp gust of wind. A half of Hao Tao's body was dented, while his face turned badly pale and a stream of blood spurted out from his mouth to tens of meters away.

Xie Zhi lowered his head and zipped swiftly over, with his horn facing the falling mountain. When he was thousands of miles away from the mountain, an unstoppably strong airflow raised by the falling mountain slapped on his head. Xie Zhi screamed in pain while his horn was crushed, along with half of his skull. Blood was squeezed out of his mouth in streams.

"Hold on, brothers!"

The current leader of Lie Mountain Family shouted towards the sky while spreading his arms and slapping in the air.

The air was vibrated while large flakes of iron-board-like rosy clouds struck on his arms and body along with a fierce gale. Lie Mountain Family leader's eyeballs popped out of his eye sockets. Because of the great pressure that landed on him, those eyeballs exploded right away, while tens of sharp streams of blood ejected out of his body.

"Hang on! People! Don't humiliate our ancestors!"

The current leader of Huaxu Family rushed up with a few elders, with their teeth gnashed tightly. The mountain was falling overwhelmingly, as if the sky was falling. Under this situation, all fighting skills were useless. They boosted up their powers while flying straight up towards the falling mountain, like flying moth darting into a fire.

Muffled bone-cracking noises could be heard without an end. Huaxu Family leader howled in pain as all muscles on his arms were blown up. Then his chest blasted out, exposing his squirming

internal organs.

The few Huaxu Family elders growled out together. Blood splashed everywhere from their bodies. Bright streams of light flew through their bones. Those bones broke, then healed themselves, then broke again. They cursed loudly and wildly while bumping against the falling Buzhou Mountain, over and over again.

"If we die, we die good! Haha!"

A few elders from Kuafu Family and Longbo Country expanded their bodies as much as they could. Kuafu Family elders were around five-thousand-meters tall, looking like giants standing on the ground with the heads reaching to the heaven. They wielded their weapons, madly and hacked and smashed on the falling Buzhou Mountain. Their weapons shattered and their arms broke. Their blood shed like rain. They gritted their teeth and bumped straight into the roaring rosy clouds in the sky.

Longbo Country elders shouted and yelled. They breathed deeply and quickly, and within a blink of an eye, they all expanded to tens of thousands of meters tall, as enormous as the ancient Longbo Country people.

They raised their tremendous arms and slapped on those rolling rosy clouds and swooshing fierce airflows that had been descending from the sky.

They were so gigantic, hence the pressure they had been withstanding was largely greater than any of the others. Ji Hao witnessed that those blade-like, dark fierce airflows screamed across their bodies and brought large pieces of muscles away.

Following a ceaseless puffing noise, Longbo Country elders were even turned into bloody skeletons within a blink of an eye by the strong airflows caused by the falling mountain.

Fortunately, Longbo Country people had nearly inexhaustible

life-force and rich spirit blood. While the fierce airflow was slicing their skins and muscles off, new skin and muscles had been growling on their bodies without an end. The airflows brushed against their bodies and sent up large puffs of fire sparkles. The few Longbo Country elders roared in pain, but still endured this brutal torture.

Clan leaders and elders, who were all influential and powerful with high positions, rushed up while howling and shouting, one after another.

Normally, they had true powers seized in their hands. Wherever they went, countless people would revere them.

Facing the falling Buzhou Mountain, they rushed up the first.

No fear, no one was frightened. No one hesitated, not even for a single second.

This wasn't a beautiful era. This was a damned, chaotic era. Yet, this was also a marvelous era. For most of the leaders, they shone in their own ways and somehow, they could always make your blood boil!

As the leaders from the human clans, one could call them 'heroes'!

The Buzhou Mountain kept falling. The enormous mountain had almost covered the entire sky. The air was squeezed by the speedily falling mountain and turned into nearly tangible airstreams. A strong fraction was generated between the mountain and the air. On the mountain, ancient trees, magic herbs, and other plants were all starting to burn under the effect of friction, turning into a five-colored mist that surrounded the falling mountain.

Countless divine creatures living on the mountain fell down. They flew up desperately, screamed and tried their best to run. Yet, the rapidly flowing airstreams from all directions were like countless sharp blades that easily stirred them into pieces.

"Fight with your lives!"

Ji Hao rose as a dazzling golden light and bumped into an airstream stirred up by the falling mountain.

When the destructive pressure landed on his head, Ji Hao's bones and muscles, which had just recovered from the last injury, were shattered once again. Blood surged out from his body while the soul-piercing pain even vibrated his seed of Dao of sun.

The pain even made him want to die. As loud as he could, Ji Hao yelled with all of his power, "Gong Gong, f*** you! F*** you! F*** you!"

Emperor Shun was vomiting blood. He gave a bitter grin and remained silent. Hao Tao and all the other human ministers had now been shedding blood, yet all laughed out wildly, shouting what Ji Hao had just said, which was probably the worst language they had ever heard. The flood-like sound wave even swept across half of Midland.

Everyone now understood that today, among everyone on the scene, including Ji Hao, as long as one survived, Gong Gong would end up as a deadly enemy of the entire humankind!

A fiery light dazzled down. Zhu Rong bumped into Buzhou Mountain as well while loudly cursing Gong Gong.

Buzz! Half of Zhu Rong's body was crushed while a hundreds of meters thick layer of rosy cloud was dispelled by him.

From down below, bright light streams rose one after another. All warriors in You Xiong Family acted. Whichever clan they came from, as long as they were able to fly into the higher sky, every single one of them rushed up without the fear of death. They bumped into Buzhou Mountain, seeming ready to give their lives away.

Blood fell like a heavy rain, dripping towards the earth!

Chapter 922: Guard

Liang Zhu, in a mansion outside the city.

Tens of human girls wearing veils had been singing and inducing, leering at Dishi Cha, who sat in a cluster of flowers, drinking by himself.

Dishi Cha raised his head, looking at the direction of Sky Pillar.

When the sky-shaking bang came, he saw dense rosy clouds pushed out by fierce airflows, and large puffs of fire sparkles rising because of the friction of the air. Dishi Cha slapped on his lap excitedly and growled, ‘Done!’.

The sky was darkened, while surrounding natural powers were turned into a mess. Dishi Cha was a powerful one, yet even he felt it hard to breathe, as if he was soaked in water. The disordered natural powers clashed against each other, causing tiny electric bolts in the air.

Gusts of wind blew over from all directions, bumping into each other and raising different sized columns of air streams. Dishi Cha dropped the wine pot and darted straight into the sky, followed by a blood-red light stream.

From a long distance, Dishi Cha still saw that collapsing Sky Pillar. Buzhou Mountain stood in the core area of Midland. Normally, no one ever noticed its existence. Even in the best weather days, ordinary people couldn’t easily see the mountain, unless they walked to its foot.

However, at the moment, Buzhou Mountain was broken by Gong Gong, and a half of it fell down. The natural magic screen around the mountain was destroyed, after which, any living creature in Midland that had eyes, could see an enormous mountain surrounded by dense smoke and blazing fire, and a half of it smashing down.

With Dishi Cha’s great eye power, he even saw countless tiny sparks flying towards Buzhou Mountain, over and over again.

"Stupid barbarians, this is the core of your world. How could you ever stop it with your fragile bodies and slight powers?"

Dishi Cha murmured to himself with a taunting tone, "But it’s good though. The ones taking the lead to rush up under such circumstances must be those leaders among those barbarians, who like to call themselves ‘heroes’, right? You just die, die, the more of you died, the easier will I conquer you."

He chuckled, then narrowed his eyes and laughed, "When I conquer this world, your faith will be given to that greedy old man, and I, only need your bodies. Barbarians, slaves, you will be my best slaves!"

Lowering his head and looking at those human girls in the yard who were huddled together, shivering in fear, he showed a twisted grin.

"Hmm, slaves with such a high quality will be worth a lot. Beautiful women will be the best toys, while those strong men, they will be qualified warriors. They will fight battles for us. They are much, much better than those useless frog-like things.

Above You Xiong City, Ji Hao had been growling while the Pan Xi divine mirror had its light dimmed down, and both the nine suns spear and nine suns devil-destroying sword let out shrill screams, as they couldn’t bear the heavy pressure anymore.

Buzhou Mountain was the core of Pan Gu world. It was transformed from the spine of Saint Pan Gu. Fighting against Buzhou Mountain equaled to fighting against the crushing natural powers of a big half of this world.

Ji Hao’s internal power and power of Dao were almost consumed up, his spirit blood was nearly drained, while his bones were all broken. Tens of long and deep slashes were on his body, that

exposed his golden, transparent bones.

The seed of Dao of sun was now dim and lusterless. As waves of destructive pressure struck down, the seed of Dao was almost crushed.

Emperor Shun was exhausted.

Hao Tao had fainted.

All clan leaders of elders were severely injured, and couldn't even struggle back up from the ground. Zhu Rong had a big half of his body destroyed, only leaving a dim sphere of fiery light, floating in the sky.

Warriors from all clans fearlessly rushed up towards the falling mountain. Clouds of blood-mist blasted in the air one after another. Blood sprayed down like rain. Many relatively weaker Magus Kings had their bodies struck into pieces right on the spot, while those powerful Divine Magi were wounded seriously and fell back to the ground.

But none of them drew back, none of them were frightened. Everyone was cursing Gong Gong loudly while gnashing their teeth and bumping towards the mountain with the last bit of their powers.

The rain of blood grew heavier and heavier, dying the You Xiong City red.

On the blood-red land, You Xiong Family Maguspriest began singing a sad song, begging the Gods in the world and the souls of all human beings' ancestors for mercy.

Bu Zhou Mountain collapsed. The natural defense of this world was destroyed. Countless warriors risked their lives, flew up to thud against the falling mountain. But they could only, slightly slow the falling mountain down.

If no one came to save the day, You Xiong City would be crushed by the mountain, and Pu Ban City, the capital of the alliance of

human clans, would be destroyed too.

Some Maguspriest raised blade jade daggers and deeply cut into their own chests. They offered all powerful yet mysterious beings in the world their own blood and flesh, their lives and souls, to try to save the humankind from this disaster.

A tremendous bolt of lightning tore the sky apart. The dark sky was suddenly split into two, but that lightning bolt.

From the crack of the sky, an enormous snake body flashed across.Then, countless bolts of thunder struck down like a storm. Meanwhile, seven-colored, warm clouds gathered from all directions. Next, a beautiful silhouette showed up in the sky.

That was Spirit Wa, she had the upper body of a beautiful, young girl, and the lower body in the form of a splendidly glowing snake tail. She trod on a purple cloud, with her long hair hanging loosely on her back, hands holding a long red ribbon. She glanced at the falling Buzhou Mountain. Her stunningly beautiful face was cold, with the corners of her eyes twitching ceaselessly. A fierce aura of killing instantly filled the world up, seeming to freeze the soul of everyone who saw her.

"Gong Gong...Good, Good, Good, you are indeed daring enough!" A long red stream of light rose from Spirit Wa’s hand. Followed by a swishing noise, the red light stream took thousands of circles around the falling mountain. Then, she coiled the ends of the ribbons on her pair of hands and pulled up fiercely. Instantly, a muffled, earth-shaking series of thunder came from the sky.

The purple cloud that Spirit Wa trod on shattered immediately, while her body sank straight down. The red ribbon broke Spirit Wa’s arms, letting drops of seven-colored blood drip down from the wounds.

Spirit Wa’s beautiful face turned deathly pale, with blood flowing out from her nose, eyes, mouth, and ears.

"Spirit Wa, I’m here!"

From a great distance, an enormous white crane flew swiftly over. Dong Gong was standing on the crane’s back, wearing a straw raincoat, and with a wrinkled, darkened face. He was holding a four-inch-long bronze ruler. From far away, he reached his hands out, palms facing the falling mountain.

Mist and clouds coiled and condensed in midair and transformed into a pair of giant hands, that gently rose against the falling mountain.

Another series of thunder burst. Meanwhile, Dong Gong’s wrinkled face immediately turned pale, and blood gushed straight out from his nose and ears. He swayed on the crane’ back. Then the crane screamed out in pain and vomited a huge stream of blood.

"Old man, you’re so old. Why are you still pushing yourself?"

Followed by that deep shout, Ximu dashed over. She was wearing a luxurious long dress, yet the power vibration from her was as fierce and violent as a giant Chaos beast. She roared in a deep rumbling voice, then bumped straight into the mountain, as violent as those human warriors.

Along with the third series of thunder, Ximu gave a muffled moan, then she fell to the ground, as speedily as a shooting star.

Spirit Wa, Dong Gong and Ximu stopped Buzhou Mountain from falling by joining hands, and slowly pulled the mountain back up by a little bit.

Chapter 923: Join Hands

The void was quiet, with no other sound but the roars of the fierce gale.

Exhaustedly, Emperor Shun, Ji Hao and everyone else had been looking at the broken Buzhou Mountain, which was slanted, remaining motionless in the air. The falling half of Buzhou Mountain was only temperately stopped from falling by Spirit Wa, Dong Gong, Ximu joining hands. If any of them failed to bear the pressure, the mountain could began falling once again at any time.

Quickly clearing up his torn clothes, Emperor Shun solemnly bowed towards Spirit Wa, Dong Gong, and Ximu

A multicolored stream of light flashed across Spirit Wa's body as she gave a deep shout, "Save it, try to find a solution. How should we deal this half piece of rock? Pan Gu, good, indeed amazing. You left a spine in this world, but together, the three of us still can't deal with it?"

Spirit Wa sounded not pleasant at all. Drops of blood flowed down along her snow-white face. Apparently, she wasn't in a good mood at all.

Dong Gong had his pair of hands raised in the air. The millions of miles in radius pair of cloud and misty hands in the sky barely supported the broken mountain. But Dong Gong had been shaking all the time with sweat oozing out of his skin. He couldn't even talk by now.

Ximu, who bumped herself away earlier, cast a raging growl while darting straight back up, as fierce as a mad devil. Her body was glowing with a beautiful light, while the hazy silhouette of a scary-looking unknown creature emerged above her head. It expanded to tens of thousands of meters, violently waved its claw and pushed against the falling mountain.

The fierce airflows in the higher sky stopped, while those rosy clouds dissipated. As Ximu joined in, the looks of both Dong Gong and Spirit Wa seemed a lot better than before.

However, how heavy was the Buzhou Mountain? All three of them had been shaking slightly. Obviously, they could only, temporarily stop this mountain from falling. But if the situation lasted too long, and if their powers were consumed up, they wouldn't be able to do anything to this falling mountain either.

Emperor Shun looked at the broken enormous Sky Pillar miserably. Spirit Wa told him to find a solution, but what solution could he possibly come up with?

Abruptly, a metal gate, which was purely dark and decorated with the portraits of countless evil ghosts, creaked open in the sky. From the gate, a dense cloud of death power surged out. From within, Netherworld Priest drifted out. He was wearing a long black robe, with the black and white pair of swords held in his arms.

Seeing such a horrible scene, Netherworld Priest showed no sign of worry. On the contrary, he seemed to even be quite happy. "Emperor Shun, this time, I will help you. But in the future, if you have more brave warriors dying in battles, you will persuade the souls of ten-million of them to join me!"

Spirit Wa gave a cold snort, then cast an unpleasant glance at Netherworld Priest.

Netherworld Priest slightly quivered. He raised his head, looked at Sprite Wa, then laughed with a slight trace of cautiousness, "Spirit Wa, Spirit Wa, I know you value the souls of these human beings, you don't want those souls to join me and leave the natural transmigration. But this is my Dao! We have to be reasonable. I can't fight for the humankind with nothing in return, can I?"

Spirit Wa's look slightly changed, then she closed her eyes.

Netherworld Priest smiled, then a black stream of mist rose from his head. Followed by a thunderous roar, eight-hundred enormous silhouettes darted out from the black mist. A strong power vibration swept across the whole area. Facing the blowing wind, these hundreds of meter tall silhouettes began expanding speedily.

Ji Hao took a closer look and found that these silhouettes released by Netherworld Priest, were nothing else but flying zombies made from the bodies of Longbo Country people.

These Longbo zombies were thousands of meter tall, with their bodies thickly covered in black dragon scales and dragon horns on the foreheads. The sense of power that came from these Longbo zombies was similar to both the humankind and the dragon-kind, between life and death, containing immeasurably great evil power.

As these zombies widely opened their mouths, sparkling black mist puffed out from and flowed back into these eight-hundred zombies' months. From their bodies, muffled sounds of waves could be heard without an end, making people unable to help but guess exactly how great the power was which had been surging inside their bodies.

The rumbling noise never ended. The scales on the backs of these enormous zombies were opened, then hundreds of meters long wings grew out from under those scales. They flapped their wings and flew straight up, raising their arms to support the mountain.

Along with that rumbling noise, the slanting mountain began slowly rising back up. Strong friction was generated between the fractured surfaces of the mountain, as a sky-burning fire was raised along with the thunderbolts.

Netherworld Priest quickly incanted a spell. Meanwhile, large clouds of black mist puffed out of his body. Streams of black mist were swallowed by those enormous zombies, stimulating them greatly. It made them roar towards the sky and made their muscles swell and harden.

Now, Netherworld Priest had also joined in. Together, these four powerful beings should be able to right the slanting half of Buzhou Mountain, and in the future, with some efforts, perhaps, human beings would heal the broken mountain.

However, higher in the sky, a seven-colored, warm stream of mist flashed across. Then, along with dreadfully loud thunders, hundreds of water-tank-sized, colorful divine thunderbolts struck down. Every thunderbolt landed on Netherworld Priest.

Netherworld Priest had squeezed the last bit of his power out to control the eight-hundred enormous flying zombie to correct Buzhou Mountain. He didn't even leave a slight strand of power to defend himself. Hundreds of destructive divine thunders struck down, immediately making the Netherworld Priest scream in pain. Large waves of ripples were stirred up from the black robes he wore as countless thunderbolts drilled into his body, through the robe.

Netherworld Priest was pursuing the Dao of netherworld. His power was negative, and the divine thunder that came from the Heaven and Earth great formation in the heaven could largely suppress his power.

Normally, Netherworld Priest could perfectly fend himself with his great powers, and no harm could be done to him, not even if the Heaven and Earth great formation were fully activated. But just now, his power was all released, and his body was empty. Hundreds of divine thunderbolts struck on his body simultaneously and created countless holes in his body, almost destroying his true spirit.

"The heaven!" shouted Netherworld Priest, "Who's controlling the heaven?!"

A huge stream of blood was squeezed out of his mouth, then the black mist that rose from his body turned lighter. The eight-hundred giant zombies trembled in the sky, then their arms were

crushed by the incredibly heavy mountain, inch by inch. Dragon scales fell off from the arms of these zombies while large clouds of black mist puffed out of those arms.

Netherworld Priest gave a muffled hum, then he opened his mouth and let out another mouthful of dark blood. His face turned paler as he fell down for thousands of meters.Then, with a solid effort, he finally stabilized the cloud he trod on.

The looks of Dong Gong, Spirit Wa, Ximu and Emperor Shun all changed suddenly. They could never even dreamed that the strongest strike landed on them was launched by the Heaven and Earth great formation in the heaven. Buzhou Mountain began to slowly fall once again, while blood flowed out from the mouths of Dong Gong, Spirit Wa and Ximu.

"My friends, how can you forget us?"

A refreshing gust of wind came from beyond the sky. Priest Dachi was sitting on a hassock, which was surrounded by fire and water, wearing a long red robe, decorated with the patterns of flames and water streams. He flew over along the gust of wind. Seeing the slanting Buzhou Mountain, he gently flicked the horsetail whisk held in his left hand, then countless transparent lotuses condensed from that refreshing gust of wind emerged in the sky, gently yet strongly supporting the falling mountain.

Priest Qing Wei followed. He was holding a long gray streamer, with Chaos power streams surging around his body, even stirring half of the sky up. He stood in the highest area that people could see and waved the long streamer holding in his hand. A Chaos divine thunderbolt was generated, creating a massive fire in the sky. The gate of the heaven was blown open by this scary divine thunderbolt.

"Who’s controlling the heaven?! Get the hell out! Let me see your face! Who has the guts to harm this world like this?!"

Priest Qing Wei’s face was filled with a sharp fierceness, and the

strong aura of killing that surrounded him was even tangible.

Chapter 924: Give A Suggestion Under the Danger

The gate of the heaven shut tightly. Layers of multicolored mist covered the gate, with faintly audible thunderbolts sizzling behind the gate. No other sounds could be heard.

Priest Qing Wei held the long streamer and silently waited by the gate for a while. Seeing nothing came out from the heaven, he laughed coldly. Flicking his wrist, Preist Qing Wei sent out a Chaos thunderbolt and struck on the gate, making it quake slightly. Endless colorful light streams surge out from the gate, and even half a sky was dyed colorful.

Priest Dachi slightly bent his arms and flicked his ten fingers. Clear airstreams puffed out of his fingertips. Meanwhile, the transparent lotus transformed from airstreams bloomed more and more thrivingly. Soon, tens of thousands of lotuses bloomed on the slanting Buzhou Mountain. Fire sparkles and electric bolts burst from where lotuses grew out, while sands and stones ceaselessly broke and fell from the mountain.

Seeing Priest Qing Wei prepared to break straight into the heaven, Priest Dachi gave a deep shout, "Qing Wei, calm down. The heaven is where the laws of the world came from. How can people like us offend the stateliness of the world?"

Qing Wei had already rolled up his sleeves, but on hearing Dachi, he paused briefly. Then, he cast a threatening glance at the gate covered in colorful mist streams and shouted coldly out, "Alright, alright, alright, I will not break into the heaven. You better not let me catch you outside the heaven!"

Ji Hao grinned aside while staring at the closed gate of the heaven with an extra vicious look.

‘Gong Gong, you shall pay for what you’ve done. Priest Qing Wei

is not a merciful one. You have offended him, and now your entire Gong Gong Family can say goodbye to your good lives.' thought Ji Hao.

Priest Qing Wei flicked the long streamer again. Then, a giant stream of Chaos power transformed into countless enormous hands and descended straight down, holding the slanting Buzhou Mountain and seeming to pull it directly up.

Spirit Wa, Dong Gong, Ximu and Netherworld Priest and Zhu Rong saw that two powerful helpers had joined in, and all gave a deep shout. Then, they boosted up their powers once again. Dense mist surrounded the broken half of Buzhou Mountain, slowly pushing it and trying to correct it bit by bit.

The forty-five-degree tilted mountain was slowly pulled up, and the angle of inclination reduced to thirty-degrees, twenty-degrees, ten-degrees...

The broken part of Buzhou Mountain nearly pushed up to its original position. After that, with some works and some powerful divine materials, the fracture of the mountain could be fixed. Then, with the miraculousness of this mountain, it wouldn't take too long for it to heal itself.

However, a twisted evil face suddenly showed up at the gate of the heaven. The eyes of this enormous twisted face, that was covered in blue and purple thunderbolts, opened. They blandly glanced at Priest Dachi and the others, who were trying to correct the mountain. Then, it abruptly opened its mouth and let out a heavy breath.

Seven-colored light sparkled in the mouth of this enormous face. The dazzling electric bolts looked like flowing liquid silver, screaming out of that mouth shrilly. They transformed into countless water-tank-sized lightning bolts and struck down towards every powerful being who had been trying to correct the mountain.

"Gong Gong!" Zhu Rong roared out resonantly. His eyes began burning, glowering at the heaven.

"Gong Gong, you're seeking death!" Ji Hao rushed up into the sky with the Pan Xi divine mirror floating above his head. A dim stream of light instantly covered half of a sky, while he activated the power of the mirror as much as he could, barely shielding half of the slanting mountain.

Emperor Shun was exhausted already. But still, he bit his tongue and let out his spirit blood. Then, he forcibly boosted his last bit of power up, raised the Xuanyuan sword and flew up, hacking straight down at the frontal gate of the heaven. He was the emperor of the humankind, but now, he broke the law of the world and wielded his sword towards the heaven, which was a symbol of the stateliness of the whole world. Emperor Shun had reached the most extreme state of his anger, and dropped everything else.

The lighting bolts poured on the Pan Xi divine mirror-like water streams. This was the evil-suppressing divine thunder that came from the heaven, which was generated by the will of the world.

The Pan Xi mirror was indeed a supreme treasure. But on one hand, it came from another world, and was still suppressed by the natural powers of Pan Gu world, and on the other hand, Ji Hao's power was limited. At the current stage, he couldn't release all of the mirror's power. The mirror took most of the effect of the wave of lightning bolts for Ji Hao. But still, a small half of those lightning bolts landed on his body.

The stainless cloak sent up nine blazing suns and released a bright golden light that shielded Ji Hao's entire body.

The cloak blocked all lingering power of the lightning bolts. Yet, Ji Hao's body still couldn't cope with great pressure brought by the lightning bolts. Inch by inch, Ji Hao was pressed down. A few breaths later, he bumped on the mountain.

Landing heavily on the mountain, Ji Hao felt that he was

carrying ten-thousand towering mountains. The mirror and the cloak took all powers of those lightning bolts that struck on him. But these two great treasures had no power left to dispel the crushing pressure caused by the divine lightning bolts.

Following a cracking noise, Ji Hao’s bones were crushed inch by inch.

The great pressure crazily stimulated Ji Hao’s potential. The small cauldron in his lower abdomen spun swiftly, with the Pan Jia sun quickly digesting in it. Dragon-like golden streams surged into Ji Hao’s body and roared into every meridian and acupoint of his, lighting all inner spirit stars up one after another.

His broken bones healed quickly, then were crushed again, and then healed again.

The Pan Xi divine mirror remained activated, covering half of the slanting part of the mountain with its power.

"Good kid!" Netherworld Priest cast a complicated glance at Ji Hao, laughed out abruptly and said, "Kid, will you join me after death?"

Priest Dachi and Priest Qing Wei simultaneously looked at Netherworld Priest. Their gazes were frigid. Together, Dachi and Qing Wei snorted coldly.

Netherworld Priest slightly quivered, then raised his head, glanced at Dachi and Qing Wei and laughed embarrassedly. Swiftly, he scanned across Ji Hao’s body with his eyes and finally discovered a slight trace of natural inhibitions left on the protective golden light that surrounded Ji Hao, which came from the stainless cloak that was crafted by Dachi, Qing Wei and Yu Yu together.

Priest Corpse didn’t say another word. Instead, he only gnashed his teeth and focused on controlling the eight-hundred giant zombies, trying his best to correct the slanting mountain as soon as

possible.

Nevertheless, half of the slanting mountain was exposed in the air without the protection of the Pan Xi divine mirror, and was under the attack of the divine thunderbolts. The strong impact force delivered by the thunderbolts slanted the mountain even more suddenly. Following a terrifying cracking noise, the mountain, which was about to be corrected, began crushing down, and within a blink of an eye, a ninety-degree angle was formed between the lower half and the broken half of the mountain.

Emperor Shun’s sword light struck on the gate of the heaven. The purple-blue, twisted face roared at him, then a water-like bolt of thunder dazzled out and landed on Emperor Shun’s chest. It sent him flying to over a thousand miles away, with black smoke puffing up from his body.

Emperor Shun vomited blood, looking at the motionless gate in despair.

He had boosted his power up to an extreme degree, but how could he, a human emperor, ever be able to open the gate of the haven? Even though he was holding the Xuanyuan sword left by Emperor Xuanyuan himself, he couldn’t even leave a mark on that gate.

Black, purple, golden, silver, white, red, clouds with all colors gathered before the gate of the heaven.

A dreadfully strong power of thunder and lightning even made Priest Dachi and Priest Qing Wei knit their eyebrows.

Ji Hao helplessly gave a resonant roar, then said, "Elders, if we can’t correct it, then let’s melt it!"

Chapter 925: Sky-Turning Seal

Everyone was enlightened by Ji Hao's words.

With the suppression that came from the Heaven and Earth great formation in the heaven, it was almost impossibly for this mountain to be corrected. Since it couldn't be corrected anymore, then it should be melted and turned into something else. This Buzhou Mountain was known as Sky Pillar, the core of the world, but it was nothing else but a part of the spine of Saint Pan Gu. Cultivators could even make the bodies of ancient divine dragons into zombies, so making a magic treasure with the spine of Saint Pan Gu sounded just normal.

Besides, this wasn't for anyone's personal benefits. Instead, this was for saving the whole world!

"Absolutely right!" Priest Dachi blandly glanced at Ji Hao, nodded in praise and said, "If we cannot correct it, we should melt it then. Rather than harming all living beings in the world...This is our only choice."

Priest Qing Wei's eyes sparkled with a magical light. He looked at this enormous, incredibly heavy and long broken half of Sky Pillar, laughed out loud abruptly and said, "Big Brother, you're right. Melt it, just melt just. I've been planning for years, always wanting to craft an after-world supreme treasure with the natural award I earned back then. But the only thing I lacked was a suitable material!"

Spirit Wa gave a cold snort and cast a sideway glance at Priest Qing Wei.

Dong Gong laughed coldly, also throwing Priest Qing Wei a quick glance.

Ximu didn't make any sound, yet her pair of eyes were popped out widely, staring at Priest Qing Wei with anger, as if she was

staring at the man who killed her father.

Netherworld Priest remained silent as well, but the black and white pair of swords held in his hands screamed shrilly for no reason, while extremely evil and strong intent of killing reached straight to Priest Qing Wei.

All the others were on the same page by now. A Half of Sky Pillar, Priest Qing Wei wanted to turn such a magical thing into an after-world supreme treasure. Wasn't he too greedy? Even a silly one could understand that once that piece of treasure was completed, it would absolutely be an earthshakingly powerful one.

Priest Qing Wei coughed slightly. He looked at Spirit Wa, Dong Gong, Ximu and Netherworld Priest, then his lips slightly moved, as he secretly sent his voice to all of them by using his spiritual power. The looks of the few powerful beings changed quickly. A while later, Spirit Wa shook her head, seeming to refuse to agree, while the other three all showed unhappiness. Clearly, Priest Qing Wei didn't manage to persuade them.

Priest Qing Wei's eye corners twitched. He looked at Spirit Wa and said something to her individually.

Spirit Wa remained silent for a while, then slowly nodded. She coldly looked at Priest Qing Wei and said, "You can have it this time, but don't forget what you promised!"

Priest Qing Wei had a slightly serious look as he then turned to Dong Gong and Ximu, talked to each of them individually, and next, glanced at the heaven.

Dong Gong and Ximu paused briefly, then each showed a faint smile. They relaxedly nodded and said, "Since you, our friend Qing Wei, are in such a good mood, we will surely let you have it. If you need any help when making the treasure, maybe we can offer some help!"

Netherworld Priest narrowed his eyes and laughed loudly, "Qing

Wei, my friend, what did you promise them? I am not that easy to bribe. Without enough benefits, I will never give up on this half Sky Pillar. Don’t even think about it!"

Priest Qing Wei smiled, then pointed down at Midland and said a few words to Netherworld Priest.

The Netherworld Priest paused for a second, then a pink hue emerged on his pale face. He remained silent for a short while, then looked at Priest Qing Wei and said, "Don’t lie to me. I am indeed not as powerful as you and your two brothers. But I have a kingdom in the netherworld. If you trick me today, I will make you restless every day and night!"

Priest Qing Wei seriously nodded, then pointed his right forefinger at his heart, then at the sky.

The Netherworld Priest raised his arms and waved hid broad sleeves. Abruptly, the pair of swords held in his harms disappeared. He rolled up his sleeves and laughed, "What are we waiting for then? It’s so stupid for us to waste our powers in here. Come, come come, all together, let’s melt this half of Sky Pillar!"

The evil purple face on the gate of the heaven roared rumblingly while widely opening its mouth and sending thunderbolts down like rain.

Priest Dachi snorted scornfully, then the water and fire hassock under his feet raised a yellow-colored hurricane up into the sky. The yellow hurricane covered the sky, and countless thunderbolts landed on it. Priest Dachi quivered slightly, while faintly visible electric bolts burst from between his hands.

"Alright, do it. We have no choice!"

Looking at the half Sky Pillar, which was almost parallel to the ground, Dachi sighed slowly and said, "But if the core of the world is melted, this world in the future...Hehe, Gong Gong, good, good!"

Priest Dachi had always been a mild and gentle one. Yet, his tone

was now filled with a bone-piercing cold vibe of killing.

Ji Hao shivered intensely. He was now curious as to how Gong Gong would die exactly, as he had already offended such a group of scarily, legendarily powerful beings in the world. Ji Hao decided that when it truly happened, he would certainly go to witness the death of Gong Gong, because that would be so interesting!

Priest Qing Wei gave a loud shout. He opened his mouth and let out a three-colored flame.

A crazily great heat roared across the broken half of Sky Pillar almost instantaneously. Plants, sands, rock and soil on Sky Pillar melted immediately into a seven-colored liquid, then were forced into Sky Pillar by the heat.

This was called Samadhi true fire, cultivated by Priest Qing Wei himself. With his power, this fire was countless times more powerful than the essence sun fire that Ji Hao could control at this stage. In terms of the quality of fire, the essence sun fire was no weaker than the Samadhi true fire. Yet, Ji Hao's was still too weak as of now. Consequently, the essence sun fire turned to be less powerful in his hands.

Priest Dachi gave a smile, then opened his mouth and sent out an invisible stream of flame.

This was the divine flame of great Dao transformed from Priest Dachi's life-force. This flame was invisible and traceless, and couldn't even change the temperature around it. However, it was immeasurably powerful. This invisible stream of flame wrapped the half Sky Pillar up, then the surface of Sky Pillar began melting gradually.

Spirit Wa gave a cold snort, then locked her fingers together. Her bodies glowed with a splendid light while a large, colorful stream of fire swooshed out and covered half the Sky Pillar.

Dong Gong and Ximu launched their moves together. They each

released their own unique types of fire to help Priest Qing Wei melt the Sky Pillar. Even Netherworld Priest released a pure-dark yet ice-clear, magical stream of fire. The black fire merged with all the other fires let out by the other powerful beings, instantly delivering a series of changes.

Thunderbolts descended from the heaven without an end. Priest Dachi was trembling all the time. Five streams of mist rose from his head, as he was trying his best to block the thunderbolts that came from the heaven.

The group of powerful beings had combined their powers, under the effect of which, Sky Pillar melted speedily. Gradually, Sky Pillar shrunk to around ten miles in radius, and it was turned into a colorful, transparent sphere of liquid.

Priest Qing Wei hurriedly waved his hands, and within a twinkling of an eye, he sent out countless Chaos natural inhibitions.

A thunder blast occurred. Meanwhile, a square golden seal gradually emerged, seeming to be between liquid and solid state. It released countless dazzling beams of golden light that made people' eyes ache.

Priest Qing Wei laughed out loud, pointed at the seal and said, "This Treasure can turn the sky upside down!"

This was only an embryo of a treasure. It needed to be processed, nourished and cultivated. It also needed to absorb a huge amount of natural reward power to become a real after-world supreme treasure.

When Priest Qing Wei named this treasure, two gusts of wind blew over. Following that, Priest Hua and Priest Mu darted out from the air.

Looking at the embryo seal, Priest Hua sighed.

Chapter 926: A Heavy Rain

The sky-turning seal was not completely shaped yet, it floated in the sky while shining dazzlingly.

Divine thunderbolts poured down from the heaven like a rain, stirring up the yellow mist released by Priest Dachi. The water and fire hassock seemed about to fail to block the fierce waves of divine thunderbolts soon.

The few powerful beings stood in the midair, looking at Priest Hua and Priest Mu coldly.

Ji Hao gasped and shielded his whole body with the power of the Pan Xi divine mirror. He slowly drifted near Netherworld Priest, then laughed, "Seeing these two elders, I suddenly thought of a hilarious phrase!"

Priest Hua, who had just given a long sigh, narrowed his eyes, looked at Ji Hao and said, "What is so hilarious?"

Ji Hao seriously looked at Priest Hua and said with an extra earnest look, "For great treasures, virtuous people shall have them. My friends, this treasure is destined to be mine!"

Spirit Wa tittered instantly, covering her mouth with her hand. But soon, she seemed to realize that she shouldn’t laugh like that. Therefore, she forcibly curved his mouth corners back down and showed a cold and serious look. She glanced at the heaven, then gave a few frigid snorts, flashed across the air and disappeared.

In midair, an enormous thunderbolt sliced the air open. A gigantic snake tail, which was wrapped in colorful clouds, gently swayed in the sky, then ‘accidentally’ whipped on the gate of the heaven.

A thunderous bang seemed to shake the entire world. Countless dark bolts of thunder spurted out from the heaven gate, then a deep buzzing noise was let out. The heavy-rain-like waves of divine

thunderbolts stopped suddenly.

Probably because of Spirit Wa's anger, or because it was meaningless to continue attacking, since the broken half of Sky Pillar was melted already, Gong Gong had finally stopped attacking.

Netherworld Priest looked at Priest Hua and Priest Mu, who were both with sulky faces. He abruptly bent his body, held his belly with his hands and laughed out wildly, "Hahaha, this treasure is destined to be mine! Ahaha, haha, I haven't heard this for years ever since the prehistorical era! Good, good, good, Earl Yao Ji Hao? What an interesting boy, I will remember you!"

While smirking, Netherworld Priest waved his finger in the air. Then, the dark spooky gate opened. He rushed into the gate with eight-hundred flying zombies, after which the gate disappeared, leaving a black mist rolling in the air for a while. Netherworld Priest seemed to be quite afraid of Priest Mu and Priest Hua.

Dong Gong and Ximu nodded to Priest Qing Wei and Priest Dachi. They then glanced at Priest Hua and Priest Mu, who were quite embarrassed at the moment, and smiled. Dong Gong hopped onto the back of his crane and flew eastward, while Ximu rode on a beautiful cyan bird and flew westward. They left like gusts of wind, and were singing the same ancient melody.

Priest Dachi took back the fire and water hassock and sat on it. Calmly looking at Priest Hua and Priest Mu, he remained silent.

Priest Qing Wei held the long streamer, stood beside the seal and blandly asked, "My two friends, you seem to be interested in this small piece of pie? Come, come up here, let me see what you can do. If I lose to you, you can just take this sky-turning seal!"

Priest Hua and Priest Mu hadn't said a word. A long while later, Priest Hua glanced at Ji Hao and said blandly, "My friend, you misunderstood. We came to save the humankind from a disaster, not to take your treasure."

Ji Hao had already stepped behind Priest Dachi. Priest Dachi sat on the hassock, and Ji Hao trod on a golden light, reaching his head out from behind Priest Dachi.

Looking at Priest Hua's complicated look, Ji Hao said coldly, "Let's not mention if you want the treasure or not for now. In front of the human emperor and all these human leaders, I just have one question to ask — Since you came to save the humankind from this disaster, why are you so late?"

Priest Hua narrowed his eyes and threw a glance at Ji Hao.

Priest Mu held his hands in his sleeves, gave an especially bitter sigh and said, "My brother and I are late, only because..."

Rudely interrupting him, Ji Hao continued, "Because you were busy at destroying the evidence of your crime and unifying your statement, right?"

Priest Dachi abruptly began talking, "Ji Hao, Hua and Mu are elders. How can you be so impolite? What evidences of crime? What statement? If you lie, don't blame me for punishing you, even though you're a senior human minister!"

Ji Hao chuckled, then turned to Emperor Shun and said, "I am only curious about one thing. Why was Gong Sun Ming, the leader of You Xiong Family, possessed by the sky devil? And why did that sky devil help Gong Sun Tianming, who was 'made' by Priest Hua, to attempt to take the highest right of You Xiong Family?"

Quickly, Ji Hao told everyone on the scene about the fact that he had encountered the sky devils back in Southern Wasteland, and heard Priest Mu admit that those sky devils were attracted to Pan Gu world by himself. Ji Hao had then fought with a solid effort to finally wipe out those sky devils, and also told those people about how he found out that Gong Sun Meng was possessed by a sky devil in You Xiong City.

Emperor Shun's face was almost twisted in a fury, that his eyes

could even generate fire now.

The looks of the group of human ministers changed as well. Subconsciously, they looked at each other. There was more than one sky devil? A massive group of them? Were they all capable of devouring souls, occupying bodies, and manipulating human behaviors?!

You Xiong Family elders stared at Priest Hua and Priest Mu with glowing red eyes. You Xiong Family was nearly torn apart. An internal war had almost burst between them, and their loyal warriors were even about to start killing each other. All this was because of these two priests?

"Give back the life of our leader!!" A You Xiong Family elder burst with a raging roar. Then, he wielded the large ax in his hand and hacked down towards Priest Hua and Priest Mu, as if he had forgotten about all the injuries of his.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu sighed again. They both bitterly glanced at Ji Hao, then disappeared, as silently as they came. Perhaps, they had been wondering why on earth did they come.

Perhaps, Ji Hao was already in their killing list!

Priest Dachi and Priest Qing Wei glanced at each other and murmured simultaneously, "Outer space sky devils...hmm!"

Emperor Shun put his sword back into the sheath. He abandoned his broken flax clothes and changed to that luxurious, beautiful crown costume, that belonged only to the human emperor. Then, he walked to Priest Dachi and Qing Wei with a solemn face.

"Elders!" Emperor Shun bowed to Priest Dachi and Qing Wei.

Dachi and Qing Wei had their looks slightly changed. They hurriedly stood up, slightly lowered their heads to salute back to Emperor Shun and said, "You’re the human emperor, this is too much."

Ji Hao clicked his tongue aside. So Priest Dachi and Priest Qing

Wei turned to be so polite to Emperor Shun. Emperor Shun was indeed the owner of the fortune of the whole world, and even powerful beings like these were willing to be polite to him.

While pondering, a fist-sized raindrop landed on Ji Hao's head.

Ji Hao raised his head and looked at the cloudless sky.

Fist-sized raindrops fell one after another, quicker and quicker. A few breaths later, a heavy rain descended from the sky, and a dense watery mist covered the whole Midland.

Loud water clattering noise covered all sounds in the world. No one could hear anything but the sound of rain.

Chapter 927: Torrents of Rain

No clouds were drifting in the sky, but the moisture of the air had been rising all the time. A heavy rain had been falling, and all rivers around Pu Ban City were swelling.

Waves of water surged, At first glance, different-sized water streams flowed down from all mountains, gathering into new rivers and streams. These new rivers and streams merged together and seemed to even turn into an ocean.

Fist-sized raindrops fell from the sky one after another without an end. Many branches were broken, and so were crops in farmlands. This nonstop rain that lasted for two days had already decided that not a single grain will be reaped this year in Midland.

More terrifyingly, the plants on some mountains were destroyed. Without the plants, the soil was flushed down from the mountains. Mudflows had already attacked some small villages. And at the moment, all clans had sent out their elite warriors to rescue their people.

On the open grassland, the meters tall grasses were pressed down to the ground, weakly lying there like piles of dead bodies. The whole Midland was suffused by the feeling of lifelessness.

No birds were flying in the sky. Thriving packs of wild animals had how been huddling in wet grasses, without being able to move. Flooding rivers roared unsettlingly, seemed to surge out of the riverways rampantly. From time to time, one could see wild animals and livestock desperately swimming in those rivers. Those poor animals tried to find a land to rest, but the rivers flew way too rapidly. Soon, they were all dragged down to the river bottoms.

Loud caws rose into the sky. Mr. Crow angrily flew all over the sky, with a dim fiery light rising from his golden feather.

As a descendant of ancient Gold Crow, the thing Mr. Crow hated

the most was the rainy season of Southern Wasteland. Endless rain fell day and night, and his entire body was getting moldy. This was extremely uncomfortable.

But now, this heavy rain in Midland was even more ridiculous than the rainy season of Southern Wasteland. Mr. Crow ragingly darted into the sky and let out Gold Crow flame as much as he could, trying to burn the sky and stop this damned rain.

At first, when Mr. Crow had the power, wherever he flew across, the watery mist within the area hundred miles in radius would burn out, and the rain in that area would stop immediately. But once Mr. Crow left, watery mist from surrounding area would quickly surge in, and the rain would start to fall again.

As Mr. Crow's power was consumed, he could now merely maintain the dryness of his own body. A clearly visible steam tail was following behind him, while the dense watery mist was blown away by the strong wind, exposing Mr. Crow's exhausted face.

Struggling for quite a while, Mr. Crow was finally soaked by the crazy rain. He weakly fell from the sky and landed on Ji Hao's shoulder, gasping quickly for air. Meanwhile, he angrily stared at the sky with his beady shining eyes.

"Something is wrong with this rain, Mr. Crow!" Ji Hao gently patted Mr. Crow's feather with his palm. The water on Mr. Crow's body evaporated speedily, while warm streams of power were sent into his body from Ji Hao's palm. Mr. Crow was quickly regaining his consumed power.

Unhappily cawing for a few times, Mr. Crow seriously nodded.

Something was indeed wrong about this heavy rain. Mr. Crow had lived for so many years, but he never saw an endless rain falling from a cloudless sky. The watery mist in the air was way too dense, and it had been growing denser and denser.

Gold power, green power, fire power and earth power, none of

the other types of natural power declined. But among the most basic five types of natural power, only the water power had been rising crazily. Within two days, the density of water power had already raised by a hundred percent.

Added with the fact that Buzhou Mountain had now fallen, without being balanced and suppressed by Sky Pillar, the unsettling natural powers began causing all kinds of effects. The water power, which now held a dominating position, immediately generated a crazily heavy rain.

Ji Hao raised his head and looked at the heaven.

Spirit Wa and the other powerful beings didn't do anything to Gong Gong, maybe because of the agreement they signed back then, or because they didn't want to step in the internal affairs of the humankind.

Anyway, Ji Hao found that the thoughts of these powerful beings were a bit hard to understand. Gong Gong occupied the heaven and broke Buzhou Mountain intentionally. For what he had done, his whole family should be executed. However, those powerful beings didn't take this seriously, did they?

"Oi, you're protectors of Pan Gu world!" complained Ji Hao.

Spirit Wa did nothing to Gong Gong. Dong Gong and Ximu had left, no one knew where they went. Priest Dachi and Priest Qing Wei had a short, meaningless conversation with Emperor Shun, then both went away with the sky-turning seal, leaving the humankind to deal with this great mess themselves.

Zhu Rong didn't forget about Gong Gong. He gathered a large troop and guarded before the heaven gate.

However, he dared only to stay by the gate. With this troop he had, he would never have to confidence to attack the heaven. He asked Ji Hao for help though, but all Yao Mountain warriors were busy at sending Yao Mountain people into the area ten-thousand

miles in radius around Yao Mountain City to hide from the possible disaster. Where could Ji Hao find another military force to lend to Zhu Rong?

"Gong Gong, damn you!" Ji Hao narrowed his eyes, carefully pondering over some questions which were still confusing to him.

Sky Pillar was destroyed, then a heavy rain came. Was Gong Gong planning to create a massive flood? But what could a flood do to help him? Of course, his Northern Wasteland people wouldn't be affected by the flood, but people in Midland and the other three wastelands would be miserable.

Was he trying to weaken the entire humankind?

Or did he have other purposes?

In the knee-deep water, Ji Hao walked towards the Town Hall with big steps.

The rain was still falling, bumping into the roof of the Town Hall. Following the rumbling noise, countless raindrops blasted against the roof, and a dense layer of watery mist had the Town Hall wrapped up. The rain was way too heavy, that Senior Magi from Magi Palace lifted the Town Hall up entirely with a secret magic. The Town Hall was now around a hundred meters taller than surrounding buildings. Consequently, streams of water flowed down through the square before the Town Hall in all directions, like a series of waterfalls.

Walking towards the Town Hall through the stairs, Ji Hao shook the water off from his body by the door and walked in quickly.

Emperor Shun and thousands of clan leaders, and elders were sitting in the main hall, all with extra serious faces.

During the past two days, the news that came from all places were not so good.

Houses collapsed in the rain, villages were destroyed, and so were farmlands. Most importantly, all crops, which were almost ready

for a harvest, were ruined. Livestock died or were wounded, and many suffered diseases.

Those strong warriors were still fine, as they were strong and healthy. But those elderly ones and children were miserable. They were weak, and many of them were even dying, as this terrible rain had lasted for two days.

"This rain will become a disaster." Si Xi was talking when Ji Hao walked in, "We have to figure out a plan. Where on earth did this rain come from? When will it stop? If the water level keeps rising like this, a flood would be inevitable."

Ji Hao’s heart twitched. A flood, indeed.

Chapter 928: Interrogate

The rain covered the sky. A dim dark light stream shattered countless raindrop and left a snow-white trace in the sky, dazzling straight up from the ground.

Flying for billions of miles, it broke hundreds of fierce layers of airflow, thunderbolts, raging divine fire, and crushed rosy clouds. Finally, a seven-colored warm light poured down from above.

Without Sky Pillar as a contrast, the heaven gate, which floated in the air, seemed to be even more magnificent.

Especially that, compared to days before, an unknown defensive magic formation had been activated. An anciently styled heavy memorial archway now stood by the gate of the heaven. The five-hundred meters tall archway was glowing with a warm light, with seven-colored clouds drifting out from it, transforming into an enormous light screen that covered the entire heaven gate.

Thousands of different sized, fiery clouds floated outside the archway, treading on which were Southern Wasteland warriors under the command of Zhu Rong. Standing in ordered lines, these warriors loudly cursed Gong Gong's ancestors.

From behind the gate of the heaven, glowing clouds had been rising, within which, countless palaces were faintly visible. Occasionally, muffled thunders would come from deep inside the heaven, as if something big was happening in there.

Ji Hao gasped for air, then broke the thick layer of cloud in front of him and reached the heaven gate.

Lowering his head, he looked at Midland, which was now as tiny as a grain of dust. Ji Hao couldn't help but shake his head. Back in the ancient times, could those legendary, powerful human beings truly climb up to the heaven to meet with Divine Emperors through Buzhou Mountain?

This was a joke, wasn’t it? Or was it a story made up by some elderly human beings?

Even with the golden bridge, Ji Hao had to spend so long to reach the gate of the heaven. How many years did those ancient human beings spend to climb up to the heaven with their legs? Perhaps, they had to get married and have children on Buzhou Mountain, generation after generation, and their descendants could eventually reach the heaven.

Letting out a long breath, Ji Hao sent the golden bridge back into his body. Then, Mr. Crow hovered in the air, expanded his body to meters wide, and carried Ji Hao towards the gate.

Warriors standing on the few fiery clouds flew to Ji Hao and prepared to shout him away, but Zhu Rong’s voice came over. "Ji Hao, what are you doing here? I heard that the rain is getting heavier and heavier down there. Is that true?"

Those warriors stepped back. Ji Hao flew forward and came to before the heaven gate.

In front of the hundreds of meter tall enormous archway, Zhu Rong was wearing a heavy armor, holding a pair of swords, and standing on a fiery cloud, while staring at this archway with a fierce aura of killing. The archway had been releasing a strong pressure. Hearing Ji Hao coming, he asked without turning around his head.

"It’s difficult." Ji Hao responded with a deep voice and stood behind Zhu Rong, "I don’t know about the other areas, but over ten-thousand villages around Pu Ban City have already suffered a flood. Crops are all ruined, and so is livestock."

He sighed and continued gloomily, "I don’t know if the peace agreement we signed with the non-humankind is still working. A thousand years of peace, hehe...If they attack right now, we wouldn’t even be able to prepare army provisions."

Zhu Rong turned around, glanced at him and asked, "Granaries in Pu Ban City?"

Ji Hao spread his arms and said with an even bitterer look, "All soaked... Some got moldy, some sprouted, and all are inedible now. Three-thousand large granaries were prepared in Pu Ban for wartime, but only a hundred and fifty of them remained undamaged till now."

Zhu Rong's face was darkened slightly. He remained silent for a while, then said with a deep voice, "Tell Emperor Shun that the grains I stored in Southern Wasteland will be open for Pu Ban City to use. But shipping food from Southern Wasteland...Those patrolling ships of the non-humankind are not easy to deal with."

Ji Hao nodded, then raised his head and looked at the warm light released from the archway. He flicked his wrist and sent out a bolt of Yu Yu divine thunder, mixed with Qing Wei divine thunder. Yu Yu thunder was swift and violent, while Qing Wei thunder had a wider effect. The cyan and purple thunderbolt struck on the archway like a storm. Next, hundreds of meter radius spheres of thunderbolt blasted in a row, as a scorchingly hot thunder power spread in the air.

Even after madly attacking for a quarter of an hour, this enormous archway had still been unhurriedly letting out seven-colored mist and glow. The thunderbolts released by Ji Hao didn't manage to break even a few clouds above the archway.

"Don't waste your power." said Zhu Rong with a dark face, "This is the Southern Archway of the Heaven and Earth great formation, one of the most important four cores of the heaven. Not to mention you, even I can't harm it, not even if I am a hundred times more powerful than now."

Ji Hao looked at Zhu Rong, remained silent for a while, then loudly shouted towards the heaven, "Gong Gong, come out and answer my question. Otherwise, your Northern Wasteland people

will all be dead!"

Ji Hao's threat seemed to be effective. Once he finished his sentence, Gong Gong's cold and hoarse voice came from a distance, "Are you joking? My North Sea is a famous dangerous zone in the world. No matter how great your army is, what can you possibly do to my North Sea?"

Letting out a breath, Ji Hao took two steps forward and continued shouting with a harsh tone, "All masters of the art of poison from Magi Palace..."

Before Ji Hao finished, Gong Gong started laughing coldly, then said, "Ah, I almost forgot! My son, Wuyou, is dead. My only child is dead now. Why should I concern for the lives of those Northern Wasteland people? They might die, but I don't care. Just do whatever you want."

Laughing creepily, Gong Gong continued coldly and emotionlessly, "Wuyou died alone, lonely and poorly. He'd be happier if so many families and friends died with him, wouldn't he?"

Zhu Rong wielded the pair of swords in his hands, pointed the sword tips at the heaven, and growled, "Gong Gong, come out and fight me, if you're a man! You, you, you! How dare you break Buzhou Mountain with my power?! You flagitious bastard!"

Gong Gong snickered and said, "Ahyaya, Zhu Rong kid, don't wrong me. You punched me, then I bumped into Buzhou Mountain... It was an accident! I am the poor one all this time, am I not? Even my only son was killed by you, then you nearly beat me to death. You made me bump into Buzhou Mountain, how can you blame me for that?"

Before Zhu Rong said anything, Gong Gong continued, "Buzhou Mountain collapsed, and I am frightened as well. I activated the Heaven and Earth great formation and sent down divine thunder to kill you, not to break the mountain. Therefore, we have to be

reasonable, we have to set things straight!"

Ji Hao didn’t want to waste any time listening to all this nonsense. He shouted angrily, "Gong Gong, if you’re still a man, tell us, what on earth are you trying to do? The rain hasn’t stopped. Do you know how many people might die?"

Remaining silent for a while, Gong Gong laughed slowly, "When the flood reaches to the sky, you will think of the goodness of mine."

"You can break into the heaven to kill me, if you’re powerful enough."

"You can also stop this rain by yourselves, if you’re powerful enough."

"Or, you can obediently surrender to me, to kneel in front of me, to follow my lead!"

"Apart from all this, what can you possibly do? Above the sky, I am watching you!"

Chapter 929: The Change in Pan Jia World

Pan Jia world...

In the air, a black bolt of lightning dazzled.

Space was broken, and a bean-sized hole appeared, from which, countless black lightning bolts burst and shattered the surrounding space piece by piece. The tiny hole expanded speedily, reaching the size of a bowl within a blink of an eye, then the size of a dish. Soon, the hole turned to be as big as the mouth of an ordinary well. Soft white light streams surged out of the hole, and followed a swishing noise, these white light streams transformed into countless dazzling light beams that dazzled everywhere.

Boom! A stream of white light hundreds of meter thick burst in the air and struck the boundless water of Pan Jia world. A water column rose hundreds of meters high. The white light was powerful, as it shattered the water column and forced the water to move outwards. The column turned into a, hundreds of meter tall water wall, spreading out and roaring in all directions.

Evil mermaids and mermen fiercely darted out of the water surface while showing their sharp teeth, holding all kinds of weapons and looking at the white light stream that descended from the sky in a daze.

The vast ocean of Pan Jia world was incredibly deep, at the bottom of which, Pan Jia had been leisurely drifting in the water. She lazily opened her eyes and murmured, "Hmm, have those people mentioned by Ji Hao arrived? Just let them do whatever they want. Those things were not important anyway."

Gently waving her hand, a magical ripple spread out towards the entire Pan Jia world, along with the surging water streams.

All spirit mermaids and mermen raised their heads simultaneously, leaned their heads and seemed to be clearly

listening to something. They moved, diving down towards the deepest area. Crystal palaces were located in the bottom area of the ocean, and as these spirit mermaids and mermen swam into them, the clear water became turbid, completely covering all these underwater buildings.

Only those evil mermaids and mermen didn't receive any alarm. They popped out their mouths and showed their teeth while fiercely waving their weapons towards the white light.

A dragon roar tore the air apart and descended into this world, following which came a dreadfully strong power vibration. Ao Li bumped out of the white light with a heavy armor. He spun for tens of times in the air, then abruptly opened his mouth and began vomiting due to the dizziness, into the ocean down below.

That vomiting was heavy, and Ao Li almost threw his gallbladder up. Finally, he stopped vomiting, slowly shook his head and saw the world clearly.

"Ah, Amma, this portal almost killed me! Good ancestors soul, I am a strong one already, but that was...Oh, my..."

As he just managed to murmur a few words, Ao Li sensed another storm from his stomach. Widely opening his mouth and straightening his tongue, the vomiting started once again. Just now, everything in his stomach was squeezed out already, and by now, Ao Li's throat squirmed intensively, causing a loud, weird noise.

While cursing, Ao Li released his dragon power, surging in his body. He forcibly boosted up his spirit blood to comfort his body. Then, he opened his eyes and glanced around.

His body froze suddenly. He popped his eyes out, as if he couldn't believe those eyes. Then, Ao Li began laughing wildly and crazily.

While laughing, Ao Li took off his heavy armor, dropped his weapon, and transformed into a, thousands of meters long golden

dragon, jumping into the vast ocean while roaring.

Dark clouds gathered in the sky, lightning bolts dazzled across the sky and thunder rumbled. With the great power he was born with, Ao Li created a storm that stirred the entire area with a radius of tens of thousands of miles. Waves rose, and rapid undercurrents and whirlpools emerged.

Hundreds of evil mermaids and mermen rushed to Ao Li while screaming. They wielded their weapons, pouncing on Ao Li. In the eyes of these instinctive creatures, Ao Li was huge, and could serve as a perfect meal.

Ao Li snorted coldly, as a massive wave of silver electric bolts was released from his body. Next, the electric bolts sizzled in the entire area, creating loud popping noise from time to time. Those evil mermaids and mermen were burned one after another. They howled, sank into the water and died.

"Wonderful place! What a wonderful place!" Ao Li reached his upper body out of the water surface. That tens of miles tall dragon body straightened upon the water surface, with countless thunderbolts landing on it, making him look even more powerful and dreadful.

"What a wonderful place!" Ao Li roared happily, as loud as he could.

The water power in this place was so pure, and all the other types of natural power were thin and weak. This was a world of water, perfect for the dragon-kind and those aquatic creatures under their command to live in. Spreading the seeds of spirit water plants from Pan Gu world into this ocean, those plants would grow thrivingly and speedily. Next, large batches of lower aquatic animals could be raised in this place, serving as food. Afterward, this place would become the paradise of the dragon-kind and the other spirit aquatic creates.

In Pan Gu world, the dragon-kind had to fight against Gong Gong

Family for territory, and every year, countless conflicts would burst between them because of that. But for this perfect water world, Gong Gong wouldn’t be able to touch it, and the dragon-kind would become the only owner of it!

"Bloody non-humankind beings, if you want to take this world from me, you will die!" Ao Li thrillingly roared towards the sky.

If Pan Jia world had mountains, plains or other types of land area, Ao Li would still worry that he might not be able to defeat those non-humankind beings who would arrive in this world later. But this was a world of water, without any land, and the water was immeasurably deep. Just now, Ao Li measured the depth of the water with his power, and found out that the average depth of this vast ocean was over ten-million meters!

This water-dominated world was created for the dragon-kind, and no other creatures could ever fight the dragon-kind in this place, not even the non-humankind!

Swishing noise could be heard without an end while the eight dragon kings and a large group of dragons flew out of the portal.

Same as Ao Li, those younger dragons all started vomiting once they came out of the portal. The eight dragon kinds stood in the midair stunned, staring at this boundless ocean as if they couldn’t believe their eyes.

"This, this, this...Dragon ancestors soul!" The eight dragon kinds raised their arms high, roaring in a wild joy.

Bright fiery light shone out of the portal, following which, Feng Qinxin impatiently rushed out with a large group of phoenixes. Once they arrived in this world, the dense water power surged up from all directions. Feng Qinxin and her people didn’t see this coming, and the strong water power gushed into their mouths and nostrils, making them cough severely.

"Phoenix ancestors soul, what a damnable place is this?!" Feng

Qinxin screamed in pain.

The portal was opened and connected to another world. Even Pan Jia didn't notice that large streams of watery power had surged into the portal, sending it to Pan Gu world. Through the portal, Pan Jia world began pouring water into Pan Gu world ceaselessly.

Ao Li was still roaring in excitement while Feng Qinxin was screaming and complaining in pain. As for Tushan Family people, they had already started to explore valuable natural resources of this world with all kinds of tools.

Pan Jia world became noisy.

Chapter 930: A Sign of the Flood

The water was moving, and the movements of water had always been unpredictable.

People said that water flowed downhill. From a place with rich water resources, the water would always flow towards places with poor water resources.

Pan Gu world was a fertile world with rich natural resources. All natural powers in this world had been in a great balance, stable and perfectly ordered. Therefore, compared to Pan Jia world, the water power in Pan Gu world was naturally weaker than in Pan Jia world. For this reason, after the portal between these two worlds was activated, the water power in Pan Jia world automatically permeated into Pan Gu world without much extra effort.

If Sky Pillar was not destroyed, and the natural defense of Pan Gu world remained undamaged, it would serve as an especially strong protective screen. Even if the exceeded water power came from the outer space, it would be blocked by the protective screen.

But Gong Gong broke Buzhou Mountain and destroyed the core of the world. The earth meridians fell into disturbance while the natural defense of this world was weakened by ninety percent. The water power from Pan Jia world surged straight into the portal, easily seeping into Pan Gu world once it sensed it from the portal.

The density of water power in Pan Gu world was rising speedily.

No clouds could be seen in the sky. Yet, the moisture had been rising crazily fast. Within a couple of days, the air turned weak and sticky, even in caves and rooms. Visibly, tiny water drops had been ceaselessly condensed from the air, dripping on the ground.

The heavy rain never stopped in Midland and the four wastelands. Not a single area in this world wasn’t under the rain by now.

The rain dominated the world. The water accumulated on the ground, with the depth of around a foot. Waves roared and surged in every river and stream, with water flowing down from all mountains in large streams. Except for those thousands of years old ancient trees, all slightly younger trees already had all branches broken by the rain, leaving tree trunks slantingly pointing at the sky.

Ji Hao returned from the heaven with no result. He reported to Emperor Shun regarding what happened by the gate of the heaven and then left, heading back to Yao Mountain territory. In Pu Ban City, Ji Hao couldn't do much. He didn't know how to deal with this sudden crazy rain, neither did he have any idea about how to deal with Gong Gong, who had been hiding in heaven. These important things should be discussed and decided by Emperor Shun and those ministers, clan leaders and elders.

Ji Hao was a young earl. He had just built his foundation and attained his territory with large numbers of clansmen. Under the current situation, his responsibility was to stay in Yao Mountain City to comfort his people, and help fend against the coming disaster. These were the things that needed to be done by the leaders of small to middle scale human clans when a disaster was coming.

Returning to Yao Mountain City as fast as he could, Ji Hao went to check the portal. He had already sensed that this rain might be somehow related to the portal connected with the Pan Jia world, but he couldn't prove it. He did not want to tell Emperor Shun and the other ministers about his guess either, because that would do no good except for getting himself more troubles and accusations. Besides, what could possibly change even if he shut the portal down?

Twelve portals existed in the territory of the non-humankind, same as the one in Yao Mountain City. The portal that belonged to Dishi Family also led to Pan Jia world. If Ji Hao guessed right, the

other eleven new worlds provided by Dishi Cha were all dominated by water power, just like Pan Jia world.

If that was true...

Ji Hao's heart twitched from time to time. If that were true, in order to stop this great rain, human beings would have to take the initiative and start a war against the non-humankind, wouldn't they? They wouldn't have to break into Liang Zhu City to destroy the twelve portals, right?

But how could things be so easy?

The Golden bridge moved as fast as lightning. Followed by a dim golden light, Ji Hao silently descended from the air and penetrated into the coverage of the Heaven and Earth great formation, reaching to the portal's magic formation base.

The portal had been running faultlessly, and the large light stream reaching straight into the higher sky seemed to be much more stable than before.

Ji Hao took a circle around the base formation and carefully sensed the watery power coming from it. Indeed, a small amount of moisture seeped into Yao Mountain City through the portal. But the amount that permeated into Yao Mountain City could fill a small pool tops. It could never cause such a destructive, overwhelming rain that affected the whole Midland and the four wastelands.

Raising his head and knitting his eyebrows, Ji Hao ignored the greetings given by his people and flew swiftly up along the large light stream.

As the golden light dazzled all the way, Ji Hao reached tens of thousands of meters high. Standing where the light stream reached into the void, Ji Hao spread his spirit power and carefully scanned across the surrounding area. In this area, the moisture Ji Hao sensed from the light stream was in a greater amount than it

was in down below, but the difference wasn't too huge.

The air around Ji Hao sparkled as Shaosi twisted the space and came beside him. Gently, she asked, "What happened? The rain is getting heavier and heavier these days in our territory. Except for the area under the coverage of the Heaven and Earth great formation thirty-thousand miles in radius around Yao Mountain City, all crops in the other areas are ruined."

"Do we have enough food in storage?" Ji Hao asked Shaosi frowningly while trying to not show too many worries on his face.

"Not enough." Shaosi shook her head, looking at Yao Mountain territory, which was swept by the rain, also with a worrying face.

Yao Mountain territory was a new territory. Compared to those human territories with long histories, it was much weaker and fragile. The grain yield of Yao Mountain territory could barely feed their own people in these years. A large quantity of food still needed to be purchased from the outside.

A certain amount of grain was stored in Yao Mountain City, but that could only feed Yao Mountain people for a month. After a month, the entire Yao Mountain territory would be run out of food.

Seven-colored mist coiled above Yao Mountain City. The Heaven and Earth great formation was fully activated, covering the area thirty-thousand miles in radius around the city. Not even a single drop of water could seep into this area. However, outside this area, the rain never stopped. Water roared in streams, and the main channels of quite a few large rivers were already flooded. From time to time, meters high waves would rise.

Bang! Right under Ji Hao's eyes, a hill near a river was burst by the flood. That hundreds of meter tall hill fell into the river and blocked it.

Rumbling noise could be heard without an end. The surging river

was blocked, so it immediately overflew from the river channel, rampantly roaring towards both sides of the river. The turbid waves destroyed woods, submerged farmlands, and a few villages near the river were crushed right away. Fortunately, people who lived in the villages had moved away long ago.

"Hmm, at least the crops around Yao Mountain City are still safe."

Looking at the flood striking onto the protective screen created by the Heaven and Earth great formation, seven-colored mist rose and drifted, while the hundreds of meters high waves smashed on the protective screen, yet caused no effect.

Ji Hao raised his head, looked at the sky for a while, but then froze.

He saw what he had seen in Pan Jia world ...

In the midair, a small dark cloud floated quietly in the sky. From it, a fist-thick water stream was pouring down rumblingly.

No raindrops anymore. Instead, it was a stream.

Ji Hao popped his eyes out in shock. Surrounding him, more and more clouds like this emerged. Within the blink of an eye, over a thousand small clouds quietly appeared in the sky.

Chapter 931: Worlds Connected

Liang Zhu City, twelve streams of white light reached straight into the sky.

Dishi Yanluo stood beside the base formation, silently looking at the faintly visible spell symbols in the white light. All of a sudden, a popping noise came from the portal, while countless spell symbols that had been spinning like gears paused. Next, all spell symbols merged together perfectly and transformed into a smooth stream of light that spread out.

A Xiu Clan elderly man walked to the base formation, seeming to be quite experienced. He grasped in the air, then put his hand to his nose, sniffed and said while smiling, "Hmm, a world with rich water power. Poor human beings, this rain is not gonna stop!"

The non-humankind had occupied countless worlds. About the possible changes that might happen to a world after it was connected to another world by portals, they clearly knew about it. Pan Gu world was connected with another world that was dominated by water power. Thus, the strong water power seeped into Pan Gu world through the portal, and broke the balance of natural powers.

If Sky Pillar still existed, the moisture that came from another world wouldn’t cause any effect on Pan Gu world. But according to the recent news, Gong Gong broke Buzhou Mountain. Therefore, an endless rain, a flood, all these would be reasonable. These non-humankind beings had witnessed such scenes countless times in those worlds they occupied before.

Dishi Yanluo seriously nodded and murmured to himself, "A world with rich water power? Hmm, hope we can find some nice things in there!"

Raising his head and looking at the sky, Dishi Yanluo knitted his eyebrows. He abruptly raised his staff and knocked a Xiu Clan

master aside, who was responsible for building the portal. The staff thudded against the Xiu Clan master's body and almost broke his shoulders, as Dishi Yanlou growled harshly, "The rain has lasted for so many days. This proves that the portal of another family was completed earlier than ours!"

Pointing at the Xiu Clan master, Dishi Yanluo gave a cold smile and said fiercely, "This proves, the magic formation artists working for my Dishi Family are not as useful as theirs! You have to work harder. Otherwise, I wouldn't mind replacing you!"

A group of Xiu Clan people lowered their heads, daring not to say a word to Dishi Yanluo, who was so badly annoyed.

Snorting slightly, Dishi Yanluo waved his hand. Large groups of Jia Clan warriors rushed into the portal. As the white light dazzled, they dispersed in the base formation.

After one-hundred-thousand Jia Clan warriors stepped into the base formation, a group of Yu Clan nobles sitting in all kinds of flying forts, protected by their guards, flew into the portal. Great numbers of materials for building magic formations were carried in these flying forts, because they needed to build another stable portal base magic formation in the other world. Thus, they would be able to achieve the transportation between the two worlds with the lowest cost.

Thousands of miles away, in a manor that belonged to Dark Sun, Yemo Luoye sat in a large black armchair with a sour face while sneering, "Shanye is not willing to come back...She is such a humiliation to our Yemo Family."

Turning around, Yemo Luoye snorted and said to a handsome Yu Clan young man, who was standing by the armchair, "Yemo Tian, that unruly little sister of ours, you go handle her. Bring her over and teach her some rules!"

Yemo Tian smiled faintly, then the erect eye between his eyebrows slightly opened. Within it, an evil light had been rotating

slowly.

If anyone who knew him were on the scene, he or she would realize that he was one of the six masters of the prison manager, who daringly sold Ji Hao a great number of prisoners from Black Shark Castle.

Smiling as warmly as a spring breeze, Yemo Tian said with a soft voice, "Sister, Shanye and I never liked each other. I think it's better for you to bring her back by yourself, don't you think so? As for this new world, why don't you let me..."

Yemo Shanye waved her hand, interrupted Yemo Tian, and said coldly and blandly, "Things like conquering a new world might be too difficult for you now. After all, you never led an army."

"Because you and Yemo Shanye never liked each other, I am sending you to bring her back. If I send anyone else, I'm afraid, none of the others would dare to do anything to her. Therefore, I can only send you."

Yemo Tian bit his lower lip, then said in that soft voice of his, "But sister, just because I am inexperienced, I think..."

Yemo Luoye slapped Yemo Tian's face. She stared at that handsome face of Yemo Tian and said slowly, "What you think doesn't matter. Yemo Tian, do you think that I will give you the military power of Dark Sun? Don't think about impossible things."

Throwing a threatening glance at Yemo Tian, Yemo Luoye continued coldly, "I give you ten-thousand warriors. Take advantage of this great rain and go bring her back. This heavy rain will be largely helpful to you. Do not disappoint me!"

Yemo Tian lowered his head and said 'yes' with a low voice.

Clang! The portal base formation of Dark Sun had located the targeted world as well. A Xiu Clan master walked to the formation, grasped in the air and sniffed. But immediately, he took a few steps back, as his face turned slightly dark.

Hurriedly taking out a few antidotal pills, this Xiu Clan old man said to Yemo Luoye in shock, "Your majesty, that should be a ‘water’ world. But the water in that world has a great corrosive power..."

Yemo Luoye and Yemo Tian’s eyes sparkled simultaneously. Yemo Luoye then laughed out and said, "Corrosive power? It’s nothing but a low-degree evolution of the power of devouring. In this case, good, very good... This world is worth for us to spend some time on it."

Large groups of armored Jia Clan warriors rushed into the base formation with big steps.

Almost at the same time when Yemo Luoye’s base formation successfully located the targeted world, a thin and faint darkness was added to the heavy rain in Pan Gu world. All plants touched by the darkness began withering and rotting.

In another manor, the base formation that belonged to High Moon located the targeted world as well.

An experienced Xiu Clan master quickly figured out the overall situation of that world. It was also a water-dominated world. But surprisingly, the water in that world was with a complicated toxicity that could paralyze and eventually kill living creatures.

High Moon people were violent and straightforward. They didn’t care about any toxicity, as they had strong bodies. High Moon warriors marched into the portal, heading to the new world.

A barely visible, colorful glow appeared on the rainwater descending from the sky of Pan Gu world.

Many relatively weaker animals lost their strengths to struggle, being paralyzed and flushed away by the water.

The remaining portal magic formations that belonged to the non-humankind located their targets one after another. Meanwhile, the composition of this restless rain in Pan Gu world became more and

more complicated, more and more lethal.

Chapter 932: A Great Disaster

In the main hall of Yao Mountain City, Ji Hao, Ji Xia, Qing Fu, Shaosi, Man Man, Taisi, Yu Mu, Feng Xing and all the other leaders had gathered up, staring at Di Yantuo.

Confirmed by Di Yantuo, Ji Hao's guess was right.

The non-humankind had conquered countless worlds. Therefore, they knew everything about those potential changes that could happen when two worlds were connected by a portal. Ji Hao only threw one question to Di Yantuo, but Di Yantuo told him everything he knew regarding the experiences summed up by the non-humankind in the past countless years.

Indeed, this continuous heavy rain was related to the portals of the non-humankind.

Pan Jia world was a water-dominated world. Therefore, the dense moisture in Pan Jia world would certainly seep into Pan Gu world, which was a balanced world. If Sky Pillar were not destroyed, the moisture from Pan Jia world would only slightly raise the density of water power of Pan Gu world. As a consequence, the rainy reasons in Pan Gu world might be lengthened for a few days within the next three to five years, but this would be the worst.

However, the Sky Pillar collapsed, and the natural defense of Pan Gu world was almost destroyed. The water pouring down from Pan Jia world turned Pan Gu world into a rainy zone. The rain never stopped for a second. Even worse, the water started to pour from the sky in streams.

"What if we shut down the portal?!" Ji Hao sat in the middle of the hall and asked Di Yantuo.

"We can't!" Tushan old man yelled anxiously, "How much have we spent on that portal? We haven't even earned our money back.

How can we shut it down just like this? We can’t do bad bargains!"

Ji Hao and all the others turned to Tushan old man. The entire hall fell into a deathly silence, without even the slightest sound.

Taisi, who normally knew nothing, abruptly began talking, "Old man, a bad bargain is better than rotting in water, isn’t it?"

Tushan old man’s face twisted. Then, he embarrassedly cupped his hands towards Ji Hao and said, "Sorry, sorry, I didn’t mean it. It came out of my mouth naturally, and I couldn’t help it. I apologize."

Brushing his beard with his fingers, Tushan old man then continued with a darkened face, "But, what would change even if we shut down our portal? The non-humankind still have twelve portals!"

Ji Hao stood up and held his hands behind his body, walking around in the hall.

Tushan old man was right. Even if the portal in Yao Mountain City were shut down, the non-humankind would still be having the twelve portals. Without destroying all those portals, this rain would never stop.

However, destroying those portals would be incredibly difficult. In order to do that, human warriors would have to break into the base of the non-humankind to fight with their lives. For all these years, the humankind had been suppressed by the non-humankind and could barely breathe. How could they possibly defeat the non-humankind under the current situation?

While pondering, Ji Tian suddenly rushed in. He bowed to Ji Hao in panic and shouted, "Shifu, something’s wrong! This rain is poisonous!"

Ji Hao’s look changed in shock. Glancing at the others, he took the lead and rushed out of the hall.

Flying up into the sky while leaving a golden light beam in the

air, Ji Hao flew out of the protective screen of the Heaven and Earth great formation. The rain poured on his face while tens of water streams descended along with a great pressure.

Ji Hao reached out his hands and let the colorful raindrops fall in his hands.

Locking the fingers of his left hand together and casting a waterproof magic, Ji Hao protected himself from the rain. Then, he sent out a stream of power, locked a fist-sized raindrop in his palm, and gave it a closer look.

The raindrop was multicolored. Ji Hao wasn't a master of magical medicines and poisons. He scanned across the raindrop with his spirit blood and found out that the raindrop was toxic. Yet, he couldn't name the toxins in the rain, neither could he tell about their effects.

After all, his body was now even stronger than ordinary human Divine Magi. The toxin might be lethal to ordinary human beings, but it would be completely ineffective to Ji Hao. He wouldn't be harmed even if he drank this drop of rain right now. Therefore, it was difficult for him to know exactly how harmful the rainwater would be.

Fortunately, Yu Mu flew up like a meatball. Ji Han handed the raindrop to him. Yu Mu took it over and flicked his fingers. From the chubby fingers of his, a few thin streams of mist rose, then the color of the raindrop began changing quickly.

Along with a puffing noise, a few strands of mist spurted out from the raindrop, with black, green, blue, and purple colors.

Yu Mu took a long breath and inhaled all these mists, then closed his eyes. He carefully sensed them with his body. A while later, Yu Mu's face darkened. "This toxin is ineffective to Magus Kings and Divine Magi. For Senior Magi, soaking in this water for a long time might cause them illness. For Junior Magi, exposure under this rain would kill them within no more than two months." said Yu

Mu.

Ji Hao’s face turned dark as well. He didn’t know how many Magus Kings and Divine Magi existed among human beings, but he did know that even in Pu Ban City, the main body of the humankind was formed from people under the level of Senior Magi.

In this rain, even Senior Magi would fall ill, and Junior Magi couldn’t last for two months. What about those Novice Magus and ordinary people? They might be killed by the toxin in the rain in half a month or a shorter span of time.

"How could this happen?" Ji Hao raised his head, looking at the sky. The water in Pan Jia world was not toxic, it was especially pure and clear, rich in life-force. Pan Jia world water could even serve better as drinking water than Pan Gu world water.

Since Pan Jia world water couldn’t be toxic, the toxin could only come from the other worlds. Those were connected to Pan Gu world as well through the other portals that belonged to the non-humankind.

Bang! A vulture with the wingspan of over fifteen-meter fell down thudded against the protective screen of the Heaven and Earth great formation and bounced back up a hundred meters high.

The power vibration released from this vulture was disturbed, judging from which, it was as powerful as ordinary Junior Magi.

This vulture was probably starved in its nest, and chose to come out into the rain to seek food. But exposed in the rain for a while, it was affected by the toxin and fell down from the air.

Ji Hao waved his broad sleeve and sent out a strong and soft stream of air that rolled up this vulture. He brought it into the arms of Yu Mu and said, "Try with this bird. See if you can detoxify it!"

Man Man, Shaosi and the others all rushed out. Ji Hao glanced at Qing Fu in concern, as she was the weakest among all, then said hurriedly, "Amma, don’t come out. This rain is indeed toxic. You can’t expose yourself to it for too long!"

Next, Ji Hao transformed into a golden beam of light and flashed across the air, flying towards Pu Ban City. Meanwhile, he shouted, "Yu Mu, you and Amma work together, see if you can concoct an antidote. I’m going to Pu Ban City to meet with Emperor Shun. This time, we’re in a serious trouble...Perhaps, bigger troubles are expecting for us!"

Somehow, Ji Hao had imagined some extremely scary scenes. A toxic rain, how many human beings would it kill?

‘Damn you, Gong Gong, damn you!’

‘And those non-humankind beings, damn you all!’

Chapter 933: Volunteering

Above Pu Ban City, a watery mist was rising. On the ground, ninety-nine white streams extended to ten thousand miles, releasing a strong power vibration. They formed a powerful magic formation that covered the entire Pu Ban City.

Large raindrops mixed with countless water streams poured down, bumping into the great formation based on Pu Ban City. They transformed into a dense watery mist, drifting and coiling in the air. An invisible cover seemed to exist above Pu Ban City. Along the arc-shaped cover, tens of meter thick water streams flowed in all directions, causing muffled clattering noise all the way.

Pu Ban people stood on the broken ground and raised their heads, looking at the thick protective screen above their heads in a daze. On the protective screen, the flowing water was meters deep. One could easily imagine if this magic formation wasn't activated, what would Pu Ban City be like at the moment.

Pu Ban City was protected by a powerful magic formation, but it still ended up like this. It was not hard to imagine how miserable the other areas were.

"What a sin!" Some old people supported their bodies with walking sticks, standing by the soaked farmlands and complaining in sadness. What a sin, those crops were almost ripe, but ruined just like this. How could people live without food?

This season's crops were hopeless now, and life would be poor again for this year.

More despairingly, from around the crops which were soaked in the water, tiny bubbles had been popping out. This rainwater was poisonous! Even if the rain stopped, the soil soaked by toxic water wouldn't be able to grow crops anymore without been cleaned thoroughly. However, the entire Midland was swept across by this rain. All of the soil was toxic now. How could anyone clean and

detoxify the entire Midland?

"What a sin!" Pu Ban people signed deeply. Everyone's heart was now covered in a dense dark cloud, and they were all especially gloomy. Even when facing non-humankind beings, Pu Ban people never doubted their warriors. They believed that human warriors could eventually defeat those damned non-humankind beings. But facing this heavy rain, the confidence and the will of fighting they had was frozen and destroyed. Many had been worrying if the humankind could even survive this great disaster. Even if they could, how much would they lose in this?

Ji Hao transformed into a golden beam of light and flew to above Pu Ban City. A white watery mist blocked his eyesight. He tried to fly into Pu Ban City, but that magic formation stopped him. He couldn't even approach the protective screen created by the magic formation.

Boosting up his power, Ji Hao gave a resonant roar. A few armored human warriors flew up from the watery mist, and on seeing Ji Hao, they quickly bowed and took out a bronze tablet, decorated by an embossment of a tiger head. They waved it downwards, and next, a, three-meter long split showed up on the protective screen.

Ji Hao hurriedly drilled into the split, yet within this short span of time, a large stream of rainwater surged into the screen and poured on a hill down below, making mud splash everywhere. Even a few wide rocks were flushed down the hill.

The rocks fell on the ground, causing thunderous booms. Immediately, a group of human warriors rushed over. Seeing Ji Hao, they raised their heads and looked at that speedily closing split, then sighed together and weakly bowed to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao bowed back, then flew towards the Town Hall.

He was heavyhearted as well. These human warriors were fearless to the non-humankind. They dared to fight and kill, and

even die in battlefields. They would even sing a happy song when perishing together with those non-humankind warriors. But now, the enemies were not living beings, who also had heads and hands, were also wearing armors, and holding weapons. Instead, this time, the enemy was the rain, soft, unbreakable, capable of flowing into every corner in the world.

These warriors had no idea how to deal with this enemy, but the threat that came from this enemy was too lethal and destructive to the entire humankind. These human warriors had their morale lowered greatly. Ji Hao believed that at the moment, even a small troop of non-humankind warriors could easily destroy them.

"Army!"

Ji Hao's heart twitched again, then he sensed a coldness from his entire body.

He thought of those aquatic warriors in Pan Jia world, that great army commanded by Kappa. When all human warriors were exhausted and mentally struck down by this rain, if an aquatic army rose on a great scale and with a strong intent of killing, not weakened even by a little bit, the humankind could never survive!

"Gong Gong, damn you! Damn you!" Ji Hao gnashed his teeth and showed fierceness in his eyes while cursing with a twisted face. With an uncontrollable aura of killing, he rushed into the Town Hall.

In the Town Hall, Emperor Shun was walking in-between two large pillars with a tired face. Thousands of ministers and clan leaders and elders had divided into hundreds of different sized groups, whispering to each other.

A bright light shone in the air, within which, a five-hundred-meter square magic sandbox floated in the air, roughly showing a topographic map of Midland and the shapes of main water veins and mountain ranges in Midland.

This sandbox was indeed magical. Ji Hao saw a dense layer of watery mist was faintly visible in the sandbox, surrounded the entire sandbox. Clearly, this was the actual current situation of Midland.

Ji Hao broke in. Emperor Shun stopped walking immediately, turned around and looked at him.

"Earl Yao, didn’t you head back to Yao Mountain City? What... Did you find something?"

Ji Hao let out a breath, responded with a darkened face, "The rain is toxic. It seems that the non-humankind have already connected all twelve worlds, and if I have guessed right, all the twelve worlds are water-dominated."

Ji Hao quickly told Emperor Shun about all he learned from Di Yantuo.

Some elders from the dragon-kind were on the scene. Therefore, Ji Hao was a bit ashamed to tell everyone about the fact that he had sneakily been to Pan Xi world, ahead of the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind.

Hearing Ji Hao, Emperor Shun and those human leaders glanced at each other, unable to say a word.

Such a severe effect could be delivered after Pan Gu world was connected with other worlds by portals? None of these human leaders knew about this!

Si Wen Ming walked out of the crowd and said seriously, "Ji Hao, are you saying that, if we want to survive this disaster, we have to..."

"We have to destroy the twelve portals that belong to the non-humankind. Apart from this, we have to figure out a way to fix the core of Pan Gu world, to repair the natural defense of this world." said Ji Hao while bitterly nodding.

Emperor Shun clicked his tongue without saying anything.

Breaking the twelve portals of the non-humankind, by risking lives, this might have a slight chance to succeed. But fixing Buzhou Mountain...

How could it be possible? How could it?

Si Xi was sitting in the crowd. Hearing Ji Hao, he stood up and said with a deep and strong voice, "Emperor Shun, first of all, we should control the rain. If the rainwater is harmless, things will still stay controllable for a while. But the rain is toxic, and if we can't control this toxic rain, the humankind would be doomed."

Puffing up his chest, Si Xi continued in that strong voice, "I, Marquis Chong Si Xi, am volunteering to control the water for the whole world."

Emperor Shun and the other ministers nodded delightfully. Emperor Shun smiled and said, "Marquis Chong must be confident to do it. Whatever you need, let us know!"

"Breathing earth!" Si Xi's face twitched and said with a hoarse voice, "We have to isolate our people from this toxic rain. Therefore, I need breathing earth!"

The Town Hall fell into silence. People glanced at each other but couldn't say a word.

Breathing Earth: Translated from Chinese words 息壤 (xīrǎng), also known as Swelling Earth, is a magical substance in Chinese mythology that had a self-expanding ability to continuously grow- which made it particularly effective for use by the legendary god, Yu, in fighting the rising waters of the Great Flood. This Chinese word compounds xī 息 "breathe; cease; rest; grow; multiply" and rǎng 壤 "soil; earth". Noting similarities with earth-diver creation myths. This term appeared a few times in earlier chapters, as 'divine soil'.

Chapter 934: A Gleam of Light

Breathing earth, the pre-world essence of earth, contained a magically great power of creation.

A grain of breathing earth could grow into hundreds of grains, then tens of thousands of grains, without stopping. A handful of breathing earth could become a land. However, breathing earth was especially precious and rare in the mortal world.

Among all members of the alliance of human clans, only Si Xi had a portion of breathing earth, passed down from his ancestors. But before the life-and-death in Pan Xi world began, in order to allow Si Wen Ming to protect himself in Pan Xi world, Si Xi promoted Si Wen Ming to the level of Divine Magi with that breathing earth. That portion of breathing earth merged with Si Wen Ming's body, giving him an immeasurably great power.

That portion of breathing earth was consumed like that. After merging with Si Wen Ming's spirit blood, the pre-world power contained in the breathing earth had already transformed into a part of the after-world body of flesh and blood. By now, even if Si Wen Ming were thrown into a magical cauldron to burn, for the best result, a human-body-shaped piece of crystal would be left by him. But not a single grain of breathing earth could be extracted from his body.

"Breathing earth, breathing earth, breathing earth!" Emperor Shun looked at that enormous sandbox with his heavy eyebrows knitted.

Si Wen Ming's face turned purple-red. He abruptly took a step forward, said slightly hysterically and despairingly, "Amma, do we truly need breathing earth? But, but, even if I abandon this body..."

"Nonsense!" Emperor Shun slapped on Si Wen Ming's forehead and said with a deep voice, "The breathing earth has already

merged with your spirit blood and become a part of your body. It’s no longer breathing earth. What can you possibly do even if you abandon this body of yours?"

Holding his hands behind his body, Emperor Shun took a few circles in the hall with a bitter look, then turned to the few most elderly clan leaders.

Candle Dragon Gui, Wulong Yao and the other few countless years old men had been sitting in a corner of the great hall, with their sparkling eyes fixed on the sandbox, which was showing the entire Midland.

A long while later, Candle Dragon Gui murmured, "I only know how to kill people and tear cities down. Things like farming or controlling the water, I cannot do. But since the rain is toxic, build a dam with breathing earth to pool the water is indeed a good idea, in this emergency situation."

Murmuring for a while, Candle Dragon Gui knitted his eyebrows and continued in a deep voice, "Breathing earth is extremely precious. The breathing earth possessed by You Chong Clan was attained by Emperor Fuxi back then from the heaven. If you ask me where we can still find breathing earth by now, that would be nowhere but the treasury in heaven!"

Once these few words came out of Candle Dragon Gui’s mouth, Wulong Yao laughed bitterly, spread his hands and said, "The treasury in heaven, hehe, one of my ancestors was awarded by divine emperors and invited into the treasury in heaven to select three supreme treasures as his rewards. The three greatest divine treasures of our clan are from the heaven treasury."

Raising his head and recalling for a while, Wulong Yao continued, "Things regarding the treasury in heaven are recorded on a turtle shell, passed down by my ancestors...The place was well-barded, with a scarily powerful defensive magic formation. The magic formation was boundless, and the paths in it were

complicated. With one wrong step, you will die, both in the body and the soul."

Si Xi stood aside and continued with a darkened face, "Even worse...The heaven is now under Gong Gong's control."

The hall fell into a deathly silence once again.

Back then, when the heaven had fallen, with only Kua E and his brothers guarding it, if the alliance of human clans had needs, these poor divine Gods might be willing to sneakily trade some divine treasures in the heaven for some wine and delicious food. Things like this did happen before occasionally.

However, Gong Gong had now controlled the heaven and the entire Heaven and Earth magic formation up there. Zhu Rong and his army encircled the heaven. Yet, he could not take a single step into the heaven.

Facing the power of the divine Heaven and Earth great formation, hiding from Gong Gong and his people, sneaking into the heaven, then into the treasury to find breathing earth, was an impossible mission.

"The Heaven and Earth magic formation!" Emperor Shun's face turned longer, as if he had suddenly grown over a hundred years older.

He walked to the door of the hall, looking at the surging toxic water streams outside the translucent protective screen, gnashed his teeth and said, "Gong Gong is damned...What did human beings do wrong?"

Ji Hao looked at the despairing faces of most of those human leaders in the hall, then murmured with a low voice, "The Heaven and Earth great formation, if we have its blueprint ..."

Emperor Shun stared at Ji Hao, almost madly, with his teeth gnashed so tight that it even caused a grinding noise. Clenching his fist, Emperor Shun said with a hoarse voice, "The Heaven and

Earth formation is a battle formation used by the ancient heaven for awing and suppressing the entire world. It was transformed from the moving trajectories of the great Dao of nature of Pan Gu world. How can we possibly have the blueprint of the Heaven and Earth great formation?"

Ji Hao rubbed his nose and responded with a hoarse voice, "Hmm, the defensive magic formation of my Yao Mountain City is a Heaven and Earth great formation. Kua E and his brothers are nice, so I increased their wages by ten times, with an extra amount of wine and meat. They then threw the blueprint of the Heaven and Earth great formation directly in Yao Mountain...When the constructional work of Yao Mountain City was completed, they forgot to take it back."

"They didn't even take the blueprint seriously, hehe," Ji Hao laughed and continued, "So, I was embarrassed to remind them..."

Including Emperor Shun himself, everyone on the scene had now been staring at Ji Hao with a badly twisted face.

'Are you joking? You must be joking!'

'It is the greatest defensive magic formation of the heaven, the one used for awing and suppressing the entire world, including the mortal world and the netherworld, and destroying the evils. It is the most important magic formation in the world, and combined by the ten most powerful pre-world divine magic formations, it is also the foundation of the heaven. But, did you say that the blueprint of this great formation is in your Yao Mountain City?!'

'Did you say that you attained the blueprint of this great magic formation, the essence of the most important thing of the heaven, with some money, and wine, and meat, which were too insignificant to even be mentioned?!'

'Why didn't Kua E and his brothers just sell the whole heaven?!'

'How lucky is Earl Yao?Seriously, to what extent?'

Those human leaders were screaming in their heads.

"My great heaven!" Emperor Shun laughed out wildly while rushing straight to Ji Hao, spread his arms then hugged Ji Hao tight. He slapped heavily on Ji Hao's back with both hands, even causing a series of thuds.

Si Xi, Si Wen Ming, and the others rushed up altogether, laughing with badly twisted faces, cheering in low voices while wielding their fists and palms, crazily slapping and punching Ji Hao's body.

Ji Hao lost his eyesight temporarily, while his bones were creaking. He was beaten by thousands of human leaders in the hall until he almost vomited blood.

Thrilled for a while, Emperor Shun gave a resonant roar, hearing which, the group of human leaders walked back to their positions and lined up orderly, looking at Emperor Shun.

Emperor Shun pulled out the Xuanyuan sword and shouted, "People, this is a destructive disaster to our humankind. I hope we can combine our hearts and powers to conquer it!"

Orders were given one after another, including sending a strong army to spy on the non-humankind, and asking the appearances of powerful beings from each clan, who had been living in seclusion, to help to stabilize the situation.

But the most important order was given to Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming

'At all costs, stint no sacrifice... Sneak into the heaven and steal the breathing earth!'

Chapter 935: Asking Help From the Sect

Activating the Heaven and Earth golden bridge, Ji Hao transformed into a golden light, swishing in the air unsettlingly.

He had the blueprint of the Heaven and Earth great formation, but so what? The great formation was incredibly powerful and mysterious, with unpredictable changes. If it were a changeless, simple formation, Ji Hao might be able to safely enter and exit that formation with the blueprint. However, Gong Gong had intruded the heaven, and at the moment, the heaven was completely under his control. With a slight carelessness, he would be discovered by Gong Gong, and once the great formation was activated, Ji Hao would be crushed to death, even if he clearly knew about all possible changes of the great formation.

There was a vast difference between a magic formation with and without a controller.

Not to mention the number of people Gong Gong brought into the heaven to guard, or the elite Water God warriors that had now been hiding in the heaven, as long as the great formation was activated, all intruders would be killed immediately. If the humankind sent a large number of people into the heaven, and if they triggered the great formation, all these people would die in vain. But if the humankind only send one or two people into the heaven, once they encountered Gong Gong's people and fell into an encirclement, they would die as well.

Struggling... Ji Hao was struggling.

The Breathing earth kept in heaven was now the most imperative treasure needed by the alliance of human clans. But, Ji Hao didn't have the confidence to bring it out of heaven.

The dimly golden divine light flashed across the air as Ji Hao flew at his highest speed. He left Midland, heading to Southern Wasteland.

The starry void was also suffused with a watery mist. Water drops merged together, became streams in the void, then turned into floating brooks, flowing into rapidly flowing gray rivers. Pushed by the star powers in the void, white waves roared while those great rivers surged windingly. Loud water clattering noise could be heard from everywhere, as fierce water streams flew all over the void.

Ji Hao flew straight, violently crossing numerous roaring, rapidly flowing, floating rivers. Ji Hao saw patrolling fleets of the non-humankind many times. Enormous metal ships were connected by chains, slowly moving in the water with difficulty.

Some Jia Clan warriors with bad tempers stood on the heads of their ships, angrily yelling and shouting towards the void.

Water, boundless water wrapped the fleets entirely up. It disabled those non-humankind warriors from clearly seeing the surrounding areas and made it hard to breathe for them. These Jia Clan warriors felt that they were slowly suffocating to death.

Seeing these patrolling warriors' miserable looks, Ji Hao was curious. How did non-humankind beings in Liang Zhu City deal with this ceaseless heavy rain?

The dim golden light beam was swift, Ji Hao had squeezed all of his power out to fly as fast as possible. Rushing all the way and after shattering two large and dense spheres of watery mist, he finally came to the sky above Southern Wasteland. Southern Wasteland was enveloped in the persistent heavy rain, with countless water streams pouring down from the sky, pressing the towering trees in the forest down to the ground.

Muffled booms could be heard from everywhere. Flying mountains couldn't bear the impacts of those water streams, slantingly falling down from the air and smashing on the ground. Many mountains were flattened and sent mud and broken rocks up in puffs.

More shockingly, many active volcanos in Southern Wasteland that were used to spurting dense smoke and fire day and night with lava boiling in the volcano vents, had their fires dimmed under this heavy rain. The rain and the boiling lava clashed with each other, causing loud sizzling noises rising from the volcano vents along with hot steams.

Because of the conflict between the coldness and hotness, all of a sudden, a few volcanos exploded. Glowing red lava splashed all over the sky, but soon was turned into black rocks by the rain. They heavily thudded on the ground, with white steam rising from them in streams.

Once Ji Hao broke into Southern Wasteland, a red silhouette flashed across the air. That was Yu Yu, who showed up abruptly before Ji Hao's face with a gloomy look.

"Are you here because of this rain?" Yu Yu had a human-shaped five-colored silhouette seized in his hand, struggling desperately, while he asked Ji Hao straightforwardly.

"Wise as you, Shifu, I am here because of this heavy rain." Ji Hao glanced at the five-colored human-shaped silhouette in Yu Yu's hands and realized that the sky devils in Southern Wasteland were actually not wiped out, which surprised him. Ji Hao then quickly told Yu Yu about the decisions made by the alliance of the human clan.

Yu Yu's eyes shone with a bright light. He glanced at the five-colored silhouette in his hand. Then, fierce sword powers surged out from his five fingers and suddenly penetrated that silhouette, turning it into nothingness. Seeing this, Ji Hao's heart even ached.

"The ancient heaven...The Heaven and Earth great formation... Hehe, Gong Gong, he is indeed daring." Yu Yu narrowed his eyes, quickly rubbing his chin with his left hand. Then, he gave Ji Hao a sideway glance and said, "You and that kid, Si Wen Ming, even with the blueprint of the great formation and a group of powerful

human beings, I’m afraid you still won’t be able to enter and exit safely."

Ji Hao hurriedly kneeled and kowtowed to Yu Yu while saying, "Therefore, I came to ask for help, my dear Shifu."

Yu Yu pursed his lips, until his mouth looked like a thin line, as sharp as the sword edge. With narrowed eyes, he pondered for a while, then abruptly raised his head, glanced at the west and said, "You came at a good time..."

Murmuring something confusedly, Yu Yu then continued with a bland tone, "Back then, I signed an agreement with the other powerful beings in this world. Because of that, I cannot step in any human affairs unless the humankind is facing a destructive disaster."

Pausing briefly, Yu Yu smiled and said, "But your brother Po, and your other brothers and sisters, have no such worries. Alright, just let them go with you!"

Giving a cold smile, Yu Yu then carried on with a dark look, "Be careful when you do it. If you encounter any enemy, be quick and neat. Do not show any mercy. Otherwise, you might cause yourselves extra troubles and risks."

Ji Hao paused slightly. He realized that Yu Yu meant more than he said.

Thinking of what Yu Yu said just now, Ji Hao took a glance at the west, then slowly nodded and said ‘yes’.

Yu Yu then grabbed Ji Hao while pointing a finger at the golden bridge which floated above his head. A dim golden divine light rose straight into the sky, following a loud space-tearing noise. Within a single second, Yu Yu brought Ji Hao to a boundless space, which was suffused by coiling purple mist streams.

"Ah, this golden bridge is indeed extraordinary. Normally, it would take me three to five days to come to my big brother’s dojo.

But with this thing, we made it within a second." Yu Yu praised the power of the golden bridge in surprise.

All this while Ji Hao stared at Yu Yu stunned, couldn’t say a word.

Despite Yu Yu’s incomprehensible power, he had to spend three to five days to come to Priest Dachi’s dojo. How far was this dojo of Priest Dachi from their world?

Standing on a purple cloud, Yu Yu shouted at the boundless purple mist, then told everything about the endless rain that was happening in the human world.

A Taiji-pattern-like sphere of purple mist showed up while spinning slowly. Next, the purple mist sphere split into two and let a yellow and black, exquisite tower flying out.

Yu Yu grasped this small tower, then grabbed Ji Hao with another hand and activated the golden bridge once again. A second later, they arrived in another vast space, which was filled with a golden light and a warm power.

Murmuring a few words to the golden light, a mushroom-shaped glow gradually showed and split, sending out a gray-colored long streamer, flying slowly towards Yu Yu and Ji Hao. Strong streams of power had been releasing from the long streamer.

Yu Yu caught the long streamer, then took Ji Hao and flashed away. First, they returned to Southern Wasteland and picked up Po and Gui Ling. After that, they took a trip to Eastern Wasteland, Northern Wasteland, Western Wasteland and a few places in the starry void, within the next quarter of an hour.

Chapter 936: Work Together

The bottom half of Buzhou Mountain stood in the world, with a crystal altar standing on it. Elder Destiny stood in front of the altar, cut open the chest of a three-headed boa dragon, took out its heart and placed on it. Followed by Elder Destiny's moves, tens of thousands of holy spirits and ancestor souls from Pan Xi world moved together and beheaded countless fierce wild beasts, which were weakened by the rain.

A strong gale rose and rolled up the blood of these beasts that sprayed on the altar. Swoosh! A purple stream of fire rose from the altar. The water-tank-sized fire stream rose to thousands of meter high. Meanwhile, the raindrops in the air were frozen by the coldness released from the purple fire, falling from the sky.

The compass of destiny floated above Elder Destiny's head. The complicatedly structured compass had been spinning slowly, while strands of purple fire puffed out of the altar, drilling into the compass.

Elder Destiny incanted a spell with a low voice and began walking around the compass. As the highest being of the Dao of destiny of Pan Xi world, this was the first time for him to perform an offering ceremony in Pan Gu world, to summon those fallen ancient, powerful beings of Pan Gu world, borrow their great powers that lingered in this world, and help himself.

Sensing those terrifying and evil streams of powers surge over, Elder Destiny somehow felt that he had grown into a thousands of meters tall giant, and every slight move made by him could now destroy the whole universe.

Narrowing his eyes, Elder Destiny took a deep breath, then raised his arms, pointing his fingers at the sky.

In the middle of the compass, a misty spell symbol slightly vibrated, releasing a hair-thin, dim beam of light. It momentarily

flashed across the long distance, straight into the archway outside the frontal gate of the heaven.

A magical sense of power that couldn't be sensed by ordinary people spread out quickly. The circulation of destiny power around the gate of the heaven was disordered completely. Within this short moment, the sensing ability of the Heaven and Earth great formation in heaven to the outer world was weakened to an extreme level.

A crushing counterforce roared down towards Elder Destiny. Meanwhile, above the half Buzhou Mountain, a water-tank-sized dark cloud silently emerged, with thunder rumbling in it. However, Elder Destiny nimbly darted away. At the same time, over ten straw dolls swiftly flew out of his sleeves. These straw dolls would take the counterforce for him.

Those were substitute dolls made by Candle Dragon Gui himself, with dragon-soul grasses picked from the graveyard of the ancestors of Candle Dragon Clan. This kind of substitute dolls could perfectly remove ill fortune and save people from fatal dangers.

The dark cloud moved slightly. Next, all those substitute dolls were wrapped up by a thin layer of lightning bolts, then being shredded within a blink of an eye.

Elder Destiny remained perfectly unharmed. He took three steps backward, waved his broad sleeves and quickly dispelled the great power gathered on the altar.

"Master, this is all I can do." Elder Destiny looked at the sky worryingly.

What he could do was nothing more than weakening the sensing ability of the Heaven and Earth great formation in the heaven as much as possible, for seventy-two hours. Beclouding the power of destiny, this was extremely dangerous. Even though those substitute dolls had taken the first wave of counterforce for him,

Elder Destiny could only ensure the safety for three days.

As the highest leader of an intelligent race from an independent world, and the owner of the fortune of a world with the compass of destiny as a pre-world supreme treasure, Elder Destiny was the only one capable of weakening the sensing ability of the great formation temporarily.

But with his power and abilities, he could only ensure the safety for three days.

Once the compass of destiny began spinning, Ji Hao, who had been waiting outside the gate of the heaven, moved. He gave a deep roar and activated the golden bridge. Then, Po, Gui Ling, Jin Ling and Wu Dang, moved together. Jin Ling and Wu Dang were both Yu Yu's disciples. Yu Yu invited them over from the western Wasteland and Northern Wasteland to help Ji Hao.

The four famous disciples under Yu Yu's guidance joined their hands and sent out water-clear streams of Yu Yu's divine light into the golden bridge. A dim golden light stream spread out and flashed through the archway which was controlled by the great formation, penetrating into the deeper areas of the heaven.

The Heaven and Earth golden bridge was able to move across spaces and break all kinds of seals. Now, four powerful beings had combined their powers and activated seventy to eighty percent of the power of the golden bridge. Before they came up, Ji Hao merged the blueprint of the Heaven and Earth great formation with the golden bridge. Therefore, this dim golden light stream silently and swiftly penetrate into the great formation like a thin flowing stream of liquid silver.

Seals were broken one after another, magic formation cores were bypassed, and within a couple of breaths, the golden bridge reached to the central area of the great formation.

Ji Hao turned around and glanced at Si Wen Ming, who was wearing a simple flax cloth and carrying a long sword, looking like

a simple and honest middle-aged man. Si Wen Ming smilingly slapped on Ji Hao's shoulder and said, "Let's do it! Breaking into the heaven without a permission...If we succeed, our descendants can brag about it for countless years!"

Ji Hao laughed.

If the mission was accomplished, surely their descendants could brag about it for thousands of years. But if they failed, hmm, how many of them could leave safely? Ji Hao couldn't tell for sure.

"Go!" said Ji Hao while pointing his finger forward. The golden bridge released a golden light that wrapped the group of people up, momentarily turning everyone's bodies into light. Through the safe path opened by the golden bridge, this dim golden light stream flew into the heaven.

Before the archway, Zhu Rong's face was twisted, with his eye corners twitching intensively.

"A bunch of ba*tards, they got in... They truly got in! The Heaven and Earth great formation, the ancient heaven, they got in just... like this!" Zhu Rong looked at where Ji Hao and the others disappeared, abruptly slapped on his own lap and yelled, "Ah! They can even get in through the Heaven and Earth great formation so easily! Then, the treasury of my Zhu Rong Family...I have to find a secret place to rebuild the treasury!"

The Heaven and Earth great formation wasn't triggered. Instead, it was simply staying vigilant to any possible attack. It was just like a group of fierce wild beasts which were in a deep sleep; as long as one stayed away from their claws and teeth and restrain one's powers, one would be able to sneak through their sharp teeth and claws safely.

Colorful clouds surged in all directions like waves, while a warm mist rose with a splendid glow. The golden bridge was magical, bringing Ji Hao and the others straight to a small square which was paved with white jade and embossed with dragons and

phoenixes, through nine divine archways and thousands of seals and magic screens.

This square was relatively small, but still, it was thousands of metes squared in area. Cyan-colored buildings stood on all four sides of the square, layers and layers, and no edges of these blocks could be seen.

Ji Hao sent the golden bridge back into his body, helplessly pointed at the surrounding area and said, "This square is surrounded by thirty-six thousand buildings, all belonging to the department of treasury. No one knows where breathing earth is."

Po raised his eyebrows, laughed and said, "People call me Priest Po, but ‘treasury’ also sounds like a good name."

Ji Hao glanced at Po, and at the same time, Jin Ling, who had a beautiful face yet with a cold and serious look, threw Po a sideway glance and said, "Big brother, don’t be naughty. We’re on mission."

Narrowing her eyes, Jin Ling continued in a bland tone, "Since we don’t know where breathing earth is, we shall just take it all."

Ji Hao was shocked, while Si Wen Ming’s face began twitching.

Only Man Man, who insisted on following Ji Hao up to the heaven, abruptly clapped her hands and laughed out loud as she shouted, "This sister is right. How many treasures are kept in this place? Let’s take them all!"

’Po’ is translated from the Chinese word ‘宝’, which literally means treasure.

Chapter 937: Violently Break

In the heaven, Divine Pivot Hall...

In the dark hall, countless colorful light spots transformed into countless different sized swirls, floating in the air and spinning slowly like tightly biting gears. Occasionally, some light spots would burst with a dazzling sphere of light, and countless images would flash across the light sphere.

Xiang Liu was wearing a long black robe, proudly sitting in the middle of the hall, smilingly looking at these spinning light spots. This was the main control hub of the Heaven and Earth great formation. In here, one could watch every corner of the heaven, and could also freely trigger all seals and magic formations. A while ago, it was Xiang Liu who controlled the great formation, released the divine thunder and broke Buzhou Mountain.

Being able to control the entire Heaven and Earth great formation in heaven, and through this great formation, control the lives and deaths of countless living creatures, this made Xiang Liu feel that his life was even sublimed.

"People, those people." Xiang Liu narrowed his eyes and laughed, shaking his head while raising a golden cup that was decorated with nine embossed dragons. He took a sip of the delicious countless years old wine, then showed his teeth in happiness.

Back in the ancient times, only divine emperors could taste this wine. Xiang Liu was only an enormous spirit creature living in the mortal world. He hadn’t even seen a vintage wine like this. But now, the entire heaven was under his control. He could drink whatever he wanted, who dared to say no?

"Human beings, hmm, tasty." Xiang Liu narrowed his eyes, murmuring some scary words with a creepy low voice, "Not only tasty, those young human girls, hehe, that beauty is also great."

"As for the power of their faith..." Xiang Liu scornfully snorted.

Looking around for a while, as if he was afraid that Gong Gong might hear him murmuring, Xiang Liu lowered his voice further and continued, "Is the power of the faith of human beings truly that great? Can it really strengthen souls and allow one to quickly reach the immortal level? This isn't a lie of Dishi Cha, is it?"

"Hmm," Followed by a cold hum, a black stream of water mist flew in through the crack between the door and its frame. The watery mist roared, and next, Wuzhi Qi walked out from it and sat down in front of Xiang Liu.

"What have you been thinking about?" Wuzhi Qi's eyes sparkled brightly as stared at Xiang Liu.

"About a route of retreat." Xiang Liu remained silent for a while and continued slowly, "This time, we have offended everyone. If Gong Gong succeeds, how many benefits can we get? And if he fails...What would happen to us?"

Wuzhi Qi's pupils shone brightly with a cold light as he leaned his head, looked at Xiang Liu for a while, laughed and said, "I thought you have always been the most loyal follower of Gong Gong. But surprisingly, you too have so many thoughts in your head."

Xiang Liu carelessly took a big sip of the wine and responded, "Snakes are born to be cautious and suspicious, this is my nature. I spent great efforts to live till today. I am actually very afraid of death, you know?"

Wuzhi Qi rubbed his own scalp and murmured in a low voice, "You think you're the only one be afraid of death? I am as well. To be honest, I acted so violently and brutally before, because I wanted everyone to be scared of me, so that they wouldn't dare to offend me. Then, I could feel safe."

Sighing slightly, Wuzhi Qi continued murmuring to himself,

"The longer you live, the more you're afraid of death."

Pausing briefly, he put his mouth near Xiang Liu's ear and said, "We've been serving Gong Gong Family for so many generations. This Gong Gong now, do you think he..."

Xiang Liu clenched his fingers, as a dazzling light sphere was squeezed out of the golden cup held in his hand. Followed by an ear-piercing metal-crushing noise, the exquisite golden cup was twisted in his hand, completely out of shape.

"Whatever, we swore back then!" Xiang Liu dropped the twisted golden cup, lied on the ground and spread his arms and legs. Looking at those rotating light spots, he said, "If we didn't make that vow, I would have run away with my wives and kids long ago. I was a snake from the Chaos, I was all alone. But now, I have millions of descendants..."

Wuzhi Qi looked at Xiang Liu with a dark face and said, "Who told you to like human girls and make...so many descendants?"

Xiang Liu twisted his neck and responded with a strange voice, "And you didn't? Why do you have to pretend in front me?"

The two of them looked at each other in the eyes for a while, then subconsciously put their heads together and began whispering to each other. A while later, Wuzhi Qi asked in a low voice, "Do you think we should talk to Snake Xiu, that old thing too?"

Xiang Liu snorted coldly and responded in a low voice, "Snake Xiu is crude and rash, he can't do detailed plans. See what he's doing right now? Such a humiliation to all of us. Let him be, let him die. But Kun Peng, that guy is smart and cunning. We are all smart, and together, we might find a way of survival!"

Countless light spots drifted and spun in the hall. Xiang Liu and Wuzhi Qi believed that the Heaven and Earth great formation was supremely powerful, that no living creature could ever break into the heaven. Therefore, neither of them noticed a different glow

shone on some of these light spots.

"Shh!" On the square, Man Man yelled in excitement, and Shaosi hurriedly covered Man Man's mouth with her hand. Then, she straightened her forefinger before her lips. Man Man popped out her eyes, closed her mouth immediately and nodded carefully.

Ji Hao turned around and said to the group of people that followed behind him with a low voice, "Alright, be careful, everyone. In this place, dangers can be in everywhere. If we get too noisy, I'm afraid..."

Before Ji Hao finished his speech, a thunderous boom could be heard, and the ground vibrated slightly. In the distance, a great hall that belonged to the department of treasury quaked slightly. The golden roof tiles of the hall began shaking intensively, causing a series of clattering noises.

A bright and resonant voice shouted, "Kids, work harder! Haha, break this godforsaken door. For the treasures inside, there will be a share for you!"

Hissing loudly, that voice then continued proudly, "Idiots, this is the heaven, it's guarded by the Heaven and Earth great formation! Who can possibly ruin our master's plan? Why do we have to waste our time on taking turns guarding in the Divine Pivot Hall? Why don't we just search for treasures?!"

"This is the heaven, fools! Even a pillar in this place can be enough for a million of your clansmen to live happily for hundreds of years if you can carry it down and turn it into jade coins. Hurry, hurry up! Open this bloody door, let's see what's inside!"

Ji Hao and the others glanced at each other, then hurriedly and carefully moved towards where the voice came from.

Hiding behind another hall and sneakily reaching his head out, Ji Hao saw Snake Xiu's enormous body floating in midair, commanding thousands of warriors with black armors to smash

the door of the hall with a giant golden pillar.

The door was incredibly heavy and thick. Thousands of warriors at the level of Magus Kings and above carried a three meters in radius golden pillar and smashed into the door over and over again. The entire hall was shaking while fire sparkles were sent up against the door. But the door showed no sign of opening.

Finally, Snake Xiu was enraged. He roared out, then kicked a few of his warriors flying away and carried that pillar up himself.

Chapter 938: The Directory of Treasures

Snake Xiu smashed the door himself. With his immeasurably great strength, a dense purple smoke was sent up from the door along with dazzling fire sparkles. Golden roof tiles of the hall couldn't stand the strong impact anymore and fell off one after another.

Ji Hao clearly saw that the door of this hall didn't have any magic seal. Instead, it was locked in a physical and clumsy way, which was also the most dependable way.

The door was thickly covered with stellar maps. With a mysterious power, numerous fist-sized gemstone stars had been moving slowly, along perfectly organized tracks. One had to move these stars according to the right sequence to open this door. Once these stars were moved to the right position, the giant and heavy latch behind the door would unlock automatically.

Ji Hao scanned across the doors of all buildings in this area with his spirit power. These doors were three-hundred meters tall, three meters thick, and all locked in an ancient, physical way. But each one of these doors was also under the protection of the Heaven and Earth great formation.

Therefore, Snake Xiu could either patiently crack the hidden passwords in the stellar maps on the door, put each star in the right position and open the door patiently, or violently destroy the protection of the Heaven and Earth magic formation and break the door to attain the treasures inside.

Obviously, Snake Xiu wasn't willing to use his brain. He had already shut down the magic protection of these halls and weakened the defense of these halls to an extreme point, then started violently attacking the door.

Thunderous booms could be heard without an end. Smashed by Snake Xiu, the large metal door, which remained motionless under

the fierce attacks launched by thousands of powerful Magus Kings, was dented and twisted. At last, followed by a thunderous bang, the door frame and a large piece of wall collapsed, being sent into the hall.

"Haha! Go, go, let's get in and see! According to this directory, materials from ancient divine dragons are kept in this hall, including millions of dragon pearls!" Snake Xiu waved his hands in excitement while conveniently throwing the golden pillar away.

"No one is allowed to take anything without my permission! All treasures are mine! I get to chose the first, then you!" Snake Xiu blinked his eyes, fiercely stared at his warriors and said, "Remember, no one can take anything without my permission! Those dragon pearls can largely improve my power. Whoever dares to take any of those without permission, I'll eat your whole family!"

Thousands of warriors under Snake Xiu's command growled out together and impatiently rushed into the hall.

Snake Xiu proudly took out a three-foot-long, one-foot-wide jade board. Seven-colored mist coiled around the jade board as it glowed with a faint clear light. Along with Snake Xiu's voice, golden, ancient style divine spell symbols were released from the jade board. Countless fist-sized divine spell symbols sparkled quickly in the air, seeming to be made of pure gold.

"Hmm, things kept in this hall are materials from the dragon-kind."

Clicking his tongue, Snake Xiu said, "The spirit blood of a nine-headed feather dragon is also kept in here? Hehe, Xiang Liu, oh Xiang Liu, why do you have to pretend to be high-hearted? The spirit blood of a nine-headed feather dragon can improve your power by a hundred percent at last. But you were scorned to come to claw open the treasury with me!"

"Good, good, good, the spirit blood of the nine-headed feather

dragon is mine too. Hmm, according to the number, it should be in this hall!"

While murmuring, Snake Xiu turned around and quickly pointed at the few halls behind him.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. Was that jade board the directory of treasures of the heaven? Which meant, the storage location of each treasure that belonged to the heaven was clearly recorded on it, right?

It should be so. The ancient heaven was unimaginably powerful, and perfectly organized. So, every single treasure that belonged to the heaven should be recorded in detail. Heaven blesses, Snake Xiu sent this directory straight to Ji Hao.

Although Man Man suggested to take all treasures in the heaven, and this suggestion was rather tempting, the most important thing at the moment was to find breathing earth and let Si Xi stop the toxic rain that had been causing harm to the entire world. Therefore, finding breathing earth as soon as possible was what Ji Hao should do right now.

Ji Hao activated his spirit power and told everyone else about his discovery.

Po and the others nodded. Shaosi flashed across space and teleported herself to before Snake Xiu’s face.

Snake Xiu was concentratedly searching for the treasures useful to him. He didn’t even think that he would be attacked in the heaven, which was covered in the great formation. Shaosi easily snatched the directory from him, then flashed back to beside Ji Hao.

"Enem..." Snake Xiu opened his mouth and attempted to warn the others. But before he finished the first word, Po had already shown up right in front o him.

Po didn’t use any weapon. Instead, both of his fists zipped out, as

swiftly and heavily as a pair of shooting stars. A punch landed in Snake Xiu's mouth while another one thudded against his chest.

The punch struck in Snake Xiu's mouth crushed all his teeth and sent his tongue directly into his throat. Poor Snake Xiu, he couldn't breathe, and his face had even turned blue. He could not make any other sound either.

The punch that landed on Snake Xiu's chest was like a bolt of lightning. A destructive power burst inside his chest, as if a volcano erupted inside his body. The power flow of Snake Xiu was disordered, and consequently, Snake Xiu couldn't inhale any air. Countless scales had already emerged from his skin, yet, no matter how hard he tried, he couldn't transform his body back into the shape of an enormous snake.

Gui Ling and Po moved simultaneously. Gui Ling flashed behind Snake Xiu, and with her pair of hands glowing with dim black thunderbolts, she slapped fiercely on Snake Xiu's back. A buzzing noise could be heard without an end. In that very moment, tens of thousands of pre-world water thunderbolts blasted inside Snake Xiu's body, tearing his internal organs apart.

Almost at the same time, Jin Ling, the one with a serious face, flew to Snake Xiu. The dragon and tiger Ruyi in her hand smashed straight down onto Snake Xiu's head like a towering mountain. Snake Xiu's skull was dented while his brain splashed out, looking like thousands of pink peach blossoms.

Wu Dang smiled and quickly rubbed her hands. Next, tens of white sword lights spurted out from around Snake Xiu's body, rotating around him like a whirlwind. A short while later, blood sprayed out, as Snake Xiu was cut into countless pieces.

Snake Xiu was indeed a famous Chaos beast who lived till today, ever since the prehistorical era. Suffering such a severe injury, his shredded body still squirmed and suddenly transformed into thousands of small snakes, darting out in an attempt to escape.

But Po, Gui Ling, Jin Ling and Wu Dang laughed together and said in an extra scornful tone, "A rice-sized pearl can indeed glow, but how dare you play such a lowly trick in front of us?"

The famous four disciples of Yu Yu waved their hands. Thunderbolts with four different colors merged together and transformed into a dazzling and sizzling cover that enveloped the thousands of small snakes. Next, Deep thunder rumbles could be heard as all those snakes were turned into smoke.

Feng Xing pulled his bow open. Countless arrow lights flashed across the air like shooting stars and covered the entire hall. Those warriors under Snake Xiu's command, who rushed into the hall, had their bodies penetrated by countless arrow lights, and were killed right on the spot, before they could even turn around and take a glance.

Ji Tian, Ji Di and the other twenty-two disciples of Ji Hao raised magic formation flags, which were glowing with starlights. Starlight rose in streams and transformed into an invisible screen that enveloped the surrounding few halls and stopped all sounds and power vibrations from spreading out.

Meanwhile, Ji Hao took over the directory from Shaosi's hands and pointed his finger at it while silently incanting a spell. Instantly, a series of golden divine spell symbols emerged, and he instantly found the hall where the breathing earth was kept.

Chapter 939: Sit and Watch

The heaven, in the Divine Origin Pool.

Gong Gong sat on a throne that belonged to a divine emperor, decorated with a hundred embossed dragons. He was laughing out loud with his eyes were fixed on a blood-red divine light sphere.

Within the light sphere, a strong and muscular man silhouette was faintly visible. Magical streams of light had been driving into the silhouette's head. If one listened carefully, one would hear the silhouette moaning in pain.

A short while later, the blood-red light sphere dissipated suddenly, exposing the figure of a strong and handsome man in a golden armor.

A five-colored cloud emerged from the air, steadily carrying the man up. Between the man's eyebrows, a golden light sparkled brightly. He opened his eyes, expressionlessly looking at Gong Gong.

Carefully looking at Gong Gong for a while, the man put the long golden spear held in his hand on his back. A pair of tiny dragon claws opened on his back, which grasped the long spear.

This man then kneeled on the five-colored cloud on one knee, politely saluted to Gong Gong and said, "Your Majesty, I am Thunder Tooth, belonging to the thunder department of the ministry of war of heaven."

Following Thunder Tooth's moves, a three meters wide golden thunder light spread out from behind his body, rippling like water. Within the strong golden light, a fierce-looking saber-toothed cat was faintly visible. Along with a sizzling noise, the image of the saber-toothed cat dissipated gradually, leaving its pair of long and sharp teeth to transform into two golden lightning bolts that swiftly rotated around Thunder Tooth.

"Thunder Tooth, from the thunder department, the ministry of war!" Gong Gong grinned, "Good, good, good, you even have a name. You have saved me a lot of time... Good, good, wonderful! Wait aside for my order!"

Thunder Tooth expressionlessly stood up, swung his arm backward and grabbed his long spear. Then, the colorful cloud drifted, carrying him to Gong Gong's side. Thunder Tooth stood as straight and steadily as a mountain, completely motionless.

Same as Thunder Tooth, over a thousand strong men had been standing beside Gong Gong, each with a divine light spot glistering between the eyebrows. Behind their bodies, were dazzling thunderbolts, roaring hurricanes, rippling water, shining golden blades...They were with different powers, but every single one of them had been releasing a great sense of power, judging from which, they had all reached the stage of peak-level Divine Magus.

A black sphere of watery mist floated next to Gong Gong, within which, River Earl's pale face was partly visible.

Seeing Thunder Tooth stand into the group, River Earl laughed delightfully and said, "Master, I didn't think the secret magic taught by Dishi Cha could truly allow you to wake up these new divine Gods ahead of time. But shamefully, being waken up like this, they are less powerful than they should be."

Gong Gong chucked, looked at Thunder Tooth and the other strong men in pleasure, shook his head and said, "No, no, no, they're only the lowest grade divine Gods in the Divine Origin Pool. We can afford to lose some low-end powers, what's the big deal? They're peak-level Divine Magi... That's more than enough."

Conveniently pointing at a few tremendous light spheres in the deeper area of the Divine Origin Pool, Gong Gong happily laughed, "They are the foundation! In the future, I will be relying on them to rule this Pan Gu world. As long as we can wake them up... hehe, how can the powers of ordinary warriors like Thunder Tooth ever

compare with theirs?

While Gong Gong was laughing, a tens of thousands of meter in radius sphere of fiery light had an enormous silhouette visible in it.

Sparkling beams of light had been flashing around inside the fiery light, drilling into the head of that enormous silhouette. Meanwhile, that silhouette had been roaring deeply while murmuring, "Zhu Rong...Fire generates everything in the world... Zhu Rong."

Gong Gong suddenly leaped up from his seat, staring at that enormous fiery light sphere in both shock and surprise as he said, "Zhu...Zhu Rong? Haha, is the one inside this light the new original Fire God, Zhu Rong?! Haha, how can I be so lucky?!"

Impatiently rubbing his hands, Gong Gong raised his head and yelled at the sky, "Wake up, original Fire God! Hahaha, when you wake up, I want you to kill the current Fire God yourself! Ahaha, haha, I can’t wait, just wake up!"

The silhouette in the fiery light abruptly opened its eyes. Those eyes were blazing with a raging fire, like a pair of erupting volcano vent, fixed on Gong Gong.

"Emperor...South Emperor, the Emperor of Redness...Divine Emperor...I...Zhu Rong..."

Inside the fiery light, the new original Fire God was still in an incubation stage, and was mumbling. Gong Gong and River Earl glanced at each other in confusion. A while later, River Earl murmured, "Back in the ancient heaven, did the throne of the South Emperor belong to the original Fire God? I am nothing but a God of mountains, so I don’t know much about the position assignment in heaven."

Gong Gong was confused as well. He turned around and looked at that tremendous fiery light sphere, slowly shaking his head.

Gong Gong and River Earl were about to start a discussion

regarding which family of Gods possessed the throne of the South Emperor back in the ancient heaven. But all of a sudden, among those of Water God warriors who were guarding inside the Divine Origin Pool, over ten-thousand fell down with blood gushing out from their nose, eyes, ears and mouth. These warriors were treading on clouds and holding long spears, but suddenly, they vomited blood and died simultaneously for an unknown reason. They fell into the pool and bumped into those light spheres. Followed by the rumbles of thunders and the roars of winds, over ten-thousand elite Water God warriors were turned into strands of smoke by those light spheres. They couldn't even make a scream.

"This..."

Gong Gong popped out his eyes in a great shock and confusion, "What happened?"

Not like him, River Earl screamed out in panic, "Snake Xiu died! Snake Xiu, Xiang Liu, Snake Gou, these snakes are born to be suspicious. They always worry that their warriors might betray them. Therefore, they've been controlling their warriors with spirit poisonous pills. All these warriors were close guards of Snake Xiu. They died, that means Snake Xiu has fallen. The poisonous pills in these warriors' bodies exploded, so these warriors died along with Snake Xiu!"

Gong Gong's face couldn't help but twitch instantly.

Snakes were innately suspicious creatures. Xiang Liu, Snake Xiu, Snake Gou, these powerful spirit snakes under Gong Gong's command never trusted their warriors. Therefore, when clansmen from the clans ruled by them grew up and decided to join the armies under their commands, they would control all these new warriors with their spirit poisonous pills.

If they stayed safe, nothing would happen. But once they died, all warriors controlled by them with spirit poisonous pills would die.

Over ten-thousand elite warriors bled and died all of a sudden,

and they were all under the command of Snake Xiu. This proved the death of Snake Xiu.

"Master!" River Earl turned around, nervously looked at Gong Gong and said, "Snake Xiu is plundering the treasury...He died, this means we have intruders. They broke into the heaven. They must be from Emperor Shun's side. But... how did they get in?"

Gong Gong stood up, took a few circles around the throne, then sat back into it.

He narrowed his eyes and looked at that quickly squirming, huge fiery light sphere. He said with a deep voice, "Let them be. Go tell Xiang Liu and Wuzhi Qi to stay in their positions. The other areas don't matter, as long as the Divine Origin Pool stays safe...Let them do whatever they want!"

Hearing Gong Gong, River Earl nodded slowly.

Outside another treasury hall, Ji Hao carried up that golden pillar, which was used by Snake Xiu earlier, and smashed on the door with all of his power.

Followed a thunderous bang, the door slightly vibrated, then clouds of purple mist and fire sparkles rose.

Chapter 940: Henggong Bars the Road

Mist puffed up in clouds while light dazzled in streams.

Ji Hao wielded the heavy golden pillar and violently smashed on the door for a hundred times, sending up waves of fire sparkles against the door. But that sturdy metal door only slightly dented.

"That Snake Xiu was so powerful!"

Looking at the result of his fierce wave of attack, Ji Hao couldn't help but glance at Po and the three sisters of his.

Snake Xiu broke the door of the other hall with a few bumps, but such a powerful spirit creature couldn't even fight back when facing Po and the three sisters before he was destroyed, both in the body and the soul. This showed the powerfulness of Po and his sisters.

"This door, it's...I am such a fool!"

Embarrassedly looking at the door, Ji Hao laughed and threw away the clumsy golden pillar, pulling out the nine suns devil-destroying sword. The seed of Dao spun slowly, sending streams of golden light into the sword. Nine suns gradually emerged from the nine sun spell symbols on the sword.

"Break!" Ji Hao gave a deep shout while wielding the sword. Making the steps according to the positions of stars, Ji Hao darted forwards, leaving tens of shreds of afterimages in the air. The sword raised a golden arc light while 'gently' hacking on the door.

Following a sizzling noise, the three-meter-thick metal door melted suddenly, with glowing red metal liquid flowing everywhere.

"Good!" Po, Gui Ling, Jing Ling and Wu Dang praised simultaneously. The sword move performed by Ji Hao just now showed about one ten-thousandth of the essence of Yu Yu's art of the sword.

Ji Hao had been Yu Yu's disciple for less than a hundred years, and it had only been a few months since Yu Yu officially taught him the art of the sword. Attaining one ten-thousandth of the essence of Yu Yu's art of sword within such a short span of time, this great talent of Ji Hao could already be described with the word 'scary'. Many of Yu Yu's titular disciples and outer sect disciples had followed Yu Yu's guide for tens of thousands of years, but even they were not as good as one-thousandth of Ji Hao.

Ji Hao put the sword into the sheath, stepped back, still according to the locations of stars.

Hair-thin golden light beams were released from the sword edge. The light was so bright, that some of the people on the scene couldn't even bear to look at it directly. These golden light beams silently swept across the space, causing a loud, long lasting puffing noise, along with which, the doors of the other ten halls nearby were sliced broken. Heavy pieces of those metal doors collapsed, quaking the ground.

"These people all died."

Feng Xing was sealing the hall, which had its door smashed open by Snake Xiu earlier. Meanwhile, he said quickly, "Many people, I didn't hurt them, but they still died!"

Po waved his arm and clenched his fingers towards those warriors who bled and died suddenly, then sniffed his fingers. Next, Po said in a harsh and serious tone, "They were poisoned to death by Snake Xiu's spirit Dan power...Hmm, not good, I'm afraid some already know that we're here!"

Before his voice faded, a red watery cloud roared over from a distance.

In the watery cloud was an over three-hundred meters long fish, entirely red, having fins glowing with a faint fiery light. This odd-looking fish swayed its head and tail while roaring furiously and dashing over. Its scales had been moving flexibly, opening and

closing while the fish was flying, causing loud clangs.

"Henggong fish?" Gui Ling laughed, "Back then, I've met him once under Kunlun Mountain. I wanted to recruit him as a spirit creature to guard my place, but he escaped. This thing is nearly invulnerable, no weapon can harm him. He's also fireproof... Pretty hard to deal with."

Henggong fish, a magical creature, also came from the Chaos. He was the ancestral totem of the Henggong Clan in the Northern Wasteland.

From a long distance, Henggong fish largely opened his jaws and let out thousands of fish-scale-shaped red blades, zipping towards Ji Hao and the others like a thunderstorm. Meanwhile, a furious voice came from his mouth, "Snake Xiu, he was my best friend! You killed him, so you better kill me as well! My master doesn't allow me to make any move without permission...But how can I let you live?"

While yelling, Henggong fish had already rushed above Ji Hao's head.

Tens of thousands of Henggong Clan warriors trod on watery clouds, wearing red fish-scale armors and holding large crossbows as they rushed over. From tens of miles away, these Henggong Clan warriors released waves of arrows. Glowing-red arrow lights flashed across the sky like shooting stars, disorderedly striking down towards Ji Hao and his friends.

Po waved his broad sleeve and let a warm cloud rise from his head. An exquisite small tower emerged from the cloud, wrapped in coiling yellow and black mist streams.

This exquisite tower was a defensive treasure of Priest Dachi that Yu Yu borrowed for Ji Hao. Po was powerful, and activated by his power, the power of this tower could be released by ten to twenty percent.

Yellow and black mist streams swooshed while countless sparkling divine light spots drifted down, transforming into a magic screen that covered Ji Hao and everyone else. The blades let out by Henggong fish fiercely struck on the black and yellow mist, then spun swiftly, crazily hacking the mist cover.

These blades were made from the scales that fell off from Henggong Fish's own body. They were incredibly hard and sharp. However, this exquisite tower had an amazing defensive power. The yellow and black mist drifted airily, but when the blades landed on it, the mist turned to be hundreds of times solid than anything in the world. A quick series of clangs could be heard without an end while many of these blades were shattered by the strong counterforce.

Swoosh! Along with the loud noise, the arrows released by tens of thousands of Henggong Clan warriors had already reached to Ji Hao and his friends. Seeing these arrows falling on the yellow and black mist released from the tower, Feng Xing suddenly leaped up into the air while a massive wave of arrow lights dazzled out of his body.

Having swallowed the linden seed given by Ji Hao, which came from Priest Mu's true body, along with the help of his divine bow, Feng Xing had already broken into the level of Divine Magus within the past short period of time. He had chosen an ancient star to be his spirit star, and his first inner spirit star had been growing.

Arrow light surged out from his body. Meanwhile, those arrows falling down from the sky suddenly froze. Led by Feng Xing's arrow light, these arrows turned around, swishing back towards those Henggong Clan warriors, ten times faster than before.

A long series of puffing noise was started. Tens of thousands of Henggong Clan warriors, who didn't manage to react timely, had their vital bodies parts penetrated by their own arrows, letting streams of blood squeeze out of their bodies.

Feng Xing roared resonantly towards the sky and said, "In the future, no one should play with bows and arrows in front of me!"

Feng Xing waved his hands, and followed by his moves, tens of thousands of crossbows flew up from the hands of those Henggong Clan warriors, flying towards Feng Xing along with a buzzing noise.

Ji Hao shouted in praise, clapped his hands and yelled, "Great aw! Marvelous aw!...Feng Xing, you pay for the booze when we get back! Aw!"

"Aw, aw, aw!" Po slapped on Ji Hao's forehead and said, "Go find that thing! What are you waiting for?"

In front of all these people, Po didn't say the name of 'breathing earth'.

Ji Hao gave a bright growl, then hurriedly rushed towards the hall with Man Man, Shaosi and the others. Breathing earth was kept in this hall.

On the fiery cloud, Henggong fish roared in anger. His body flashed across the air and transformed into a ten meters tall, red-skinned muscular man. He carried a pair of machetes, descended from the sky and blocked the door of the hall.

"Wanna go in? Not before you have killed me!" Henggong fish shouted rudely while raising the pair of machetes. He hacked straight down towards Ji Hao's head, leaving two beams of cold lights in the air.

Chapter 941: Weapon-proof

Henggong fish moved fast, but Ji Hao was faster.

Making the Big Dipper step, Ji Hao moved as fast as a gust of wind. As a few shreds of afterimages flashed across the air, Ji Hao had already broken into the hall.

Henggong fish's pair of machetes almost brushed against Ji Hao's body, yet failed to even touch a hair of his. The pair of machetes hacked on the white jade ground outside the hall and generated a thunderous bang, along with two long streams of fiery light. However, not a mark was left on the ground.

Henggong fish roared towards the sky in a fury, then swiftly turned around and released a whirlwind-like stream of blade light. He gave up on chasing Ji Hao, who had already rushed into the hall. Instead, he rushed up towards Man Man and Shaosi.

Although Henggong fish was furious at the moment, his mind remained clear.

Seeing Ji Hao dash into the hall at lightning speed with the Big Dipper steps, Henggong fish understood that he could never catch Ji Hao, as he only had great physical strength, but was never a good magic user. Rather than wasting time on Ji Hao, he should just attack Man Man and Shaosi, who seemed to be two weak little girls.

"Aha!"

Seeing the pair of machetes hacking down towards her head, Man Man raised her hammers and rushed up excitedly.

Man Man was also with a stunningly great physical strength. Zhu Rong had been strengthening her body with all kinds of resources ever since she was a baby. Man Man even had taken an incalculable amount of spirit blood traded from the dragon-kind. Therefore, in terms of physical strength, Man Man was totally a human-shaped

dinosaur.

Wielding the mountain-heavy lotus-bud-shaped hammers, thousands of afterimages were left in the air by Man Man. Following an endless series of clangs, Man Man's hammer violently clashed against Henggong fish's machetes, sending up a puff of fire sparkles, along with streams of smoke. Suddenly, the few spell symbols on Man Man's hammers, which were carved by Yu Yu himself, flashed with a dazzling light, and a thunder-flame sphere burst.

Along with an earth-shaking boom, the pair of machete held in Henggong fish's hands were blown up into pieces. Those pieces zipped all over the sky, brushing against Henggong fish's body and raising countless streams of fiery light.

Man Man swung the hammers sideway, smashing on Henggong fish's head from both sides. Dong! Dong! The loud thuds sounded like the rings of a bronze bell, yet Henggong fish's look remained perfectly unchanged. Meanwhile, his water-tank-sized fist fiercely punched on Man Man's chest, leaving an arc trace in the sky.

"Ah!" Punched by Henggong fish, Man Man failed to stand steadily and was sent back flying.

From the red armor worn by her, the silhouettes of a few fire dragons roared into the air and condensed into a flame shield, neutralizing most of the power of this punch. This punch didn't manage to harm Man Man, but it did scare her and made her pink face turn pale.

Shaosi gave a deep shout. Seeing Man Man being sent away flying, she lunged her long spear along with a series of light spots, piercing Henggong fish's body three-thousand times in a row within a blink of an eye. Her moves were as natural and smooth as a gentle breeze.

The long spear poked on Henggong fish's body and caused a quick and loud series of clangs and dazzling puffs of fire sparkles.

Shaosi’s wrists were vibrated by the strong counterforce, such that she couldn’t even hold the spear tight. However, not even a scratch was left on Henggong fish’s skin.

"Little girl, piss off!" Henggong fish roared and opened his mouth wide. A strong gale blew out from his mouth, along with which, thousands of fish-scale-shaped blades swished out, flying towards Shaosi in a destructive way.

Shaosi had no choice but to teleport herself nearly a hundred meters away. Countless beams of blade light dazzled across, almost brushing against her body, flying towards Yu Mu who was standing behind Shaosi. Those blade light beams were eye-piercing, and a strong cold power was spreading from them. Yu Mu screamed while raising the large iron pot carried on his back, shielding himself like a turtle shell.

The wave of blade light landed on the iron pot, making it glow. The blade light hacked down violently, causing a long series of thuds, yet the iron pot showed no signs of breaking.

Jin Ling and Wu Dang popped up their eyes, looking at those spell symbols on the pot, which had been releasing flowing streams of light. They both laughed out and said, "Our Shifu was indeed in a good mood, he even made such a large pot? Look that that glossy shining pot, the little fatso must have cooked quite a lot delicious food with it!"

Po and Gui Ling only smiled, not wanting to continue this topic.

Yu Yu hadn’t made many treasures himself, but the pot he made for Yu Mu was definitely the strangest one among all treasures he had made. As Yu Yu’s disciple, Po and Gui Ling didn’t want to give any comments on the pot, as that might accidentally offend Yu Yu... And disciples shouldn’t ever offend their Shifu.

Yu Mu huddled behind the pot, daring not to raise his head. Vividly colored mist puffed out from his body, drifting to Henggong fish like nimble wriggling snakes. These smokes were

carefully made magic poisons. With Yu Mu's current power, even Divine Magi could be killed by his magic poisons.

Nevertheless, Henggong fish opened his jaws and swallowed them all.

Next, Henggong fish swung his arms backward and pulled out another pair of machetes. He showed his teeth in a grin and said, "Hmm, flavorsome! Can I have more? Little fatso, I, your Master fish, like strong natural poisons the most!"

Before his voice faded, Feng Xing stood in midair, gave a resonant roar and clenched his right fist in the sky. Thousands of arrows left by Henggong Clan warriors flew towards him. Next, the bowstring of his divine bow vibrated, and those arrows screamed to Henggong fish as if an invisible hand had given a strong push to them.

Henggong Yu laughed out wildly. He wielded the pair of machetes and hacked down towards Feng Xing's head, without even taking a glance at those arrows, letting them disorderedly fall on his body.

Those purely metal arrows with all kinds of powerful spell symbols shattered against Henggong fish's skin one after another. Not a single arrow managed to break his skin. Henggong fish didn't cast any magic, protecting himself from those sharp arrows by completely depending on his strong skin.

"This thing!" Feng Xing was stunned as well. Under the control of his divine bow, each of those arrows was as powerful as one released from a Divine-Magus-level bow. Thousands of arrows were sent to Henggong fish, but not a single one could break his skin. How strong was his body exactly?

"Henggong fish is not powerful, neither does he have any other special ability. But, he does have a gift, that he is weapon-proof, immune to fire power, water power and all poisons, as well as thunder power...He is pretty hard to deal with." said Gui Ling

slowly.

When speaking, Gui Ling frowned slightly, and she sounded not too happy.

Back then, she intended to capture Henggong fish and force him to become the guarding spirit beast of her place. But in the end, with his strong defensive power, Henggong fish escaped from Gui Ling. Therefore, Gui Ling hadn't forgotten him even after so many years.

Gui Ling was so powerful, but still, Henggong fish managed to escape from her without being harmed. Clearly, Henggong fish's defensive power was unreasonably great.

"Are you saying that...We can peel off his skin and make it into an armor?"

Swayingly, Taisi finally began talking. He seemed to be sleepwalking. His eyes turned pale as he coldly glanced at Henggong fish.

Zip! The Nail Head Seven Arrow Book transformed into a black shadow, flashed out and penetrated Henggong fish's body. The Nail Head Seven Arrow Book didn't hurt Henggong fish's body. Instead, it directly attacked some other things.

Henggong fish shivered immediately, then burst out with a scream. Following that, a large stream of black blood spurted out from his mouth. A fiery cloud rose as Henggong fish took a glance at Taisi, then flashed across the air and attempted to run.

Chapter 942: Bringing Henggong Fish Under Control

"Not this way, my friend!"

Henggong fish attempted to run, and Man Man, Shaosi, Feng Xing and Yu Mu didn't manage to stop him timely. Nevertheless, Gui Ling swiftly darted up and showed up before Henggong fish's face. The black ruyi held in her left hand transformed into a dark cloud, heavily smashing on Henggong fish's head.

A thunderous bang and a dazzling puff of fire sparkle were generated. Gui Ling's violent attack didn't do any harm to Henggong fish, yet the strong impact force disabled him from steadying his body. It made him fall down from that fiery cloud, then take tens of heavy steps backward in a row.

Gui Ling's eyes shone with a cold light as she chuckled and said, "My friend, what happened back then, we can finish it today."

Henggong fish raised his head. Along with a series of creaking noise, glowing-red scales grew out from his skin while his head turned into a hideous fishhead. Soon, Henggong fish transformed into a giant, red fish, standing on the ground like a man.

With his brightly sparkling eyes, the fish stared at Gui Ling for quite a while, then abruptly burst with an angry shout, "You! You evil woman! Back then, you forced me to guard your place and be your mount! But I, your master fish, have been free and happy all my life..."

Gui Ling snorted coldly, then interrupted him and said, "Aren't you serving Gong Gong now? If I let you escape again today, I would be too ashamed to see anyone in the world! Big brother, sisters, please lend a hand!"

Po, Jin Ling, and Wu Dang flashed over with interest. The four of them stood in the north, south, west, and east, surrounding

Henggong fish in the middle. Po's eyes shone brightly as he stared at Henggong fish's red scales and laughed, "Sister, you seem to be in a good mood, and my hands are quite itchy as well. Hehe, my sisters, do you see it? This Henggong fish's scales have natural patterns of Dao hiding in them!"

Gui Ling, Jin Ling, and Wu Dang all had their eyes shining on hearing Po, while looking at Henggong fish from head to toe.

A while later, Wu Dang clapped her hands and laughed, "It's true! This Henggong fish is indeed special. I didn't know he has so many magical patterns of great Dao on his scales. No wonder he's weapon-proof, that not even divine weapons can't harm a hair of his."

Jin Ling gave a faint smile and said, "Getting him to be a mount or a guarding spirit beast, sister Gui Ling, you have indeed made a good choice."

On Henggong fish's scales, layers of natural patterns of great Dao had formed numerous shield-shaped natural spell symbols, seeming to be especially strong and sturdy, even indestructible. With the power of these natural spell symbols of great Dao, Henggong fish was gifted with an extraordinary defensive power.

Gui Ling laughed while slightly waving the black ruyi held in her left hand. Mountain-heavy streams of water surged up and transformed into black lotuses, descending down toward Henggong fish.

Henggong fish was frozen, daring not to make any move.

Po, Gui Ling, Jin Ling and Wu Dang were the famous four disciples of Yu Yu. Back then, Gui Ling was alone, but still, she nearly chased Henggong fish to every corner of the world. Now, the sense of power released from Gui Ling was hundreds of times more powerful than before, but Henggong fish clearly knew that he hadn't improved by much.

He couldn’t rival Gui Ling, but if he tried everything to escape, he might still have a chance. Nevertheless, at the moment, in addition to Gui Ling, he was also facing Po, Jin Ling and Wu Dang, who seemed to be even more terrifying than her. Henggong fish racked his brain and pondered for a while, helplessly realizing that he didn’t even have a chance to run under the current circumstances.

Seeing Gui Ling launch the move, Po said blandly, "Sister, let me try first."

While speaking, Po waved his hands. A pair of ancient styled swords appeared, being gripped by Po. The swords were covered in tortoiseshell patterns. Two sword light streams flashed across the air. No one on the scene managed to see Po’s moves clearly, but fire sparkles were already sent up against Henggong fish’s body.

As a long series of clangs was started, Po had already hacked on Henggong fish’s body thirty-six thousand times, within a blink of an eye. But even with Po’s power, and the pair of supreme-level ancient swords, Po failed to break Henggong fish’s scales.

Po put back the pair of swords in surprise, popped out his eyes and looked at Henggong fish. A while later, he praised, "Indeed, strong scales! For such a magical creature, it would be a shame if we kill him."

Henggong fish stared at Po with an extra miserable look. Just now, Po launched thirty-six-thousand hacks on him, but he couldn’t even see how Po did it. Although his scales had provided a solid defense that Po’s swords didn’t even leave a single mark on his body, Po’s sword power was similar to the power of Taisi’s Nail Head Seven Arrow Book, that didn’t hurt his body, but severely injured his soul.

The fish then had large streams of blood gushing out of his mouth, ears, eyes and nose.

Embarrassedly and bitterly, he laughed and said, "Your master fish...no, I, no, the poor little fish, back then, I was trapped in the

North Sea as a poor little fish. Gong Gong saved me. Therefore, I swore to serve the Gong Gong Family. People...people..."

Henggong fish pitifully looked at Po and the others and said, "Besides, you killed Snake Xiu. He was my best friend. Now, you want me to serve you> Don't you think it's a bit unreasonable?"

Feng Xing squatted on the roof of a great hall in the distance, chuckled and said, "You can't say this. Gong Gong betrayed the humankind. He is hurting all living creatures in the world. We obeyed the hearts and wills of nature and all living beings, and came to the heaven to stop you from causing a greater disaster... Snake Xiu helped Gong Gong n doing these evil things. We killed him because he deserved to die."

"Henggong fish, Snake Xiu had made too many mistakes. Death served him right." continued Feng Xing, "You're also a dog of Gong Gong, and it would be totally reasonable if we kill you as well. You were supposed to die, but fortunately, our sister Gui Ling wanted to recruit you. You shall just obediently lower your head and do whatever she says. What are you still struggling for?"

Po smilingly nodded at Feng Xing. Feng Xing was smart and capable, also with a great communication skill, indeed adorable! Po truly wanted to invite Feng Xing to join the sect. But sadly, a part of Feng Xing's bloodline came from the God-kind, for which reason, Yu Yu could not take him as a disciple.

Henggong fish showed the whites of his eyes. He quickly blinked his eyes and looked around. He wanted to run, but he couldn't. He clearly understood that he could never escape from all these powerful beings. He wanted to give a desperate fight, but he was severely injured by Taisi and Po in a row. Therefore, he realized that the strong defensive power of his was enough for dealing with the other enemies, but was not good enough to fend himself from these terribly powerful ones.

Remaining silent for a while, Henggong fish suddenly shouted

out loud, "Xiang Liu! You nine-headed bastard! Help! Help! I'm encircled! They want me to serve them like a horse! Help! Help me! The heaven and earth great formation, trigger it! Trigger it now!"

Following Henggong fish's shout, dense seven-colored clouds speedily gathered in the sky above the treasury. Colorful bolts of lightning sizzled in the cloud, while a crushingly great pressure descended from the sky.

Gui Ling's look slightly changed. "You chose the hard way! Good, I'll take you, then punish you later!" growled Gui Ling harshly.

Turning around her right hand, Gui Ling took out the long gray streamer that Yu Yu borrowed from Priest Qing Wei. She gripped the long streamer and sightly waved. Countless streams of gray sword power immediately spurted out, roared and bumped into Henggong fish's body.

Henggong fish screamed while a bright fiery light burst from his scales. Even the sword power released from Priest Qing Wei's long streamer couldn't harm a little bit of his body, but the Chaos sword intent pierced straight into his soul, bringing him a soul-deep pain.

Showing the whites of his eyes, Henggong fish fainted.

The tower floating above Po's head shone with clear streams of light while countless colorful bolts of thunder struck down rumblingly.

Chapter 943: An Unexpected Change in The Divine Origin Pool

In the hall where the breathing earth was kept in, Ji Hao was surrounded by nine blazing suns. The strong golden light released from the nine suns fended against the yellow waves coming from the surrounding space with difficulty. Waves of nearly tangible yellow glow struck on the defensive golden light released from the stainless cloak, under the effect of which, Ji Hao's moves had become rather difficult.

He felt like a bug sealed in rosin. He had to struggle for quite a while with all of his power to lift his foot, then make a slow step. A loud creaking noise was squeezed out of his bones. Ji Hao even felt that his internal organs were compressed, his heart had shrunk to the size of a bean, and his blood was almost frozen.

Treasures collected in this hall all had a nature of earth. Numerous different-sized yellow-colored crystal pillars stood in the hall. Within those pillars, dense spheres of khaki-colored mist had been rolling visibly. The silhouettes of yellow dragons, earth bulls, earth Qi Lin and the other legendary creatures with the nature of earth were faintly visible in the mist spheres, roaring and running.

Different sized and shaped pre-world or after-world treasures were placed on those yellow crystal pillars. Every single piece of these treasures had been releasing a dreadfully great earth power vibration. Waves of yellow light clashed against each other in the hall and created an extremely turbid force field, which made Ji Hao feel hard to breathe.

The stainless cloak released a bright golden light, fighting against the endless waves of earth power vibrations.

Ji Hao boosted his power up as much as he could, walking on a path in the middle of the hall with difficulty. Struggling for a

quarter of an hour, he finally reached a crystal pillar that was located in the middle of the hall.

A yellow jade box was placed beside the crystal pillar. In the foot-square, six-inch-tall jade box was a handful of yellow dust. The dust looked like a puff of mist, also like a sphere of light and a shred of shadow. But if one looked closer, one would find countless layers in it, as if every single grain of this dust actually contained a world.

A three-foot in radius, round-shaped magic screen covered the jade box. Ji Hao carefully observed the screen, then the golden bridge released a dim golden light stream from between Ji Hao's eyebrows and scanned across it. Countless thin light ripples spread out on the light screen, but the screen itself remained perfectly motionless.

Ji Hao remained silent for a short while, then helplessly nodded.

After all, Ji Hao had learned the art of magic formation under Yu Yu's guidance. He tried the magic screen around the jade box with the golden bridge, then easily figured it out.

The Heaven and Earth golden bridge could move across space and break all seals. The golden bridge could easily penetrate any sealing magic formation with a weakness. The golden bridge was just like a master key, while all types of sealing magic formations were like door locks with different structures and sizes, and, the golden bridge could unlock all locks.

However, this round-shaped magic screen before Ji Hao's eyes was not even coming from a sealing magic. This magic screen was condensed from the earth power released from all treasures kept in the hall. It was nothing but a pure layer of earth power. In other words, this magic screen was like a metal block without a single crack; it couldn't even be counted as a lock.

As a master key, the golden bridge could unlock all locks. But, one couldn't tear a metal block apart with it. Therefore, Ji Hao

tried with the golden bridge, but nothing happened to this magic screen.

Pondering for a while, Ji Hao reached out his hands and released raging golden fire from his ten fingers. Boosting up his power once again, he burned this round-shaped magic screen with the essence sun fire. A sizzling noise was generated. Burned by the essence sun fire, the yellow-mist-like magic screen suddenly began glowing beautifully, and was added with a glass-like luster.

Ji Hao hurriedly stopped burning it. This yellow magic screen was condensed from earth power. Burning it with essence sun fire could only strengthen it, just like mortal people fire pottery products; pottery products were always much harder than clay. Therefore, burning this magic screen with the essence sun fire could do no help but make it stronger and sturdier. When Ji Hao attained the ultimate power of the great Dao of sun, he would be able to burn everything and destroy everything directly with the sun power. Then, this magic screen in front of him, which was condensed from the mixture of after-world and pre-world earth power, would be easily turned into nothingness by him. Nevertheless, at this stage, Ji Hao was still far, far away from that level.

"This is..."

Shaking his head, Ji Hao pulled out the nine-sun devil-destroying sword and fiercely hacked on the magic screen.

Following a loud buzzing noise, millions of treasures with the nature of earth placed on those yellow crystal pillars vibrated simultaneously. Next, a crushing counterforce attacked, breaking Ji Hao’s right arm instantly. The sword was bounced back, nearly hacking on Ji Hao’s own forehead.

"This..."

Ji Hao swung his right arm and let his spirit blood flush across his broken bones. His broken bones and tendons recovered

speedily while Ji Hao looked at this yellow magic screen, unable to say a word for a long while. This hall contained countless treasures with the nature of earth. Each one of them was a precious piece, collected by the ancient heaven, containing an immeasurably great earth power. Nevertheless, the power of all these treasures combined together and transformed into this thin layer of magic screen, covering the breathing earth.

Heaviness and sturdiness were the natures of earth. By attacking this thin layer of magic screen, Ji Hao actually attacked all treasures kept in his hall. With his current power, how could he possibly break it?

From his spiritual space, the mysterious man's sounded, "Take them all if you can't break it."

Ji Hao paused for a second, then slowly nodded. He pressed his hands on the thin yellow magic screen, then made the posture of everything-grow. As his body trembled, a terrifying suction force was released from his lower abdomen. Inside his body, the five-colored flame burned ragingly, while that small five-colored cauldron emerged silently.

A puffing noise could then be heard without an end, along with which, all earth power in the hall began surging into Ji Hao's body like birds flying into the woods. Ji Hao suddenly had a weird feeling; he felt like he was a person who could have a bowl of rice for a meal, but in the past moment, someone had thrust all the rice in an entire granary into his stomach. Too much, truly too much.

Countless cracks appeared on Ji Hao's skin, with blood surging out. Swoosh! The hall was immediately suffused by a blood-red mist. A Divine Magus could regrow even from a single drop of water. Ji Hao's blood sprayed out, but then flew back and squeezed back into his body.

As countless streams of blood kept spurting out and flowing back into his body, Ji Hao felt that every cell of his body was about to

explode. A piercing pain attacked his soul while the pure and strong earth power surged ceaselessly into his body. His body couldn't bear this great pressure, and was being crushed into the tiniest pieces, bit by bit.

Even the cells of Ji Hao's body were shattering and bursting.

However, under the effect of the move of everything-grow, Ji Hao's destroyed cells had also been regrowing. The new cells had a faint yellow glow; they were stronger and sturdier than the old cells.

A yellow-colored light wrapped up Ji Hao's body like a cocoon while yellow mist drilled into his body in streams. He had been shivering intensively, and faintly, a strange, indescribable humming noise was audible from inside his body.

The five-colored small caldron was swallowing the earth power in the hall, turning it into essence sun fire and sending into Ji Hao's body.

Gradually, Ji Hao's entire body turned golden, like a golden fireball, and didn't look like a human body anymore.

At the same time, in the deepest area of the Divine Origin Pool, a sphere of Chaos spirit blood silently beat, but Gong Gong didn't notice that.

Chapter 944: The Heart of Chaos

"Did the heart of Pan Gu become the Divine Origin Pool? This is a bit...unexpected, isn't it?" said the mysterious man rumblingly in Ji Hao's spiritual space. But Ji Hao had fainted already, so couldn't hear him.

Back in the Divine Origin Pool, that sphere of Chaos spirit blood, which seemed to be colorless yet also seemed to contain all colors in the world, was as heavy as a mountain yet as light as the mist, and had been releasing a prehistorical power like a fossil yet has also spreading a sense of a thriving life-force. It was just like a new tender sprout that beat slightly and silently.

In the next moment, magically and secretly, this sphere of Chaos spirit blood reached straight to the treasury hall where Ji Hao was present.

Inside Ji Hao's body, an extremely thin trace of Pan Gu bloodline was beating strongly and quickly. Under the great pressure given by the strong earth power vibration, this slight trace of Pan Gu bloodline had been keeping Ji Hao alive with difficulty, preventing him from being crushed by the awfully great pressure.

Sensing the spirt blood power vibration from Ji Hao's body, the mountain-huge sphere of Chaos spirit blood descended as airily as a feather. Along with a sky-shattering power, the Chaos power vibration silently merged with Ji Hao's body, like the first flake of snow in the winter sliding into the lake.

Dong! Ji Hao's heart beat violently, then transformed into a blood-red sphere of mist. The Chaos spirit blood quickly moved towards his heart after merging with his body. Wherever it moved across, Ji Hao's body would be turned into a dense blood-red mist, and after it moved away, the blood-red mist would turn back into his body.

Ji Hao's chest was empty, with nothing but the blood-red sphere

of mist that was transformed from his heart, spinning swiftly.

All of the blood flow of Ji Hao's body had stopped. Without the heart as a core, his blood has lost its motivation, but still contained a strong life-force. Under the effect of the essence sun fire released from the small cauldron, the quantity of Ji Hao's blood was quickly reducing, yet the quality of his blood had been raising speedily.

The Chaos spirit blood touched the blood-red mist transformed from Ji Hao's heart. A thorough change immediately happened to the blood-red mist. The color of the blood-red mist faded, yet it somehow seemed to contain all colors in the world.

This mountain-huge drop of spirit blood began shrinking, turning smaller and smaller. A few breaths later, a colorless heart appeared in Ji Hao's chest, replacing his old heart. Colorless blood veins reached out from his new heart through the old blood veins of Ji Hao's body, devouring and replacing them. Within a twinkling of an eye, all of Ji Hao's blood veins were replaced.

Dong! This new heart of Ji Hao beat for the first time.

A thunder burst from Ji Hao's body, that sounded like a whole new world was created inside that body. Hearing the heartbeat, Ji Hao felt like Saint Pan Gu had punched on his body with his heavy fist. All of Ji Hao's pores were opened, releasing large clouds of turbid gray mist.

This punch was like a blacksmith hammering an iron block, and Ji Hao was that raw iron block, filled with impurities. Over and over again, the iron block was hammered with a power of creation, the impurities were removed, and the only purest essence remained.

Colorless blood surged out from Ji Hao's new heart, releasing a strong power vibration. It reached to every corner of Ji Hao's body through those new blood veins, which were thousands of times stronger than his old ones. Ji Hao's body was strengthened

thoroughly just now, and a great amount of useless after-world life-force was forced out of his body. Right now, his body was completely empty.

The Chaos blood spread into his body. Ji Hao's empty body greedily absorbed the Chaos power contained in the blood. His bones, tendons, muscles, even hair and skin, all parts of his body began to improve and transform.

The first wave of Chaos blood was fully absorbed by Ji Hao's body, just like a bucket of water poured into a desert; not even a drop was left.

The new heartbeat for the second time. The five-colored small cauldron sent the essence sun fire ceaselessly into the new heart, after which, Chaos blood flowed out from the new heart without an end. It was being sent to Ji Hao's entire body by the second heartbeat.

Then the third beat, then the fourth beat, fifth beat...

Ji Hao opened his eyes, when his new heart beat for a hundred and eighth time.

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man silently showed up. The round platform, which he had been sitting on with crossed legs all the time, suddenly burst with a dazzling light. The light flashed across Ji Hao's body for forty-nine times like a massive stream of water. Wherever it swept across, everything was turned back to its original shape, as if nothing happened to Ji Hao at all after he rushed into the hall, and everything was still the same.

However, Ji Hao could sense that something special had happened to his body.

Especially his heart. He scanned across his heart with this spirit power and discovered no difference. But instinctively, he felt something different. If his old heart was like a dragon with a strong life-force, at the moment, Ji Hao sensed that his heart had

become a mysterious, indescribable thing, that was tens of thousands, even millions of times stronger than an ancient divine dragon. It was just like those fallen devil Gods which still had their powers and traces of existences lingering in the world, and were too powerful to be measured.

Nevertheless, Ji Hao carefully checked his heart with his spirit power for quite a while. It was still the same heart, nothing had changed.

"Old man...Something seems to be wrong."

By now, Ji Hao had already reached a certain level of his cultivation based on the great Dao, that allowed him to gain some understandings of the power of destiny and fortune. He couldn't find anything wrong, but he somehow felt that a magical, mysterious, also terrifying change had happened to him.

"Nothing is wrong!" The mysterious man sat in Ji Hao's spiritual space and seriously lied to Ji Hao, "You fainted because of the pain. I've been keeping an eye on you, in case your primordial spirit gets hurt. Your body is strengthened, that's all."

"Hehe," The mysterious man laughed, then continued with a weird, unspeakably tone, "You're awake, it's good...Just sense it, your body now...Hmm, even if you trigger a million inner spirit stars all at once, you are now strong enough to take the pressure. With your physical strength, you can crush the other Divine Magi with just a finger."

The mysterious man then disappeared without saying any other word.

Waves of blood had been surging out from the new heart, nourishing Ji Hao's body. The blood looked nothing different from regular blood, but was actually a completely different thing.

Every Magus acupoint of Ji Hao was now as vast as an ocean, without a boundary. Every meridian of his was now like an

enormous dragon, broad and strong. Ji Hao's physical strength had already reached an extreme degree. As the mysterious man said, he could now crush the other Divine Magi easily.

However, with an unknown magic, the mysterious man covered everything with the light released from that round platform. Due to this reason, Ji Hao didn't find out the transformation that happened in his heart.

All of the earth power in the hall was absorbed by Ji Hao. Smilingly, Ji Hao held the jade box in which the breathing earth was kept with both of his hands, then gently picked that splendidly glowing jade box up.

Chapter 945: Taking The Divine Pivot Hall

Ji Hao took all earth-natured treasures in the hall. He couldn't help but be shocked by the wealthiness of the ancient heaven. No to mention the other treasures that Ji Hao didn't know about, Ji Hao found eighty-two ancient star cores of destroyed ancient stars from the hall. Ji Hao had seen a star core before. Po had shown it to him as an extremely treasured piece.

These ancient star cores were with different types of powers which were generated by the power of earth. These star cores could serve as perfect treasure-making materials. In the hands of treasure-making masters like Po, they could certainly be turned into a great number of powerful treasures. However, those ancient divine Gods just simply left so many breathtakingly precious treasures in the treasury.

Ji Hao silently took a guess. Perhaps, those ancient divine Gods… knew nothing about treasure-making?

After taking all treasures in the hall, Ji Hao flashed to the door.

When he remained motionless, the feeling was quite strong. But once he moved, he immediately discovered the strangeness of his body. When he moved forward, the air brushed against his skin. Probably because of his especially high speed, Ji Hao felt that the air around him moved like water, and caused him a great resistance.

He never had the same feeling before, not even when he transformed into a beam of sunlight and flew. But this time, he made one step forward and sensed a strong resistance from the air from everywhere. This resistance only managed to make Ji Hao's body sway slightly. As he tightened his muscles and put forth his strength, Ji Hao swept across over ten miles of distance and reached the door along with a loud popping noise.

Ji Hao turned around in shock. He saw a man-shaped silhouette

gradually dissipating where he stood in earlier— That was a man-shaped space crack just now. Ji Hao took a simple step forward, but by doing that, he cracked the space.

"My physical strength..."

Ji Hao finally realized something. Nothing in his body seemed to have changed after he absorbed the earth power in the entire hall. But in fact, something did change; he just hadn't discovered it. Ji Hao couldn't find out how great that change was, neither could he figure out how the change happened. He knitted his eyebrows, activated his spirit power once again and carefully checked his entire body.

"Oi, is my body really fine?" Ji Hao yelled in his spiritual space.

"It's fine, I've been keeping an eye on you. I'm sure it's fine." The mysterious man's voice rumbled.

Ji Hao wanted to ask more questions, but the scene outside the hall made him give up on the thought. Swiftly, he flashed to Po.

Ji Hao sensed the strong resistance again, as if he was moving in water. This time, followed by another loud popping noise, Ji Hao cracked the space directly and reached to Po in an instant.

"Eh?" Po glanced at Ji Hao in surprise. Meanwhile, Gui Ling, Jin Ling and Wu Dang all took a glance at him.

With Ji Hao's power, he shouldn't be able to crack the space and teleport himself, no matter how fast he could move with the flowing sunlight flying magic. That would never be the same as cracking the space and teleporting himself.

However, five-colored thunderbolts had been sizzling in the sky. Countless bolts of thunder descended like raindrops. Therefore, Po and the other three didn't have the time to ask any question. The four of them controlled the tower joint handedly, releasing streams of yellow and black mist. They surrounded themselves and fended against those five-colored thunderbolts.

When Ji Hao stayed by the door of the treasury hall, he only saw those colorful thunderbolts descending. But it was only when he dashed to Po that he sensed the scariness of those thunderbolts.

The thunderbolts fell as thickly as a heavy rain. Every bolt of thunder would blast against the yellow and white mist, then a destructive power would attack, shaking the bodies and souls of everyone on the scene. Ji Hao felt like his limbs were softened and powerless, his internal organs were twitching, and his brain felt like it was boiling; he was even going to lost his mind.

Ji Hao didn't manage to react timely. He hummed in pain, then a few thunderbolts exploded on his head in a row. They vibrated him, softened his legs, and nearly pressed him down to the ground.

Shaosi and Man Man were well-prepared. They each held a hand of Ji Hao. Man Man's face was badly pale as she screamed, "My ears are aching, my head is aching...Ahyaya, this thunder is so annoying...Did you find the breathing earth?"

Si Wen Ming nearly collapsed under the rampant violent thunderclaps as well, but on hearing the words 'breathing earth', he boosted up his spirit and hurriedly looked at Ji Hao.

Ji Hao nodded, took out the jade box and gave all the breathing earth to Si Wen Ming.

Si Wen Ming instantly let out a sigh of relief. He took over the box and carefully put it into his sleeve. With the breathing earth in his hand, he was now confident to deal with the rain disaster. Si Wen Ming opened his mouth and seemed to say something, but as he suddenly loosened his tightened nerves, a few thunderbolts struck on his head and put him down.

Yu Mu held Si Wen Ming up. Si Wen Ming gave a bitter laugh, then shouted, "We got the breathing earth, let's go! The heaven is immeasurably powerful. We've already been discovered. We cannot stay any longer in this place!"

The breathing earth was attained already, and Si Wen Ming didn’t want any unexpected changes to happen.

Ji Hao glanced at Po. Po, Gui Ling, Jin Ling and Wu Dang had been controlling the tower to fend against those thunderbolts. The four of them nodded together. Meanwhile, five clear streams of mist rose from each of their heads and transformed into a water-clear cloud that drifted above their heads. Strands of cyan-colored light poured down like a rain. They had all boosted their powers up as much as they could to control the tower, and the power of the tower was activated by thirty to forty percent.

The ear-damaging thunder was weakened largely, and so did that great pressure that made their bodies soft. Po gave a deep shout, hearing which, Ji Hao prepared to trigger the golden bridge and bring all of them out. But all of a sudden, a clear mist puffed out from the tower, from within which, a purple talisman flew out.

Po and the others paused. Po reached out his hand, grasped the talisman and scanned it with his spirit power. Next, his eyes instantly shone with a bright light.

Seeing Po’s look, Ji Hao hurriedly asked, "Brother, what happened?"

Po remained silent for a while, then responded with a bland tone, "Let’s not leave for now and make a trip to the Divine Pivot Hall. The Divine Pivot Hall is the core of the entire Heaven and Earth great formation in heaven. Our elder uncle, Priest Dachi, told us to go to the Divine Pivot Hall, to take a look and see what to do!"

Si Wen Ming stood aside. He paused briefly, wanting to talk, but then shook his head and didn’t say a word.

From the sky, a few sky-shattering thunder burst. The terrifying thunder even made Po and the three sisters of his quiver slightly. It was not hard to tell how much pressure they had been taking.

Under the protection of the tower, the pressure that came from

the sky still caused such a strong effect to them, so one could easily imagine how powerful the Heaven and Earth great formation in heaven was.

The fierce wave of thunder that burst just now was only a sign. What would come the next, could only be stronger and stronger.

Heading to the core of the great formation under such a great pressure? Ji Hao was almost driven crazy. What did Priest Dachi mean?

And why was the purple talisman hiding in the tower ahead of time?

Countless thoughts popped out in Ji Hao’s head. He gnashed his teeth, abruptly burst with a resonant growl and said, "Alright, whatever it is, let’s make it quick! Then, leave as soon as we can!"

The golden bridge flashed across the air and sent up a dim golden stream of divine light, windingly flying towards the central area of the heaven.

Chapter 946: One to Three

In the Divine Pivot Hall, Xiang Liu and Wuzhi Qi sat face to face.

A golden, round-shaped mirror floated between them. Through the mirror, Xiang Liu and Wuzhi Qi saw Ji Hao and the others tread on the golden bridge, flying swiftly like a golden dragon, with the exquisite small tower floating above their heads.

Tens of differently sized and colors dense clouds had been chasing closely after Ji Hao and the others. From those clouds, countless thunderbolts struck down on the exquisite tower like shooting stars. Yellow and black mist coiled all over the sky, taking all thunder strikes.

After each thunderbolt blast, the surrounding air would twist and shake slightly, and the surrounding buildings would vibrate. Occasionally, a few thunderbolts would miss their target and strike on a building. The defense of the building would then be triggered, and a large cloud of glowing mist would rise into the sky, looking quite splendid and eye-catching.

Even though the magic mirror, Wuzhi Qi and Xiang Liu sensed the powerfulness of those divine thunders.

"The Heaven and Earth great formation indeed amazing!" Wuzhi Qi sat on the ground with crossed legs and said with a dark face, "No wonder Gong Gong chose to collaborate with the non-humankind. If we're trapped in such a great formation, we would certainly be turned into bone ashes. But those non-humankind beings actually managed to damage the ancient heaven despite the protection of such a powerful great formation... Truly impressive!"

Xiang Liu's face also had a gloomy look. Greedily, he looked at the exquisite tower and the golden bridge through the mirror and cursed in a low voice, "Good treasures, good treasures, why aren't they mine? Damn, damn you all."

Laughing coldly, Xiang Liu continued slowly, "Those non-humankind beings were indeed impressive. But if you say they could break the ancient heaven, I doubt it...As far as I know, back then, if the five divine emperors didn't lead all divine Gods to fight against the non-humankind outside, I don't think those non-humankind beings could ever break into the heaven."

Wuzhi Qi paused for a second, then gave a scornful laugh, and instantly, his face turned less darkened.

Glancing at the mirror, Wuzhi Qi asked, "Where're they heading to? They killed Snake Xiu, fine. I never liked that stupid snake anyway. But they captured Henggong fish alive! This..."

Xiang Liu smiled, pointing his fingers at those floating, nebula-like light spheres in the hall. Followed by his moves, Wuzhi Qi saw through the mirror that a big half of those thunderclouds that had been chasing Ji Hao and his teammates were dispelled. Afterward, thunderbolts released from the remaining clouds turned less and weaker than before.

"Let them take Henggong fish away. The less trusted helpers Gong Gong is left with, the more he will value us!" Xiang Liu looked at Wuzhi Qi with a vicious look while continuing, "And, let them owe us one! What do you think?"

Wuzhi Qi slowly nodded and said, "If Gong Gong wins, he can only put us in important positions, as he doesn't have too many trustworthy helpers."

Xiang Liu grinned and continued, "If Gong Gong loses, these people owe us one today. That will be enough for us to survive!"

While chuckling, Xiang Liu carried on slowly, "We have lived till now ever since the prehistorical era while many famous, powerful ones have fallen long ago. But we're free and safe. The skills of survival... are necessary!"

Wuzhi Qi showed his teeth and gave a grin, then put his hands on

his knees, slowly closed his eyes and began singing an ancient folk rhyme.

Xiang Liu stared at Ji Hao and the others through the mirror, narrowed his eyes and murmured, "You went to the treasury, what did you take? Now, what’re you gonna do? What else is here in the heaven that you want but I don’t know about?"

"I spared you this time, you better remember this! As for what you took, that’s none of my business. That should be a concern of Gong Gong! That really has nothing to do with me." Xiang Liu chuckled again.

On the golden bridge, Ji Hao and the others raised their heads and looked at those thunderclouds above. A big half of those thunderclouds had gone, and the thunders bursting from the remaining thunderclouds were incredibly loud, yet the power released was over ten times weaker than before. Thunderbolts still descended in a formidable way, but couldn’t deliver any actual effect anymore.

"Hmm? Who’s controlling the Heaven and Earth great formation now? We owe him or her one!" Po laughed and said, "It seems that people under Gong Gong’s command are not as solid and unbreakable as an iron board!"

"He goes against nature, betraying all living creatures in the world, Gong Gong is destroying himself. But among his followers, some indeed know when to stop" Jin Ling narrowed her eyes, which shone brightly with a cold light as she glanced around with an especially serious look.

A long, long while later, Jin Ling abruptly sighed and said, "The heaven is generated by the power of creation of Pan Gu world. The wills of the world itself can be spread through here. If this holy place remains empty like this, I don’t think the world will allow it."

Ji Hao stood behind Po. Hearing Jin Ling, he pondered and said,

"Sister Jin Ling, are you saying that the heaven will rise again, in the future?"

Si Wen Ming raised his eyebrows. He stood aside, shook his head and remained silent. But obviously, he had his different point of view. From the angle of the humankind, it would be better for the heaven to remain empty like this. The God-kind in the heaven had fallen apart, and their bloodlines disappeared gradually. This was definitely a good thing for the humankind.

If the heaven rose again, this new heaven should be controlled by human beings.

The golden bridge kept moving forwards. Sitting in the Divine Pivot Hall, Xiang Liu abruptly burst with a shout and said, "Weird, why are these people coming to us?"

Before Xiang Liu realized what was actually happening, the golden bridge had flashed across the long distance and showed up outside the Divine Pivot Hall at a crazy speed.

The Divine Pivot Hall was magnificent, looking like an enormous roc bird lying on the ground. A brightly glowing silver star descended from the sky, and the starlight had the entire hall covered in it. As the core of the heaven and earth great formation, his hall could build connections with stars in the heaven and control the formation in a secret and mysterious way. The Divine Pivot Hall was one of the few most important buildings in the entire heaven.

Nearly a hundred thousand, heavily armored elite warriors under the command of Xiang Liu and Wuzhi Qi guarded on the square outside the hall. Seeing Ji Hao and the others suddenly showing up from a dim golden light, these warriors growled out and formed battle formations, seeming ready to rush up and attack.

Po smiled, bowed towards the exquisite tower and said, "Elder Uncle, please."

A silvery jade clang came from the tower. Next, a clear stream of mist puffed out of it. This three-hundred meters huge sphere of mist hovered around the tower for a while, then divine light spots drifted down from it. Abruptly, the mist sphere split into three, glowing mistily. They transformed into three Daoist Priests, an elderly one, a middle-aged one, and a young one.

"My friends, after you!" The elderly one with white hair and beard bowed towards the other two.

"My friend, after you!" The other two priests bowed back towards the elderly one, then all three of them laughed out loud together. Next, they flashed to the Divine Pivot Hall.

Seeing this magical scene, Ji Hao was almost screaming in his head. One to three, this was definitely the most powerful magic created by Priest Dachi, called ‘one to three’.

The three Daoist priests transformed from the clear mist that surrounded the Divine Pivot Hall, then slightly waved their arms and said, "Up!"

The entire heaven quaked, and next, a thunderous bang came from the hall, as the tremendous Divine Pivot Hall was entirely pulled up by these three priests.

Chapter 947: Gong Gong gets Beaten

"Holy ancestors soul!"

Man Man, Shaosi, Yu Mu and Feng Xing looked at the Divine Pivot Hall, which was being pulled directly up from the ground, and all screamed out.

The enormous hall was surrounded by bright streams of starlight, rising like a floating mountain. Rapidly-flowing, great-river-like starlight streams dragged the hall, pulling it up from the ground.

The three Daoist priests gave resonant growls together. They pointed their fingers at the small tower floating above Po's head. A black and yellow colored stream of mist instantly puffed out of the tower, circled around the Divine Pivot Hall, and cut all starlight streams into pieces.

Gui Ling waved the Chaos long streamer held in her hand. Countless sharp streams of sword power were released from the streamer, shredding the large stream of starlight, which was poured down from the star above the hall. Immediately after that, a muffled series of booms could be heard from inside the hall, as the connection between the hall and the Heaven and Earth great formation was cut off completely.

The youngest Daoist priest chuckled and clapped his hands. Following his moves, a white pouch flew out of his sleeve and sent out a white mist that wrapped the hall up, then flying back towards the pouch.

The Divine Pivot Hall became smaller and smaller, to the tune of hundreds of meters square from a tens of thousands of meters huge broad hall.

A raging roar came from the hall. Along with that, Xiang Liu and Wuzhi Qi rushed out desperately. They were struck by the

counterforce that came from the Heaven and Earth great formation. By now, their bodies were wrapped in coiling black smoke and their clothes were torn apart. They glared at the three Daoist priests in anger. Wuzhi Qi squeezed his pair of eyes and pointed at the three priests, seeming about to say something. But Xiang Liu slapped on his mouth and stopped him from doing that.

Shaking the Heaven and Earth great formation, pulling up the core of the great formation directly, this could only be described with words like ‘terrifying’. Living beings in this world, who were with such a scarily, dreadfully great power could be counted on two hands. As Xiang Liu said, many ancient powerful beings in this world had fallen long ago, but he managed to live till now. This could surely be due to his own powerfulness, but more importantly, it was his smartness. He knew when to do what. Facing enemies that he couldn’t afford to offend, he would never, ever recklessly enrage them.

"People..." Xiang Liu squeezed a smile out of his face. But next, the words he intended to say were choked back into his throat by a furious roar.

The roar came from a long distance away, followed by a massive wave. On top of the black wave was a divine seal for controlling the Heaven and Earth great formation. The seal spun and flew in the air, releasing destructive waves of power vibration to reach the great formation.

The Divine Pivot Hall, which was already compressed to few meters, vibrated intensely. Then, countless colorful streams of glow shone from the hall and clashed against the white mist released from the pouch, generating thunderous booms.

The three priests laughed together, then simultaneously cast a spell loudly. The white pouch quaked intensely, and then the white mist released from it grew denser. The Divine Pivot Hall gave a few shrill screams in a row, then being forcibly dragged into the pouch.

The young priest raised his hand and let the pouch fly back into his hand. Thrusting the pouch into his sleeve, he smilingly nodded and said, "This Heaven and Earth great formation is incredibly powerful. We have sworn to not step in any affair of the human world without a good reason. But this Heaven and Earth great formation has fallen into the hands of the evil, and has been used for threatening all living beings in the world. Therefore, we have to do something."

Ji Hao's eyes shone brightly. He looked at the three Daoist priests, who were transformed from a Qi of Priest Dachi, and couldn't help but silently guess the purpose of Priest Dachi for forcibly taking the Divine Pivot Hall.

He thought of that day when Buzhou Mountain collapsed. Spirit Wa, Dong Gong, Ximu, Netherworld Priest and the other powerful beings all tried their best under the great pressure given by the Heaven and Earth great formation in the heaven. But still, they failed to save Sky Pillar from collapsing.

The Heaven and Earth great formation in heaven was powerful enough to suppress Spirit Wa and the other world protectors. Even if Priest Dachi, Priest Qing Wei and Priest Yu Yu were more powerful than those world protectors, their powers were still limited, and the Heaven and Earth great formation in heaven was still threatening to them.

At the moment, Gong Gong had intruded the heaven and controlled the Heaven and Earth great formation to harm all living creatures in the mortal world. In this kind of a situation, Priest Dachi seized the opportunity and forcibly took the Divine Pivot Hall. Did this mean that from this moment on, the lifeline of the heaven was held in the hands of Priest Dachi?

By controlling the Heaven and Earth great formation, he could control the entire heaven!

In the future...According to Ji Hao's previous life memory, many

interesting things would happen in the future. Sooner or later, the heaven would regain the dominating position. Till then, Priest Dachi would be in control of the core of the Heaven and Earth great formation, and all divine Gods in the heaven would have to do whatever Priest Dachi said!

Brilliant, truly brilliant.

Ji Hao silently sighed in praise. Priest Dachi seemed like a free and careless one,] who had been holding himself aloof from the rest of the world. But in fact, he was the cleverest one!

On normal days, if Priest Dachi broke into the heaven to forcibly take the Divine Pivot Hall, not to mention Spirit Wa and the other world protectors, Priest Mu and Priest Hua would come to stop him, and countless troubles would be caused as well. None of these would do any good to Priest Dachi's cultivation.

However, Gong Gong had intruded the heaven and broke Buzhou Mountain with the power of the Heaven and Earth great formation. This gave Priest Dachi a nearly perfect excuse!

Once the Divine Pivot Hall fell into Priest Dachi's hands, he would never, ever hand it out again. Not to mention Priest Dachi, even Ji Hao could come up with thousands of excuses to keep it in his own hands.

The wave surged, and the seal upon the wave released streams of starlight that covered all buildings in the heaven and raised dense and large clouds, rolling in the sky.

However, the Divine Pivot Hall was forcibly taken away by the three priests, and the Heaven and Earth great formation had lost its core.Aa single seal could never be powerful enough to control the power of the entire great formation.

Raging roars could be heard without an end. As the wave rolled up, Gong Gong abruptly showed up on top of it.

He pointed at the seal, shouted and growled, while sending out

streams of light from his mouth into that seal.

All of a sudden, all surrounding buildings quaked simultaneously. Gong Gong wasn't familiar with the power of the Heaven and Earth great formation. Instead, he was simply relying on the power of the seal to forcibly control the formation. Therefore, he didn't manage to react timely. As a consequence, a strong wave of counterforce struck on him and made him vomit blood. The invisible, yet crushing counterforce landed on him, sending him hundreds of miles away and bumping into an enormous dragon jade pillar.

Bang! The pillar glowed brightly. Gong Gong's neck twisted in a weird way, as it was actually broken.

The Divine Pivot Hall was taken away. As its worst consequence, the Heaven and Earth great formation could no longer be controlled flexibly. Just like a well-organized army suddenly turned into a disordered group of warriors, the power of the great formation couldn't be concentrated anymore.

Nevertheless, the Heaven and Earth great formation still had its power, and all magic seals and protective magic screens remained perfectly same. Gong Gong's head bumped into the jade pillar and instantly triggered the defensive power of the great formation.

Indeed, Gong Gong broke Buzhou Mountain with his head, but he didn't have the strength to break the Heaven and Earth great formation with his head. His neck twisted weirdly, as he landed on the ground while howling. Once he opened his mouth, a large stream of blood gushed out.

"Kill! Kill every last one of these b*stards who dared to intrude the heaven!" Gong Gong screamed hysterically, "Xiang Liu! Wuzhi Qi! River Earl! Get the people and kill them! Kill them all! The heaven is mine! No one can take my heaven!"

"I, Gong Gong, am the owner of the world!"

"No one can take my heaven from me!"

Chapter 948: Get Away Safely

The golden bride swished swiftly among palaces in the heaven. Splendid light surged over from all directions, as sharp as blades, piercing towards Ji Hao and the others along with shrill noises. Occasionally, a colorful light stream would fall in the dim golden light transformed from the golden bridge. The golden light would quake intensely, disabling Ji Hao and the others from steadying their own bodies. They would nearly fall down and roll on the golden bridge.

Gong Gong's roars came from behind. Ten divine seals, a hundred and twenty magic talismans, and three-thousand and six-hundred magic formation flags had been drifting around him, constantly changing positions.

The ten seals were same as the Divine Pivot Hall; they were the controllers of the other ten great divine formations which the Heaven and Earth great formation was formed from. The one-hundred and twenty magic talismans were the vitality cores of the one-hundred and twenty lower grade magic formations that the ten great divine formations were formed from. The three-thousand and six-hundred magic formation flags coordinated to the three-thousand and six-hundred areas of the Heaven and Earth great formation. Each area was formed from hundreds to tens of thousands of small-scale divine formations, and these magic formation flags were the only tools to control those small divine formations.

Another colorful light stream struck on the golden bridge, and once again, Ji Hao and the others were shaken. The other tens of colorful light streams missed their target, brushed against the golden bridge and disorderly fell on a few palaces in the distance, igniting a massive, glowing cloud.

Ji Hao threw a glance back and saw Gong Gong's twisted face. Hearing Gong Gong screaming hysterically, Ji Hao couldn't help

but laugh out loud.

The three priests took the Divine Pivot Hall away, which would cause a fatal effect on the Heaven and Earth great formation.

Before, with three to five powerful ones of these people staying in the Divine Pivot Hall, Gong Gong could easily attack any enemy that intruded the heaven, and control all magic formations and seals in the entire heaven. But without the Divine Pivot Hall, Gong Gong could only control those magic formations, magic seals and protective screens with these tools, which would take him a lot more time and efforts, a lot more. Looking at those colorful light streams which had been missing their target, brushing against the golden bridge and dazzling across, one would know how hard Gong Gong had been trying to control the great formation, and how low his efficiency was.

"Gong Gong, no need to walk us out!" Ji Hao suddenly yelled loudly out, "We're in a hurry, today, so we will let you keep your head. Next time we see you, we will certainly kill you to help you atone for your monstrous sin!"

Gong Gong screamed even louder in a fury. The wave surged up from all directions while countless aquatic warriors raised their weapons, rushing up to Ji Hao and his friends.

But how could these aquatic warriors ever catch up with the golden bridge? They had been shouting pretty loudly, but they couldn't possibly chase up the dim golden light transformed from the golden bridge. Without any other choice, they watched Ji Hao and his friends fly away.

"Stop them! Stop them!" Gong Gong growled, "They took the Divine Pivot Hall! I want them to die! I want them to die miserably!"

The golden bridge kept moving forwards, flashed across the air for a few times and dodged a few bolts of lightning descending from the sky. In the front, the space suddenly turned broad, as

they had already flown out of the gate of the heaven and saw the archway, which was wrapped in coiling mist streams.

Once they flew out through the gateway, they would be freed from the coverage of the Heaven and Earth great formation, and they could send the breathing earth to Si Xi safely.

Ji Ling let out a breath, then gave Gong Gong a cold and serious glance and said, "Gong Gong is sinful, we should've killed him today. We would be awarded by the world for that."

The three priests stood on the golden bridge. The elderly one grinningly responded, "Jin Ling girl, you're still full of anger, aren't you? We shall let human beings solve their own problems. The ones who will kill Gong Gong shouldn't be us."

Just now, Gong Gong was struck by the counterforce of the great formation, bumped on the jade pillar and broke his neck. At that time, Jin Ling showed a fierce intent of killing. She was going to pull out her sword and kill Gong Gong directly, but the three priests stopped her. Even now when she brought this up once again, the three priests hadn't changed their attitude.

Before the priest finished, the golden bridge slightly quaked and flew out from the ancient styled archway.

The three priests laughed loudly out, then waved there sleeves. The tower floating above Po's head and the streamer held in Gui Ling's hands transformed into a stream of mist simultaneously, rose into the air along with the three priests, and disappeared without leaving a trace, within a blink of an eye.

Zhu Rong transformed into a fiery light and dazzled over while shouting, "Did you get it?"

Ji Hao opened his mouth, prepared to talk, but from behind the archway, a large cloud of smoke sparkled. From within it, thousands of heavily armored warriors rushed out. A muscular warrior who was over six-meter tall, with a hideous face and a

head that looked like a fish head, wearing a red armor, pointed at Ji Hao and yelled, "I am Henggong Po, the current leader of Henggong Clan. Leave our old ancestor, otherwise..."

Ji Hao gave a resonant roar and immediately stepped out, dashing towards Henggong Po.

Following a popping noise, Ji Hao cracked the space and reached to Henggong Po, then ‘gently’ slapped his right palm down. Before Ji Hao’s right palm, the air rippled thickly like water. The milky-white ripples were broken by Ji Hao’s palm when they reached to over a hundred layers.

Henggong Po failed to see Ji Hao’s moves clearly before he sensed a piercing pain from his chest. Next, a hand-sized hole appeared in his chest.

Hundreds of Henggong Clan warriors rushed up, hacking down towards Ji Hao’s head with all kinds of weapons. Ji Hao laughed wildly out, dimmed down the protective light released from the stainless cloak, exposed his body and let those weapons attack him.

Loud clangs could be heard without an end. Five to six Divine Magi, sixty to seventy Magus Kings and over a hundred Senior Magi had their weapons thudded on Ji Hao’s body. Fiery sparkles were sent up against Ji Hao’s body, but no wound was left. On the contrary, all those weapons were twisted and broken, as if those were made from flour. The strong counterforce sent all Magus Kings and Senior Magi away.

Only a few Divine Magi of Henggong Clan endured the great pain from their palms, dropped their broken weapons, shouted out and wielded their fists towards Ji Hao.

Ji Hao reached out his pair of hands together. Before those palms, the air folded once again. Before the few Divine Magi could see Ji Hao’s moves, hand-sized holes appeared in their chests as well, while they were sent flying out.

"We have indeed captured the old ancestor of your Henggong Clan." said Ji Hao with a harsh tone, "Since we captured your old ancestor, today, we will let you go without killing you! Mend your ways as soon as you can. Do not follow Gong Gong to hell. Otherwise, when this is over, you would all be appointed to death because of your crimes!"

Henggong Po lied under the archway, looked at Ji Hao while vomiting blood.

Henggong fish was the old ancestor of Henggong Clan, one of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command, and the backbone of all Henggong Clan people. Henggong fish was captured by Ji Hao and his friends, so where should Henggong clan go then? Henggong Po felt in such a muddle now that he had no idea what to do.

Gong Gong's roars could be heard again from the heaven. Ji Hao laughed out, turned around and walked right away, along with Zhu Rong and his warriors. The group of people headed to Pu Ban City at their highest speed.

Chapter 949: The Beginning Stage of Water-control

Pu Ban City, the Town Hall.

The jade box with the breathing earth in it was placed right in the middle of the hall, while the magic sandbox, which had been showing the image of the entire Midland, floated in the air. Si Xi was wearing a black robe, treading on the air and standing straight. From his hands, bright light spots drifted out as he was carefully drawing something in the sandbox.

Emperor Shun and all human ministers had been silently watching Si Xi draw a magnificent, great-scale magic formation. The Midland was his canvas as he drew the outline of mountains and rivers.

Probably because of some mysterious, immeasurable power he inherited from Emperor Xuanyuan through his bloodline, as the leader of You Chong Clan, an especially mystical, indescribable connection existed between Si Xi and the mountains and rivers in the world. He could clearly sense the weakest earth meridian in a mountain or a river, and the most inconspicuous change of earth power in the deepest area of the earth.

This sensing ability was unique and special, and no one among the alliance of the human clans could do as good as him. Therefore, Si Xi had always been holding a prominent position among the humankind; he had a great power seized in his hands. Meanwhile, he had been playing an essential role.

Back then, when Ji Hao joined the Chi Ban Mountain War, the humankind had set up an enormous defensive magic formation in Chi Ban Mountain area based on the natural land, with the powers of mountains and rivers. Ordinary magic formation masters could never achieve that, not even legendarily powerful ones like Candle Dragon Gui, and neither could the leaders and elders of the other

clans do it. Si Xi was the only one capable of easily designing a tens of thousands of miles wide, tremendous defensive magic formation, and he had it perfectly done.

Ji Hao stood among the crowd. He didn't feel any pride or happiness because he successfully stole the breathing earth from the heaven and made a great contribution. He popped out his eyes, silently watching Si Xi draw in the magic sandbox, with sweat flowing all over the head.

Apparently, What Si Xi had been doing was quite cerebral, that sweat was oozing out from Si Xi's forehead in streams, even soaking his clothes. A mist stream had even risen from his head to three meters high.

Bright light beams were released from Si Xi's hands one after another. Abruptly, a stream of blood surged out from Si Xi's mouth and sprayed on the sandbox, dying the sandbox red.

"Abba!" Si Wen Ming stepped up and held Si Xi, who drifted down from the air.

"I'm fine!" Si Xi expressionlessly shook off Si Wen Ming's hands, grabbed the jade box with the breathing earth, then slightly bowed to Emperor Shun and said with a deep voice, "Emperor Shun, I have it in my mind already. I think we should try this plan in Pu Ban City first. If it succeeds, we can carry it out in the entire Midland immediately."

"We've all been counting on you, Minister Si Xi!" Emperor Shun stood up slowly and nodded, seriously bowing to Si Xi and responding.

Si Xi laughed, held the jade box with both of his hands, then turned around and walked out of the Town Hall. Led by Emperor Shun, the other human ministers in the hall lined up orderly and followed closely behind Si Xi.

These ministers were not only the most powerful ones among the

alliance of human clans, but they were also the strongest warriors and Maguspreists in the alliance. Si Xi was now trying to control the water and save all living beings in the world. For such a great matter, these people would not just stand behind him and make indiscreet remarks or criticisms.

Once they walked out of the hall, water clattering noise came from above their heads. The protective magic formation which covered the entire Pu Ban City, was glowing with a misty white light. Outside the screen, the rainwater had already accumulated for around ten meters deep. As a gale blew across, large waves were even raised from the water.

Fist-sized raindrops had been falling heavily, while tens of differently sized water streams poured down from the sky, loudly merging into the accumulated water.

The rain had grown heavier than before, when Ji Hao left for the heaven. More shockingly, many crocodiles, boas and other fierce aquatic creatures had been swimming around in the water. These aquatic creatures were with great defensive powers and strong vitality, much stronger than ordinary human beings. They had already adapted to the toxin in the water, and had been happily seeking food in the water.

People’s heart sank deeper and deeper.

Before, fierce aquatic creatures like crocodiles and boas usually lived by rivers and swamps. As long as human beings stayed far away from those areas, they would not be harmed by these fierce wild animals. But because of this endless rain, these dangerous animals reached everywhere along the water> This added another heavy risk to the humankind, besides the toxic water.

"These damned things!" A few daring crocodiles and water boas were even lying on the magic screen, greedily looking at those human ministers walking out of the Town Hall.

An elder from Huaxu Family, who had a pretty bad temper,

abruptly raised his head and threw a fierce, threatening glance at these animals. A dreadful power vibration was released immediately, under the effect of which, the bodies of the few tens of meters long crocodiles and water boas exploded. They turned into a cloud of blood, spreading out in the water and instantly attracting countless fierce aquatic creatures.

Si Xi also glanced at these dangerous wild beasts. He took a deep breath, rose into the air and soon reached out of the protective screen.

The others flew up behind him one after another. Each one of them released a strong power vibration from their bodies and kept themselves separated from the rain. In the water, many hungry wild aquatic beasts raised their heads, greedily staring at these people floating in the air.

Ji Hao looked around, then his eye corners began twitching intensely. What a joke! He saw countless triangle-shaped fins in the water. Were those sharks? Did those sharks come to Pu Ban City from the sea? But this should be fresh water, how did those sharks get here?

Ji Hao reached out his hand and caught a drop of rainwater, then licked it. After that, he cursed rudely.

Si Wen Ming and the others all reached their hands out to catch raindrops and taste. Next, all of them cursed out, as if they had forgotten about their identities. The rainwater was salty and bitter like the seawater, actually even more tasteless than the seawater.

The soil was soaked in such kind of water. So even if the rain stopped, would the soil still be able to grow crops? No matter how rich the natural powers in Pan Gu world were, it still required one to two years for the soil to recover after being soaked in the salty water. Within this period of time, no one could ever grow any crop in a soil like that.

Without a doubt, after this great rain, a famine would start

immediately.

Si Xi gave a rude curse as well. With a darkened face, he took the group of human ministers to a million of miles long mountain range on the west side of Pu Ban City.

This was a magnificent mountain range, and even the shortest peak was over ten-thousand meters tall. The chasms between peaks were extremely deep. The mountain range was winding, like a dragon. Mountains in this area were sturdy and solid, and the rocks exposed in the air were all purely black, as hard as iron blocks.

Si Xi reached his hand out and spread his fingers. A beautiful, immense magic formation blueprint appeared in front of everyone.

Tens of magic formation artists from the Magi Palace stepped out immediately, quickly working according to the blueprint in this mountain area. The mountains were split up, then enormous spell symbols were carved onto the mountains and the ground.

These spell symbols were not complicated. Instead, they were simple, with straight lines. But, each of them was enormous. Especially the ones around the core, spell symbols in that area were only with seven to eight strokes, but each stroke could extend for millions of miles, through the entire mountain range. The lines of spell symbols were winding along the mountain range, looked truly like a giant dragon lying on the ground.

With two entire days, this great magic formation was finally set up.

Si Xi gave a long and bright growl, then picked up a slight little bit of breathing earth from the jade box. He carefully spread the breathing earth on the most important thirty-six cores at the edge area of this mountain range.

Chapter 950: Ten-Thousand Dragons Seal the Water

When the breathing earth drifted away from his hands, Si Xi locked his fingers together and began to sing a magic spell. The ground was shaking, waving like water. Before the breathing earth landed on the earth, its magical power had reached to millions of miles away.

Mountains were melted and flattened, and all peaks were gone. The dragon-like, millions of miles long stream of spell symbols shone with a dazzling light. The light grew brighter and brighter, like germinating seeds, slowly sprouting from the ground.

The breathing earth fell on the ground in a perfect circle, surrounding this millions of miles long mountain range. Within this area, mountains disappeared one after another. The ground was flattened, and only that enormous line of spell symbols was left bulging, over a thousand meter tall, looking exactly like a dragon.

Under Si Xi's control, the breathing earth and the changing mountains turned this whole area into a tremendous bowl!

Crack! A rumbling thunder burst from the sky. Lightning bolts tore the clouds apart and struck on the ground. The thunderbolts landed on the dragon-like, giant line of spell symbols. Next, the dragon absorbed the power of lightning and burst with a wave of water-ripple-like light.

All of a sudden, no rain fell from above the heads of Ji Hao and the others anymore. Instead, in the area surrounded by the breathing earth, the rain turned incredibly heavy.

The water poured down from the sky in huge streams, roaring into this millions of miles huge area. Within a twinkling of an eye, the water accumulated to three feet deep, and a quarter of an hour

later, the water-level reached to three meters. A gale raised strong waves, as an hour later, this area turned into a waving sea. At first glance, one would see layers of waves roar and countless whirlpools clap against each other, causing thunderous noises.

"It is done?" Ji Hao turned around and looked at Pu Ban City.

He opened the eye of Dao of sun between his eyebrows and released a stream of golden light that flashed across the sky. Within his sight, not a single drop of rain existed.

Si Xi created a great-scale magic formation based on this mountain range, and that dragon-like line of spell symbols had truly released a dragon power. It controlled the rain and drew the moisture over from the area a hundred million miles in radius around Pu Ban City, then concentrated all the rainwater in this area.

Inside this area, the waves had been roaring thunderously, but outside, the earth was showering under the warm sunshine.

"It’s done!" Si Wen Ming wielded his fist in the air and laughed out loud towards Si Xi, "Abba, we succeeded! We truly did it! The rain in Pu Ban City has stopped! Not even a single drop of rain is left in Pu Ban City by now!"

"We succeeded!" Emperor Shun raised his arms high. He delightfully looked at Si Xi, then gave Si Wen Ming a complicated glance. Afterward, he laughed out and said, "People, we did it! Minister Si Xi did it! If it works in this area, it will work in the other areas of Midland!"

All human ministers laughed out loud in delight. Some clan leaders even shouted out in excitement, waved their weapons and started a battle dance.

Dark clouds covered this whole area. Water streams poured down from the sky ceaselessly, while countless fist-sized raindrops slapped down without an end. The water level was rising all the

time, at a shocking rate.

However, the new mountain range surrounded this area was transformed from the breathing earth. Along with the water-level, the mountain range was growing taller and taller. The mountains were always taller than the water, and were growing at a higher speed than the water.

The wall-like mountain range glowed with a bright yellow light. It was thick, sturdy and solid, seeming to be indestructible. The waves roared, undercurrents surged, and whirlpools clashed against each other, but the mountain range stayed perfectly motionless.

Si Xi stood on a mountaintop, carefully observed the change of the water-level, then said loudly and strongly, "Good, this seems to be successful for now! Right now, according to my blueprint, go set up this ten-dragon water-sealing water in the ten-thousand spots I picked!"

Calculating with his fingers for a while, Si Xi looked at those magic formation artists came from the Magi Palace and said thoughtfully, "The sooner we set up a water-sealing formation, the more people we can save. So, please, everyone!"

Si Xi held the jade box with breathing earth kept in it and deeply bowed to hundreds of thousands of magic formation artists from the Magi Palace.

All magic formation artists from the Magi Palace, all ministers of the alliance of human clans, including Emperor Shun, bowed to Si Xi deeply.

The sunlight spread on the bodies of these human leaders, all of them looking serious and solemn. Whether they had hatred between their clans or as individuals, these people now shared the same goal, that was setting up water-sealing magic formations and saving the humankind.

Facing the future of the entire humankind, those small hatreds were nothing.

Back then, when Emperor Xuanyuan led the entire world and fought against Chi You Army, didn't those clan leaders, who came from clans with bone-deep hatred for each other, fight side by side on battlefields, hold each other's hands and die in battles together?

Ji Hao assembled all magic formation artists who were capable of drawing magic symbols for large-scale magic formation in Yao Mountain City, and so did the leaders of those large-scale clans. Hundreds of millions of magic formation artists were gathered up, and under Si Xi's command, they worked day and night in the entire Midland.

According to the shapes of mountain ranges and flows of natural earth power in Midland, Si Xi picked ten-thousand spots in Midland for setting up the water-sealing magic formation. Each spot was millions of miles in radius. With ten-thousand great formations like this, and the magical power of the breathing earth, all moisture that came from the outer space in Midland and the four wastelands could be contained.

Indeed, the ten-thousand dragon water-sealing magic formation could not only seal the water in Midland. Once all ten-thousand water-sealing formations were all completed, the excessive moisture in the four wastelands would be forcibly drawn over as well.

By simply setting water-sealing magic formations in Midland, the rain problem in the entire world would be controlled.

With the breathing earth, ten-thousand water-sealing magic formations would be like ten-thousand bottomless bowls. No matter how much water poured in, these great bowls would never break.

Although this was only an option for an emergency, these ten-thousand dragons water-sealing magic formations had indeed

given all human beings a chance to survive.

Ji Hao started working as well. He led hundreds of thousands of magic formation artists and set up five water-sealing magic formations in a row under Si Xi's guidance. For half a month, Ji Hao and all magic formation artists under his command never slept for a second. Their eyes were filled with blood streaks, but they never stopped working.

When they were hungry, they took a couple of bites of solid foods, and when they were thirsty, the rainwater was all over the ground for them.

Magic formation artists under Ji Hao's command were all great, and the toxins in the rain couldn't harm them.

A big half a month passed like this. Five water-sealing magic formations were set up, after which, the rain stopped, and the sun raised again in Ji Hao's Yao Mountain territory and the territories of the other few earls and marquises. All people became as cheerful as larks under the sunshine.

Ji Hao stood on a mountaintop. Under his feet was a mountain generated by the breathing earth.

Looking at people walking out from caves, leaping down from trees and coming up from boats and rafts, looking at them thrilled with happiness, Ji Hao smiled as well.

"Ah, although it's not to my credit, Man Man, seeing everybody happy, I'm happy too!" Ji Hao intimately patted Man Man's head.

Man Man stood beside Ji Hao, grinningly looking at those happy people.

At this time, a noise came from a distance, as an angry voice could be heard, "Earl Yao, Earl Yao! Bloody water creatures, they're attacking Earl Si's troops!"

Chapter 951: The Army of Water Creatures

"Bloody things!"

Earl Si Yao Meng had been waving his inherited treasure, the wave-breaking ax, with a bloodied hand, while squeezing a few words out from between his teeth. The ax raised a hundred meters long white light and cut tens of aquatic warriors, who rushed over with sharpened bamboo sticks held in their hands, into two.

Blue and green blood splashed everywhere, while the tens of aquatic warriors, who were only at the level of Novice Magi, howled and fell on the ground. They hadn't even transformed into human shapes completely. They covered their wounds on the waists with their claws, twitching intensely on the ground.

Countless feet trod over their bodies, stomping the tens of dying aquatic warriors into meat paste. But then, more naked aquatic warriors fearlessly rushed up to Yao Meng with simple weapons like sharpened bamboo sticks.

Yao Meng showed his teeth while taking a long gasp. Enduring the great pain coming from his left arm, he wielded the ax over and over again. White light streams flashed across the air and put countless weak aquatic warriors down on the ground.

In the woods, a group of magic formation artists under Yao Meng's command lied on the ground with their bellies covered with their hands, moaning in pain. Some of them had their faces turned dark, foaming at the mouths. From the water down below, aquatic warriors dashed out one after another and fiercely attacked Yao Meng and his people, as if he were their greatest enemy.

Some aquatic warriors were even more daring. They howled loudly and leaped to hundreds of meters high along the rising wave. They rolled in the air and attempted to break into the woods through Yao Meng's defensive line to attack those magic formation artists who were already lying on the ground.

Hundreds of warriors under Yao Meng's command guarded in the woods, with large piles of stones around them. Every time aquatic warriors tried to fly over, they would throw out stones to hit them. Stones swished through the air like shooting stars, shattering those weak creatures into pieces.

Broken body pieces fell down, stimulating those fierce aquatic warriors even more. They opened their mouth and swallowed the blood and flesh of their own kind, then rushed up even fiercer.

Yao Meng only had thirty-thousand warriors under his command. Although each of them was at the senior-level or above, the number of enemies was way too huge, and the area that needed to be defended by these warriors was too large. They tried their best to reach every corner, but suffered the waves of attacks launched by those aquatic warriors pretty badly.

A deep roar was let out by a strong warrior commander under Yao Meng's command. He slipped, then tens of sharpened bamboo sticks poked on his body. This heavily armored warrior commander cast a resonant growl and released a violent wave of power, shattering those bamboo sticks and even turning a few aquatic warriors into clouds of blood mist, spreading out.

However, an old lobster warrior with a dark shell gave a smirk and threw away the bamboo, which was used for tripping the warrior commander. Then, a black light sparkled on his long and slim fingers while a great hammer abruptly appeared in his hand and released a strong power vibration.

This warrior commander had just released a strong wave of power. Before he could gasp for air, the giant hammer fiercely smashed on his head, along with the wild laughter of the old lobster warrior.

Next, a nearly tangible stream of power came from this old lobster warrior; he was a Magus-King-level spirit creature.

Yao Meng was infuriated. He chopped the hundreds of aquatic

warriors in front of him, then flashed to the old lobster warrior.

Puff! The head of the warrior commander was smashed by the lobster warrior with that giant hammer. His tall and sturdy body swayed, then heavily thudded on the ground. Yao Meng's eyes turned red in a fury. He howled hoarsely and sent out a dazzling stream of white light.

From the large group of aquatic warriors behind Yao Meng, an ordinary-looking gray-colored crab warrior abruptly leaped up and screamed, waving his arms while striking on Yao Meng's back with his enormous pair of crab pincers.

The shell of this green crab was thickly covered in strange and twisted natural spell symbols that sparkled brightly. A mountain-heavy power was released from this crab warrior, even raising a three hundred meters tall wave from the water in the distance.

This was a Divine-Magus-level, enormous spirit creature. His crab pincers had been nourished by the power that belonged to spirit creatures for years, and had become even harder and more lethal than ordinary Divine-level magic treasures.

Yao Meng sensed a terribly cold stream of power surge into his body like a flood, then he heard a cracking noise from his spine. A warmth rose from his throat, followed by which, large streams of blood with broken internal organ pieces mixed in it spurted to tens of meters away, shattering tens of lower-level aquatic warriors on the way.

"How dare you?!" Yao Meng turned around with difficulty and roared in rage, "How dare you break the great plan of water-control? You're seeking for death!"

The green crab laughed scornfully, then launched another heavy strike on Yao Meng's neck as he said, "The world is ruled by the flood now. This is a great fortune for our water-kind. Your human beings should all be drowned, and our water-kind should be the dominator of this world!"

The crab warrior’s face was covered in shell. Showing a cruel expression on that face, he continued, "Control the water? You think our fortune would be gone after you control the flood? Earl Si Yao Meng, as long as I kill you, according to the order given by the Water God, your territory will be mine!"

Yao Meng roared out with a strong and resonant voice, while his Divine Magus spirit blood surged rapidly in his body, flushing his injured body parts. However, from the three bone-deep wounds on his left arm, poisonous black blood had been flowing out ceaselessly. The sticky, poisonous blood was corroding his body. The harder he tried to boost up his spirit blood, the quicker the poison spread in his body.

"How does Snake Go’s venom taste?" The crab swiftly moved his pincer towards Yao Meng, attempting to cut his head off and finish this battle quickly. While he moved, the crab laughed quite excitedly, "For this attack, those poor Snack Go Clan things were almost drained in these few days! Hehe! I bet it doesn’t feel good, being attacked like this, am I right?"

Yao Meng cast another wave of furious hoarse growls and stared at the enormous approaching pincer.

Puff! A cyan-colored sword light flashed over. Before the crab could make any reaction, the cyan sword light penetrated his head through his temples and blew that hideous head up.

"Attacking people like this feels good!" Tens of miles away, Feng Xing stood on a large tree, looking at the crab warrior slowly falling to the ground.

"How dare you! You’re seeking death!"

Mr. Crow spread his arms and floated in the air. Ji Hao stood on his back, holding the immortal sun streamer and shouting at the tens of thousands of aquatic warriors down below.

As the immemorial sun streamer was waved, countless golden

sword light beams descended from the sky and swept across the army of aquatic warriors. Countless aquatic warriors were slaughtered by the sword light of the sun, then their bodies were set ablaze, as if someone had just poured a bucket of oil on each of them.

"Brothers, follow me!" Man Man excitedly waved the pair of hammers while yelling loudly, and led over a hundred thousand elite Yao Mountain City warriors to rush into the battlefield.

Thud! Thud! Two powerful spirit aquatic creatures dashed out to stop Man Man but ended up being turned into meat pies by her hammers.

Chapter 952: The Enormous Shark, King of Aquatic Creatures

The number of these aquatic warriors was incredibly huge, but not many higher grade ones existed among them.

Ninety-nine percent of warriors in this boundless army were weak spirit aquatic creatures. The weapons they used were only sharpened wooden or bamboo sticks; some were even with large pieces of stones.

These weak aquatic warriors encountered the elite Yao Mountain City warriors just like a bunch of sheep encountering a group of fierce dragons. Even the weakest Yao Mountain warrior was a peak-level Senior Magi. These elite Yao Mountain warriors rushed into the group of aquatic warriors with sharp weapons held in their hands. By randomly wielding their weapons, strong power vibrations would be created that shattered all aquatic warriors nearby.

Jia Clan warriors who chose to follow Ji Hao's lead were as strong and sturdy as bears. These over six meters tall Jia Clan warriors had specially made heavy weapons. Their hammers struck down like shooting stars banging against the ground, and their bolas swept across the air like a serpent flashing through. Wherever these Jia Clan warriors reached, large clouds of blood mist would rise. The figures of these Jia Clan warriors were barely visible, and only screams of those aquatic warriors could be heard from the dense blood mist.

From time to time, a few powerful and enormous spirit aquatic creatures leaped out from the crowd, but before they did anything, Shaosi and Taisi cast magic curses from the distance, with a large group of Maguspriests. In one breath at most, these Magus-King and Divine-Magus-level spirit aquatic creatures withered speedily under the effect of the curses cast by tens of thousands of

Maguspriests together. Taisi drained their life-force with his special power at a despairing rate, turning them into a puff of bone ash that dissipated in the air within a very short span of time.

But the one who had been killing with the highest efficiency was Yu Mu.

This fatso carried the large pot made by Yu Yu on his head and grinned warmly and honestly while walking in the crowd of aquatic creatures step by step. The faintly visible poison mist rolled in the air while aquatic warriors around him fell down wave by wave, twitching without being able to make any sound. The dead bodies of countless aquatic warriors quickly turned into black blood, and the poisonous blood mixed in the flood, killing more of them.

The fiercest Jia Clan warrior could kill three-hundred to five-hundred weak aquatic warriors at most, but with a handful of drug sprayed out by Yu Mu, tens of thousands, and even hundreds of thousands of those aquatic creatures would be killed right on the spot within a blink of an eye. What a terrifying killing rate!

Feng Xing stood in the distance, near the edge of the battlefield. He pulled his bow open and carefully searched for targets. He tried for quite a while but failed to find a relatively powerful one that was worth for him to make a shot. Consuming his power to kill those weak aquatic creatures... not worth it. In the end, Feng Xing dropped his bow while watching Yu Mu be surrounded by countless aquatic creatures and spreading his poison.

"Bloody fatso...Isn’t he afraid of having nightmares? In his dreams, he might be hunted by billions of aquatic creatures..."

The waves surged inexhaustibly. On the waves, the dead bodies of countless aquatic warriors floated. These awfully smelling corpses had piled up as a meters thick layer. Feng Xing looked at this terrifying ocean of corpses created by Yu Mu, and couldn’t help but show his teeth in shock.

Earl Si gasped desperately for air, then laughed out loud. He waved his ax towards Ji Hao, who was standing on Mr. Crow's back, and said, "Earl Yao, thank you! When this flood is controlled, come to my Si Water City. In there, you can have as much fine wine, delicious meat, and as many beautiful girls as you want!"

Si Water City was the city Yao Meng lived in as Earl Si. Yao Meng's territory were located on the eastern side of Yao Mountain territory. In other words, Yao Meng and Ji Hao were true neighbors.

Ji Hao smilingly cupped his hands towards Yao Meng, then looked at those magic formation artists lying in the woods. He frowned and asked, "What happened? Are they poisoned? Otherwise, how could these water-king things ever harm you, Earl Si?"

Among hundreds of thousands of magic formation artists, many were indeed powerful. But at the moment, they all lied on the ground and couldn't even make a move. If these magic formation artists weren't poisoned, despite the giant number of those aquatic warriors, the water-kind army could never cause any threat!

Yao Meng had his face flushed. He pointed at the three deep wounds on his left arm, that had poisonous blood flowing out and poison mist lingering in. He laughed embarrassedly and responded, "I was careless, I was careless...These days, none of them has ever taken a good rest. Therefore, I cooked some soup for them to warm their bodies. Hehe, I was...I was indeed careless... Damn it!"

In the next moment, Yao Meng burst with a loud shout, as Ji Hao pulled out the nine suns devil-destroying sword all of a sudden. A golden beam of sword light dazzled down towards Yao Meng. Yao Meng thought Ji Hao attacked him, and that almost freaked him out.

Buzz! Followed by a thunderous noise, a giant wave roared over,

crushing the pile of corpses of aquatic creatures in front of Yao Meng. Next, an exceptionally tall and muscular silhouette rushed out of the wave and lunged a long spear that was sparkling with a black watery light at Yao Ment's heart, along with a fierce gale.

Ji Hao's sword light dazzled down and struck right on that long spear.

The sword light exploded and pushed the long spear away, making it get stuck in the ground.

There came another thunderous bang. A great power burst from the long spear, then a black stream of mist rose like a dragon, even brushing against Yao Meng's body. Wherever the black smoke swept across, rocks were shattered, and the ground was split. Thousands of towering ancient trees in the woods were blown into pieces, and over a thousand poisoned magic formation artists were swallowed by the black mist, crushed like beans in a millstone.

The puffing noise could be heard without an end. After the black mist disputed, a, meters wide, hundreds of meters deep and hundred miles long ditch was left behind Yao Meng.

"Bastard!" Yao Meng's eye instantly turned red. This strike was so heavy that if Ji Hao didn't discover it and launch a sword move to stop it, Yao Meng would have been killed already.

"Damn it! My rewards!" The tall and sturdy man, who launched this strike, murmured with a low voice. He carried that nearly one hundred meters long spear and slowly stood straight. This man was over thirty meters tall, standing in front of Yao Meng like a hill.

The rough skin of this man was light silver in color. His limbs were long, and his body was unusually muscular. The body of this man looked similar to a human body, but his head was not a human head. Instead, it was an ugly shark head.

The large eyes of this shark man shone with a blood-red light, as

he turned around, opened his enormous jaws and laughed, "Earl Yao, Ji Hao? Good, your territory is more than ten times larger than Yao Meng's. If I kill you, your territory will be mine!"

Ji Hao coldly looked at the shark man, then flashed across the air and moved beside Yao Meng.

Ji Hao out a detoxifying golden pill made by Priest Dachi, handed to Yao Meng, then said in a deep voice, "Earl Si, you wait aside. I'll deal with this one!"

Yao Meng took over the pill and threw into his mouth without any hesitation. A few streams of dark blood flowed out of the wounds on his left arm, then the poison inside his body was dispelled completely. Next, as his spirit blood surged in his body, all his injuries recovered fully.

"Earl Yao, be careful! This thing is not easy to deal with! I think he's as powerful as a peak-level Divine Magus!" Yao Meng stepped back while kindly reminding Ji Hao, "Spirit creatures are different from human beings. At the same power level, they're always stronger than us. Earl Yao, you have to be extra careful!"

Ji Hao nodded silently. The shark-man raised his long spear and laughed again, "Be careful? Useless! Without the strength, you're chickens to be slaughtered!"

Shaking his large head, the shark-man continued, "Remember, the one who killed you is the giant one, the king of aquatic creatures, me, Big Shark!"

Big Shark lifted that long spear, seeming ready to strike on Ji Hao's head.

Dong! Dong! No one noticed where Man Man rushed out from and how she smashed her hammers on the back of Big Shark's head.

Chapter 953: Shark Brothers

Bong! Bong!

Like a resounding bell ring, two muffled whomps transformed into strong sound waves, spreading out in all directions. Piles of corpses of aquatic warriors were sent flying up into the sky; some were even sent thousands of meters away.

Big Shark shook his head, with his large eyeballs bulged out of his eye sockets for about a foot. Massive streams of saliva gushed out of his mouth, that made him look rather weird and hilarious. Meanwhile, a large lump quickly grew up from the back of his head, turning as big as a water tank within a few seconds.

"Sneak attacking me?" Big Shark stopped attacking Ji Hao and turned his enormous, clumsy body around slowly, poisonously looking at Man Man.

Man Man dropped the pair of hammers, and had been quickly swinging her arms while staring at Big Shark in surprise. She knocked Big Shark on the back with her pair of hammers, and even if it were a mountain, Man Man would have flattened it. However, Big Shark was incredibly strong; he had no other injuries except the lump on his head. On the contrary, Man Man sensed a great pain from her wrists, and her bones were nearly broken.

One had to mention that Man Man had also taken a linden seed of Priest Mu, under the strong effect of which, Man Man's Fire God power had already improved largely. As a descendant of the Fire God, Man Man didn't need to grow inner spirit stars, as she had already reached the level of Divine Magi!

Besides, Man Man was talented. She was born with an amazingly vast strength. Additionally, Zhu Rong had given her an enormous amount of dragon spirit blood to nourish her body, which meant, Man Man was just like a human-shaped, violent dragon!

Even with that strength of hers, she failed to harm Big Shark. Clearly, Big Shark was a strong one.

"Man Man, step back!" Ji Hao growled out and flashed across the air. The nine suns devil-destroying sword hacked down towards Big Shark, leaving a golden sword light in the sky.

Big Shark gave a great growl, following which, tens of water columns rose from the surrounding water. Behind him, a thirty-meter-wide, nine-foot-thick water shield appeared. The water shield spun swiftly like a whirlpool and shielded him from Ji Hao, along with a shrill noise.

After raising the water shield, Big Shark paid no attention to Ji Hao. Instead, he wielded the long spear with both hands and fiercely struck down towards Man Man's head.

Man Man showed no sign of weakness either. She raised the pair of hammers and leaped straight up. The pair of hammers clanged loudly against Big Shark's long spear, leaving two arc-shaped red glows in the sky. The moves of both of them were incredibly simple, without any skill to be mentioned. This was a pure fight of violence.

A thunderous boom was generated. Flame-thunderbolts blasted from Man Man's hammerheads, followed by earthshaking thunders. Man Man screamed, then was sent flying away like a shooting star by a significant force.

Flame-thunderbolts dazzled on the hammerheads. Large bolts of thunder dazzled to Big Shark's arms though his spear and raised large puffs of smoke from his silver skin. The skin of his arms was broken as blood splashed out.

Ji Hao's nine suns devil-destroying sword let out a high-pitched scream while the whirlpool-like water shield was split up by it. A scorching hot beam of sword light landed on Big Shark's left knee.

Puff! Ji Hao's sword edge quaked slightly. He didn't sense much

of resistance, while the incredibly sharp sword easily cut into Big Sharp's leg, just like cutting into a piece of tofu. Ji Hao cut off an entire lower leg of Big Shark.

Blood surged out in streams, Big Shark screamed in pain. The golden essence sun fire had been blazing on his wound, and within a blink of an eye, a small half of his thigh was burned into a strand of smoke, as the golden fire was speedily reaching up to the rest of his body.

"What the hell is this fire? My body is nourished by the pre-world essence water for countless years. Every inch of my skin contains an immeasurable amount of water power. What fire can possibly set ablaze my body?" Big Shark's face twisted in pain while hysterically growing at Ji Hao.

The essence sun fire was burning quickly. No matter how loudly Big Shark bragged about this body that was nourished by the pre-world essence water and no fire could possibly hurt him, the golden fire swiftly spread to his upper body.

Big Shark burst with a furious roar. He abruptly raised the long spear and cut down. He cut off his entire left leg, then gnashed his teeth and threw a fierce glance at Ji Hao. Another wave of blood sprayed out. Next, Big Shark roared out resonantly once again.

Followed by his voice, a white bone grew out from the bleeding end of his left thigh, then large amounts of muscular tissue and blood veins grew out. Within a single second, Big Shark had a new leg. Nevertheless, this rapid regrowth was obviously spirit-blood-consuming, as Big Shark's face withered; even his sin became loose, as if he had suddenly grown many years older.

Ji Hao silently raised the sword and hacked down towards Big Shark. The nine sun spell symbols sent out dazzling streams of light, looking like nine suns descending from the sky. They released a great heat that evaporated all moisture in the surrounding area for miles.

"Die!" Big Shark shouted and raised the long spear, bravely and fearlessly lunging at Ji Hao's chest.

He didn't put up any defense. Clearly, he was putting up a desperate fight against Ji Hao. If Ji Hao's sword landed on his body, his long spear would definitely pierce into Ji Hao's chest too.

The long spear of his was nearly a hundred meters long, as thick as a water-tank. Being poked by a spear like this, ordinary people would certainly be crushed.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. His pupils shrunk to the size of needle points — A desperate fight? He liked desperate fights the most! By now, Ji Hao was just worried that the others might not want to put up a desperate fight against him! Speaking of desperate fights, Ji Hao never lacked courage, and now, he didn't lack the power either!

His heart was beating violently. In the five-colored flame, the round cauldron was still digesting the Pan Jia sun. The tiny sun was constantly transforming into pure essence sun power, sending it into Ji Hao's body. It was added with the earth power that Ji Hao swallowed back in the treasury of the heaven, that had been transforming into Chaos power and merging with Ji Hao's entire body.

Ji Hao's muscles swelled, and he suddenly grew about a foot taller. Blood veins bulged from under his skin while a strong power vibration spread out from his body that could even make people feel hard to breathe. At the moment, Ji Hao was like a Chaos beast who suddenly showed up, pressing Big Shark's power vibration down. Big Shark's blood flow was disordered. He dared not to look directly at Ji Hao, and even his limbs began shaking slightly.

An overwhelming, bloodline-level suppression made Big Shark even want to turn around and flee. But because of his wild instinct, he tremblingly straightened his long spear and kept his teeth gnashed, lunging at Ji Hao once again.

Clang! The long spear poked on Ji Hao’s chest. The stainless cloak sent up a bright golden light and squeezed a shrill creaking noise out of the spear, as it was violently turned into a twisted iron stick.

The nine suns devil-destroying sword tore apart Big Shark’s arms and sank into his chest. Golden light burst from his eyes, mouth, ears, and nose, then along with a hoarse howl, Big Shark’s upper body was suddenly turned into a puff of smoke.

"Big brother died! Kill him! Kill him! Avenge our big brother!"

Furious roars came from a distance away in the water. A massive wave rose, treading upon which were more than sixty muscular men, who had the same body shape as Big Shark.

These men all had human bodies and shark heads. The power vibrations released from their bodies were similar to that released from Big Shark as well. Apparently, they were siblings!

Ji Hao showed his teeth in shock. Over sixty siblings? These water-kind creatures indeed had a great fertility!

Chapter 954: The Disaster of the Water-kind

"I am the second brother of the Shark Family! Give back the life of my big brother!"

A shark man yelled with a hoarse voice, straightened a long spear and lunged at Ji Hao fiercely. Same as Big Shark's weapon, this shark man's weapon was also made from the ice bronze from the bottom of the sea. The spear was huge and heavy, only having a few most basic sharpening and strengthening spell symbols on it. These spears were only the lowest-level spell symbol weapons, and couldn't be even counted as magic weapons.

Ji Hao puffed up his chest, facing the spear. The spearhead heavily struck on his chest, and the stainless cloak burst with a bright golden light. The spear twisted, and while this shark man gazed at Ji Hao in a great shock, Ji Hao wielded the sword and chopped his head off.

"I am the third brother of Shark Family, how dare you..."

Another long spear clanged against Ji Hao's chest. The third shark man roared, as a strong power coiled around his body, looking like black water streams. The bone-piercing cold power spread out, even turning the surrounding water into icebergs.

Ji Hao crooked his left forefinger. The nine suns spear flew out. He wielded the spear and penetrated the head of the third shark man, disabling him from finishing his speech.

Following a swishing noise, the pair of small crescent-shaped blades flew out from the spear and brought up two beams of golden lights, dazzling all over the sky. Tens of shark men shouted and howled, as they suffered pretty badly from the swift attacks launched by the pair of small blades. Thin golden light beams circled around them and squeezed out streams of blood. These shark men were strong, yet they had no magic to use. Soon, each of them was penetrated by the pair of small blades hundreds of times.

Followed by waves of screams of those lower-grade aquatic warriors, tens of shark men, who were at the level of Magus Kings or even above, had faintly golden flames rising from their bodies. A gale roared across, and these shark men howled, then quickly turned into puffs of drifting ash.

Clang! A Magus-King-level aquatic warrior who had been hiding among the group of water-kind warriors, dropped his machete and tremblingly kneeled on the ground. This catfish warrior cried loudly and desperately, "Don’t kill me, please don’t kill me! I still have over three-hundred babies at home, waiting for me to feed them! I can’t die!"

Thud! A Magus-King-level electric eel warrior dropped his weapon, also kneeling on the ground while trembling.

Ji Hao easily slaughtered tens of Magus-Kings-level and Divine-Magus-level water-kind warriors. Without their leaders, the rest of these water-kind warriors, who were as smart as human beings, all freaked out. They dropped their weapons and surrendered to Ji Hao one after another.

Human beings valued their dignity. For their clansmen and families, many human beings would choose death before disgrace. But these aquatic creatures were driven by their instincts. They were gathered up by those powerful ones as their leaders. Now, those leaders had died, so they fell into the state of disunity. The desire of survival was now above all.

Countless lower-grade aquatic warriors, who hadn’t even learned of the scariness of death, dropped their bamboo and wooden sticks. They learned to kneel down and huddled on the ground, like those relatively stronger ones. The ones that had arms buried their heads in their arms, while the one without arms simply buried their heads in mud; all of them were shaking intensively.

Groups of aquatic warriors kneeled down on the ground or in the water, surrendering to Ji Hao and Yao Meng’s warriors.

Human warriors scattered in the troops of these aquatic warriors ordered them to leave the water and go to the higher ground in the woods and gather together. Troops of aquatic warriors walked out of the water; tens, then hundreds of thousands, a million, and within a blink of an eye, over ten-million aquatic warriors gathered in the woods. Anyone would be shocked by this giant dark crowd.

These aquatic warriors were all lower-grade shrimps, fishes, crabs; many of them had just gained some basic intelligence, and were just like three to five years old children. They were weak. Most of them were even not as powerful as ordinary human beings, their strengths equal to the strengths of thirteen to fourteen years old teenagers at most. Added with the fact that they didn't even have armors, and their weapons were only sharpened bamboo sticks and wooden sticks, these aquatic warriors were just indescribably weak.

However, their great number triggered a change. Over ten-million aquatic warriors circled Yao Meng and his people up, while Yao Meng and those magic formation artists were poisoned. Thus, this army of aquatic warriors became a nightmare, and Yao Meng and tens of thousands of elites under his command nearly died in these woods.

Ji Hao stood on a rock with Yao Meng, looking at those aquatic warriors walking out of the water.

They saw many strange types, such as frog warriors, fishes with shells, water snake warriors, viviparidae warriors. These aquatic warriors all had a strong earthy smell. They walked out of the water one after another while murmuring in strange languages. With their eyes quickly rolling in their eye sockets, they obediently squeezed together in the woods.

Occasionally, conflicts would burst among them suddenly. For example, under Ji Hao's eyes, a fish warrior suddenly opened his mouth and swallowed a shrimp warrior up. Around that shrimp

warrior, hundreds of shrimp warriors screamed and yelled, wielding their fists to punch the fish warrior. Warriors under Ji Hao's command rushed up to appease this, and only after killing over three-hundred shrimp warriors right on the spot did these noisy little things finally quiet down.

"These things?!" Yao Meng pointed at those aquatic warriors and growled in an extreme anger and disgust, "These things, how dare they?" Ji Hao's face was quite dark at the moment. These aquatic warriors were indeed weak, but their number was way too huge. Within a quarter of an hour, another ten-million of them had walked up from the water. Nearly thirty-million aquatic warriors now gathered up!

The one who planned all these was indeed patient. How on earth did they raise so many odd things? Nearly thirty-million aquatic warriors, not to mention their power levels, among then, tens of Divine-Magus-level and around a thousand Magus-King-level powerful ones existed, added with about ten-thousand senior-level leaders. These relatively powerful ones hid among the weak ones and launched surprise and sneak attacks, managing to cause severe losses to Yao Meng's army!

Ji Hao let out a breath and turned around to look at Man Man, who trod on a fiery cloud and flew back.

"Man Man, are you alright? That shark man had quite a strength!" asked Ji Hao.

Man Man shook her head, curiously looking at those aquatic warriors. These things had just fought a great battle, so they were probably hungry by now. Aquatic creatures fed on each other, and this was normal. At the moment, they looked at the 'food' around them, all seeming ready to do something. The atmosphere was not peaceful at all.

At this time, a strong wave roared over.

A giant crab, which was entirely bronze in color, and about three-

hundred meters in radius, stood upon the wave, with countless aquatic warriors following behind him. The crab wielded his pair of pincers and shouted, "I've already slaughtered every last one in Si Water City! My kids! Kill!"

A strong power vibration struck down and agitated all those obedient aquatic warriors.

Standing beside Ji Hao, Yao Meng gave a loud growl, then let out a large mouthful of blood.

Chapter 955: Boiling Water

Spirit animals, especially the ones had just gained the basic intelligence, ha simple minds— Following the powerful ones! Therefore, since the crab roared on the coming wave, the thirty-million aquatic warriors, who had just surrendered to Ji Hao, yelled out simultaneously, rushing to Ji Hao, Yao Meng and his warriors crazily.

Yao Meng vomited blood. Seeing this, warriors under his command fell into panic. Hearing that everyone in Si Water City was slaughtered, Yao Meng's warriors fighting spirit dropped like anything, as all of them began drawing back to Yao Meng.

But those aquatic warriors who rushed to Ji Hao's warriors were less fortunate. They squeezed together rather tight. If they had stayed motionless, they would have been fine. But once they moved, Yu Mu gave his order, following which, almost every single one of the over one-hundred-thousand Maguspriests brought over by Ji Hao threw out a handful of their secretly concocted magic poison.

At present, every human Maguspreist had learned a few magic drug concocting skills, so that they could help their clansmen live a better life. Every Maguspreist had his or her own specialties, and all Maguspreist had their own special formulas. Now, over a hundred thousand different types of magic poisons mixed together, and a terrifying result was instantly generated.

Poisonous powders and liquid spread in the air and merged with each other, creating a bright light and large clouds of poisonous smoke.

Swoosh! A colorful dense cloud emerged, covering the air for hundreds of miles. This complicated poisonous cloud quickly spread out in all directions and enveloped half of the aquatic army.

Puffing noise could be heard without an end as those aquatic

warriors screamed miserably. Their shells and skin were corroded by the poisonous mist. Blood gushed out from their wounds, making them twitch on the ground in pain.

Within a few breaths, over eighty percent of those aquatic creatures died in the woods. Poisonous blood flowed down light a flood and dyed the surging floodwater red. Then, the strong poison contained in the blood killed countless more aquatic warriors in the water.

The ones who luckily survived the poison screamed crazily. Led by that large crab, they fearlessly rushed towards those elite warriors under Ji Hao's command. Tens of thousands of Jia Clan warriors laughed excitedly. They raised their heavy weapons while flame-like blood-red airwaves rose around their bodies.

A big half of these Jia Clan warriors under Ji Hao's command belonged to Di Family, and had followed Di Yantuo to Yao Mountain City. The power they inherited was the power of the blood curse from Blood Moon. The dense blood flame burned and coiled on their weapons.

Heavy weapons smashed down over and over again, sending up tens of thousands of dragon-like blood-red light streams. Large numbers of aquatic warriors were blown up by the blood-red light streams. Those relatively stronger ones barely fended themselves against the blood-red light, but under the effect of Blood Moon power, their bodies began withering rapidly.

Following a loud puffing noise, many relatively powerful aquatic warriors had their spirit blood drained by the blood-red light, powerlessly lying on the ground.

The wave roared in the distance, and on it, the large bronze crab screamed furiously. He let out countless fist-sized bubbles from his mouth, swishing towards Ji Hao like shooting stars.

Yao Meng was suffering a heartache, and couldn't stop vomiting blood. Over ten-thousand elite warriors gathered around him, and

those bubbles let out by the crab were like a storm that covered Ji Hao, Yao Meng, and all warriors around him.

Ji Hao's body shone with a golden light, and nine suns rose from his body. They evaporated all the bubbles within the area three-hundred meters around him in a flash. The stainless cloak didn't just protect Ji Hao, it also protected Yao Meng, who was vomiting blood because of hearing about the massacre that happened in his city.

But those warriors under Yao Meng's command were not as lucky. Those seemingly fragile bubbles were actually incredibly sturdy and heavy. Each bubble contained a tremendously powerful after-world water bomb.

Many warriors raised their shields or wielded their weapons to fend against these bubbles, but as a buzzing noise was started, black streams of light exploded upon these warriors' heads. The lingering strong power of those water bombs swept across the entire area. The attack range of each water bomb was around three-hundred meters.

A large number of Yao Meng's warriors were killed by the wave of water bombs. Their bodies were torn apart, and their internal organs and bones were all crushed by the lingering power. Even their weapons and shields were blown into small metal pieces, flying all over the sky, except for those treasure-level ones.

Within a couple of breaths, the troop led by Yao Meng suffered a great loss. At least three-thousand warriors were killed by those water bombs.

The area Ji Hao and Yao Meng stood in was now full of bumps and hollows; the hundreds of meters tall hill was actually flattened.

On the wave, the crab waved his pincers, fiercely pointed at Ji Hao and Yao Meng and said, "Kids, kill! So many people, so much fresh, tasty food! Eat a human brain, you will become as smart as

them!"

Ji Hao paused briefly, while Yao Meng quickly raised his head.

"Eat a human heart, you will become as brave as them," The crab laughed with a vicious tone, "Eat the internal organs of a human being, you can be as strong as them! Human beings, they're our best food!"

The crab raised a pair of hammers and clanged them loudly. Immediately, thunderbolts descended from the sky and landed on his hammers. Electric bolts coiled around the pair of hammers, causing loud and shocking, rumbling noises.

"Great Gong Gong, he made this world a paradise for our water-kind. All human beings will become our food! Ah, I have my eyes on this little girl... Her meat must be so fresh and tender!"

The crab yelled loudly while straightening his stick-like eyes and fixing them on Man Man, who stood beside Ji Hao.

"My meat is not tender and fresh at all!" Man Man waved her hammers and growled ragingly, "Big thing, I'm gonna remove your shell and cook you to eat that crab cream in you!"

She said that as if she was planning to do that for real. Man Man opened her mouth and let out a hundred and eight human-head-sized fiery dragon pearls. They then transformed into three-hundred meters wide fireballs and swooshed up into the sky, smashing down towards the boundless army of aquatic warriors behind the crab along with a sky-devouring wave of flame.

Rumbling noise could be heard endlessly. This set of fire dragon pearls were a secret weapon that belonged to the Zhu Rong Family, amazingly powerful and nearly unstoppable.

Fireballs dove into the water, and next, the floodwater boiled within the area a thousand miles. Countless aquatic warriors screamed, cried and wailed, attempting to leap up from the boiling water. But the boiling water cooked them and made them sink

down to the bottom while moaning.

The large crab had his bronze shell suddenly turned red, and even his voice changed.

Chapter 956: The God of Si Water

The water boiled, and the air was suffused by a nice and attractive aroma.

Countless aquatic creatures were boiled into a giant pot of soup by Man Man, and this great smell made Yu Mu swallow his saliva in the distance. Ji Hao threw a glance at him and found that his eyes had even turned red, gazing at that boiling water. Those eyeballs couldn't even move anymore.

That large crab roared in a fury. Man Man was cruel, that except for the ones at the senior-level and above, all aquatic warriors under the crab's command were boiled to death. This completely infuriated the crab.

"Die!" From tens of miles away, the crab wielded his pincers and smashed his pair of hammers down towards Ji Hao's head, along with bolts of lightning.

Ji Hao snorted coldly, trod on a beam of golden light, and rushed out. He raised the nine suns devil-destroying sword with his right hand and the spear with his left hand. These two supreme treasures started two dazzling streams of golden light and hacked on the two hammers of the crab.

This crab was powerful, and the power vibration he released was strong as well. He was probably above the grade of peak-level Divine Magi. Nevertheless, this pair of hammers waved by him were made from ordinary alloy, without any special technique.

Ji Hao scanned across this pair of hammers, which were nearly ten-meters wide, with his spirit power. He found that these two hammers were filled with holes and thin cracks, and many impurities like sands and seashells. Although the hammers had some pretty powerful spell symbols on it, in Ji Hao's eyes, these two hammers were no different from garbage.

Bang! Bang! The pair of hammers were shattered into bits. Countless small pieces zipped out while thunderbolts burst from the hammerheads, randomly landing on Ji Hao. The stainless cloak released that dazzling golden light again and turned them into nothingness before they could even approach him.

The large crab paused in shock. His pair of stick-like eyes moved up and down for a while, then he suddenly burst with a shrill shout. He opened his mouth and let out a sharp silver-white stream of water towards Ji Hao.

A puffing noise was started. The water-stream-like thing was actually condensed from lightning bolts. This crab was quite gifted, that he could even turn lightning bolts into water-like dense streams, and accumulate it inside his body.

The dense stream of lightning bolts dazzled out, but Ji Hao didn't dodge it, letting it pour on his head and face.

Countless bolts of lightning sizzled on Ji Hao's body, but as the nine blazing sun flashed across, a strong golden light dispelled all the lightning bolts. Ji Hao swung his left arm forwards and threw out the nine suns spear, creating a beam of golden light in the air.

The large crab howled out loud, wielded his pair of pincers, and raised numerous hundreds of meters thick water walls from the floodwater. Dense, watery mist rolled up and shielded the crab and those water walls behind it. Nevertheless, how powerful was the nine suns spear? The water walls were split up one after another, while the nine suns spear flew swiftly towards the crab.

When the nine sun spear was only less than three-hundred meters from the crab, a red light sparkled in the boiling water behind the crab. The one hundred and eight fire dragon pearls thrown out by Man Man earlier darted out and violently struck on the crab's back, along with an ear-piercing series of swishing noise.

Then, a quick series of thuds spread out. Those fire dragon pearls could release a destructive fire power, but they were not heavy at

all, neither could they cause severe damage when smashed on someone's back. The one hundred and eight fire dragon pearls struck down in a row, but only manage to sway the crab's body.

However, every single fire dragon pearl injected a fearful stream of poisonous earth fire into the crab's body. The large crab opened his mouthpart, but this time, he couldn't let bubbles out of that mouth. Instead, what spurted from it were glowing-red streams of fire.

In the air, a nice aroma of stewed crab started spreading.

The large crab raised his head and seemed to scream in pain. But large streams of fire had been swooshing out of his mouth, disabling him from making any sound.

The nine suns spear caused another shrill swishing noise while it penetrated the crab's body. Ji Hao locked his finger together and quickly cast a magic, deeply shouting 'blow'. The nine suns spear blasted inside the crab's body and released dense spheres of essence sun fire. Countless streaks of flame squeezed out from the cracks of the crab's shell, stuck on his body, and wrapped him entirely up.

This large crab was indeed amazingly powerful. That shell of his must have been cultivated for countless years, as it was incredibly sturdy.

Within around ten breaths, the things inside that shell were burned out completely, but the shell remained perfectly undamaged. On the contrary, burned by the essence sun fire, the crab shell was added with a crystal-like luster, and even seemed like bronze-colored glass.

Nevertheless, it was the essence sun fire after all. As the golden flame lingered on the shell, the edge of that shell showed a sign of melting. Ji Hao pointed his finger out and took back the nine suns spear and all the essence sun fire.

"Great treasure!" Before Ji Hao could collect that crab shell, Yu Mu had already rushed over while drooling. He seized the crab shell as quickly as he could and said, "This treasure is with an amazing flavor. It’s perfect for making stock!"

Ji Hao paused for a second. Looking at Yu Mu’s face, which was filled with longing, Ji Hao’s mouth corner twitched, but he didn't say a word.

This crab shell could even maintain its shape in the essence sun fire for a while. Anyone would try everything to make it into a top-grade armor, no? That would be a peak-level Divine-grade magic treasure at least, and could even become an inherited treasure of a large human clan!

But Yu Mu was actually going to make stock with it!

"Foodie!" Ji Hao complained in a low voice while Yu Mu trod on water, running here and there in satisfaction. He was collecting the corpses of those aquatic warriors, meters long eels, foot-long pond loaches, chariot-sized frogs, water-tank-sized viviparidae...

The bodies of these spirit creatures were nourished by natural powers, and tasted much better than ordinary aquatic creatures. With Yu Mu’s cooking skills, these corpses could absolutely become countless delicious dishes back in Yao Mountain City.

Thinking of those incomparably delicious food cooked by Yu Mu with weird methods, even Ji Hao involuntarily swallowed his saliva.

"Ji Hao! Be careful!" While Ji Hao was silently feeling shame for himself, Shaosi’s shout came from behind him. Meanwhile, a swishing noise could be heard. The spear thrown out by Shaosi sliced the air open and flew over from above Ji Hao’s shoulder, fiercely piercing towards the silhouette that abruptly appeared in front of Ji Hao.

That man-shaped silhouette was covered in a faint layer of

watery mist, with a black steel sword held in his left hand. At the moment, he was swinging the sword down towards Ji Hao’s face. Seeing Shaosi’s spear flying over, the silhouette snorted, slightly raised the black sword, and accurately hit the spearhead.

Clang! The spear thrown out by Shaosi with all of her strength was easily sent flying away by the sword. The spear zipped straight up into the sky and disappeared within a blink of an eye.

Ji Hao took a step backward, and that silhouette suddenly made a step forward, lunging the sword towards Ji Hao’s heart.

Behind Ji Hao, Yao Meng’s raging growl came from the distance, "The God of Si Water! You and my Si Water City have been friends for generations! What are you doing?!"

Chapter 957: Thrilling Fight Against the River God

Ji Hao put his sword lengthways as a glden light rose in streams, shielding him against the black steel sword.

Along with a puffing noise, a dense cloud of cold mist was sent up from the black sword, sparkling brightly. Facing it, any ordinary human being would have their eyes blinded already, but beams of golden light burst from Ji Hao's three eyes, penetrated it and saw Si Water God's real face.

Clang! The two swords heavily struck against each other.

A water-like layer of golden light rippled on the edge of the nine suns devil-destroying sword, reaching the black steel sword. A snow-like white cold mist drifted down from the black steel sword, continually clashing against the golden light.

The intense conflict between the golden light and cold mist caused a high-pitched frictional noise.

In the next second, a strong force attacked and vibrated Ji Hao's wrist, shook his body and pushed him back for tens of steps.

Si Water God had a white, beardless face. The face was long and slim, and so was his body. He was wrapped in a faint layer of black mist. As he swung his right arm up, an oddly shaped black steel ax appeared in his hand. He spread his arms and silently rushed to Ji Hao, like a black crow gliding across the sky.

The sword held in his left hand lunged and sliced, raising layers of cold mist that drifted like a heavy snow. Meanwhile, the ax in his right hand hacked violently and created waves of black smoke, roaring towards Ji Hao. Si Water God had great fighting skills. He circled around Ji Hao swiftly, and within every single second, thousands of cold beams of light would be sent towards Ji Hao's vital body parts.

Ji Hao made the Big Dipper steps and unhurriedly fended him off with the nine suns devil-destroying sword. He seemed to be slow, but his moves were smooth and mysterious, that the storm-like waves of attack launched by Si Water God would always be blocked timely by the sword.

What surprised Ji Hao was that Si Water God was incredibly strong, even stronger than himself. Every time their weapons bumped into each other, Ji Hao felt that all of his bones were softened by the vibration. Consequently, he could only put forth seventy to eighty percent of his strength.

"Si Water God, you're a true God of this world. Why are you messing around with these aquatic creatures?" While fending against Si Water God's attacks, Ji Hao shouted harshly.

"A true God of the world? The heaven is fallen, so what is the tile of a God worth?" Si Water God's eyes shone with a watery light. The black light transformed into sharp ice thorns, zipping towards Ji Hao. Meanwhile, Si Water God shouted, "If Lord Gong Gong becomes the divine emperor, hundreds of billions of living beings would be under his lead. Then I, as the god of Si Water... hehe!"

The stainless cloak released a strong golden light and melted the ice thorns that flew out of Si Water God's eyes, turning them into a watery mist that dissipated in the air. Hearing Si Water God and seeing the fire of ambition in his eyes that he wasn't trying to conceal at all, Ji Hao remained silent and began accumulating his powers.

In the distance, Yao Meng stared at Si Water God and growled furiously, "Si Water God, you, you, you and our Si Water City, we were friends for generations..."

Si Water God launched tens of attacks at Ji Hao, then cast a sideway glance at Yao Meng and said blandly, "I am the God of Si Water. Back in the ancient time, all human beings in this area worked for me, just like my slaves. Every single one of them."

"The heaven has fallen, and your human-kind rose. I had nothing offered by you when the season alternated anymore, nothing in the New Years... no daily delicious wines and fresh blood either."

"If a drought came, I would receive an official letter from your Si Water City, then I would have to bring a rain to abate the effects of the drought for you."

"If a flood came, with another official letter from your Si Water City, I would have to open up new riverways to eliminate the flood for you."

"I am the God of Si Water. Back in the ancient era, I could demand everything from you human beings. But now, I became a slave of yours! Friends for generations? I have just served generations of Earl Si of your Si Water City!"

"Yao Meng, I led my warriors and massacred all people in your Si Water City!" continued Si Water God coldly, "After that, the feeling I've been holding in my chest was finally vented, partially. Do not say anything stupid things like we're friends for generations anymore!"

Yao Meng trembled. His eyes turned blood-red as he glared at Si Water God.

Did he really kill all people in the city?

When the crab yelled so, Yao Meng still didn't want to believe it. But now, Si Water God said so as well!

Among people living in Si Water City, some were Yao Meng's families and clansmen, his parents, his uncles and aunties, his brothers and sisters, all his relatives.

"Si Water God, I'll kill you!" Yao Meng growled out crazily and wielded his ax, treading on a cloud and dashing to Ji Hao.

However, once he flew for around ten miles, two tentacles that were thousands of meters long roared out of the water surface and violently lashed at Yao Meng like two long whips. Yao Meng didn't

manage to dodge timely and was sent flying away. Bone cracking noises came out from his body, as Yao Meng was forced to vomit blood once again.

A tremendous octopus, which was nearly ten-thousand meters long, waved his long tentacles and slowly reached his head out from the water, while releasing dense watery mist from his mouth. The power vibration released from his body was stunningly strong. Once the octopus showed up, a large and dense cloud of watery mist emerged above his head, with bolts of thunder descending from it. This gigantic creature was even many times stronger than the large crab that Ji Hao killed earlier!

Besides, among spirit creatures, the sizes of their bodies roughly represented the levels of their strengths. This was a nearly ten-thousand meters long octopus. No human Divine Magus could ever be mentioned in the same breath with him in terms of physical strength!

"Earl Yao Ji Hao, take this!"

Ji Hao was distracted by this giant octopus involuntarily.

Si Water Earl seized the opportunity and suddenly burst with a great growl, then the black steel sword and the ax flew out simultaneously from his hands. Frosty mist condensed into dagger-sharp snowflakes, swishing towards Ji Hao disorderly. Si Water God wielded his arms, and a long black whip abruptly showed up in his hands. He flicked the whip, which immediately expanded to thousands of meters long and lashed down towards Ji Hao along with a sky-flooding wave.

Ji Hao shouted in a startle. He attempted to flash away and dodge, but the water wave raised by this whip created countless invisible whirlwinds in the air that dragged Ji Hao’s body like magnets. Ji Hao paused for a short moment, but the whip already landed violently on his body.

The Pan Xi divine mirror buzzed and released a black divine light

stream that flashed across Ji Hao’s body.

The long whip disappeared from above Ji Hao’s head, and in the next moment, that enormous octopus howled in pain, because that extra long whip of Si Water God lashed heavily on his head. The octopus didn’t manage to react timely, and as a consequence, a, hundreds of meters long, tens of meter deep slash appeared on his head.

Large streams of blue blood surged out from that wound. The octopus screamed in pain, then howled hysterically.

"Si Water God! Damn you! You did this on purpose! You did this on purpose! I’ve done nothing but eat a couple more people in Si Water City! You tried to kill me for that?! I’m going to find River Earl and let him tell if you’re right or not!"

Si Water God paused briefly, then glanced at Ji Hao, who was smiling at the moment, and cast a great roar in anger.

Chapter 958: Cut the River God

Si Water God and the giant octopus yelled at each other, cursing each other loudly, but neither did they stop moving.

While shouting and growing, they attacked Ji Hao simultaneously.

Si Water God madly hacked at Ji Hao with the black steel sword and ax, along with spreading a dense frigid mist all over the sky. Meanwhile, the long whip was coiled around by streams of water mist, lashing down from the sky towards Ji Hao's face. At the same time, tens of thousands of meters long tentacles of that giant octopus reached over from all directions and circled Ji Hao up.

Ji Hao's eye corners twitched intensely. While fending against Si Water God's attacks, he yelled at the octopus, "Doesn't each octopus only have eight tentacles? You have so many tentacles, you're cheating!"

The giant octopus had half a head above the water surface, with tens of dark-green eyes sparkling brightly on that mountain-like head. He stared at Ji Hao, laughed coldly and said, "Eight tentacles? With thirty-thousand years of severe cultivation, I can have one more tentacle. Count my tentacles, and you will know how many years have I cultivated myself for!"

Ji Hao looked at all those tentacles wriggling over from every direction and couldn't help but show his teeth in surprise.

This thing could have one more tentacle every thirty-thousand years. So, judging by the tens of tentacles he had, he had already cultivated himself for hundreds of thousands of years, was that even true? These tentacles were especially strong, but the octopus was a bit clumsy. Therefore, Ji Hao unhurriedly made the Big Dipper steps among these mountain-huge, waving tentacles. No matter how hard the octopus tried, those tentacles never touched even a hair of Ji Hao.

Settling his mind down, Ji Hao straightened his left forefinger and middle finger, then led by his left hand, the nine suns spear transformed into a golden beam of light, hovering around his body. This hundreds of meters long golden light beam clashed against the black steel sword and ax from time to time, melting all the cold power released from those two weapons before anything could ever approach Ji Hao.

The nine suns spear was a supreme treasure, crafted for Ji Hao my the mysterious man himself. It was a pre-world piece, so reasonably, ordinary weapons would either be melted or cut into pieces by it. However, the sword and ax of Si Water God had been releasing a faintly sensible natural pressure while clanging loudly against nine suns spear. Even with its sharpness, the nine suns spear failed to leave any mark on the sword and the ax.

Ji Hao wielded the nine suns devil-destroying sword and slowly made the set of sword moves taught by Yu Yu. Many times, he suddenly swung the sword and raised long streaks of golden light, hacking fiercely on the sword and ax.

With the power of the nine suns devil-destroying sword, it could leave slight scratches on Si Water God's sword and ax. But those tiny traces had constantly been recovering, and would disappear soon.

The long whip held in Si Water God's hands was even harder to deal with. The long whip was like a living creature. Even without being controlled by Si Water God, it raised countless great waves while roaring down towards Ji Hao.

Invisible suction forces were generated in the air, making Ji Hao's body sway. The long whip lashed on Ji Hao's body many times, but was moved away by the Pan Xi divine mirror, slapping in the army brought over by Si Water God, along with sky-flooding waves. Countless aquatic warriors were crushed, and blood spread out in the water, looking quite scary.

Ji Hao took the opportunity and hacked on the long whip with the nine suns devil-destroying sword quite a few times. The thin whip would be broken easily, but after that, the broken part would grow back out. No matter how many times Ji Hao managed to cut it off, the long whip remained exactly the same, continuously raising great waves and crushing everything around it.

"Great treasure, indeed great treasures!" Ji Hao looked at the sword, ax, and whip of Si Water River God and praised. These three pieces were powerful enough to fend against the nine suns spear and nine suns devil-destroying sword. Although Ji Hao didn't release the strongest power of the nine suns spear and nine suns devil-destroy sword, the three pieces of Si Water God were still pretty impressive.

"Hehe," Si Water God laughed and said proudly, "Earl Yao, are your weapons pre-world supreme treasures? Shame, what a shame, even pre-world supreme treasures cannot break these heaven-conferred divine pieces of mine, the god of Si Water!"

The so-called heaven-conferred divine treasures were the ones naturally produced when the ancient heaven conferred a living being as the God of a mountain or water area. This type of divine treasures was somehow connected with the natural fortune of Pan Gu world. Although these divine treasures were not pre-world ones and neither were they as powerful as pre-world supreme treasures, they did have one particular advantage — They were unbreakable!

These heaven-conferred divine treasures were connected with the fortune of the heaven, and the territories of their owners. For example, if Ji Hao wanted to destroy the sword and ax in Si Water God’s hands, he would have to break the heaven, then evaporate all waters and streams and lakes and pools in the entire Si Water area. Otherwise, he could never destroy the ax and the sword.

As for the long whip, it was transformed from the spirit of Si Water River!

Unless Ji Hao could evaporate every single drop of water in Si Water basin all at once, this long whip would always be indestructible.

The sword and ax were just averagely powerful. They could do no better than releasing blade-sharp streams of cold power to attack enemies These two pieces were equally powerful as ordinarily natural-crafted weapons. However, the long whip was generated by the spirit of Si Water River. As the battle carried on, it could activate all rivers and streams in this whole area to attack its enemies together.

Si Water River extended for hundreds of millions of miles. Millions of different-scaled rivers and streams were included in this drainage basin. Once the water from those rivers and streams all gathered together, not even peak-level Divine Magi would be able to withstand that crushing force. Then, Si Water God could severely injure, and even kill a peak-level Divine Magus by carelessly giving a lash!

This was the true power of a river God!

Those Gods were conferred by the heaven. They didn't even need to consume any of their own powers. By simply relying on their Godhoods, they would be able to manipulate the great powers of nature of their territories!

Ji Hao wasn't fighting against the Si Water God. Instead, he was fighting all rivers and streams in the entire Si Water basin!

Rumbling noise could be heard without an end as the long whip raised hundreds of dragon-like rampant waves and struck Ji Hao's body.

Ji Hao chuckled while the Pan Xi divine mirror released another dime stream of light and flashed across his body. Along with a loud and shrill series of swishing noise, all waves were sent to the giant octopus.

The octopus howled crazily out, because over twenty of his tentacles were crushed. Blood surged out from his broken tentacles while the octopus cried in a fury, "Si Water God, it’s not like I’ve screwed your mother. Why did you do this to me!"

Si Water God was quite frustrated as well. Why was this Earl Yao so hard to deal with?

The giant octopus cursed loudly. He opened his mouth, with a blue bolt of lightning sparkling in that mouth. Judging from the direction he faced, he was preparing to attack River Water God with that lightning bolt in his mouth!

River Water God was infuriated. As he prepared to yell at the octopus, Ji Hao suddenly raised his sword and launched the combined move of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow and everything-perish. The combined move generated a beautiful, thin, arc-shaped golden light, airily reaching River Water God.

Ji Hao moved at light speed. Before Si Water God could see his sword clearly, the nine suns devil-destroying sword had already penetrated his hands and sunk deep into his chest.

Golden essence sun fire wrapped Si Water God up. As the golden flame grew brighter, Si Water God was turned into a human-shaped torch.

Chapter 959: Catch Alive

Si Water God cursed out hoarsely, hurriedly dropped the long whip and patted on his own body.

Black water streams surged out from his palms as he patted on his own body, and a loud sizzling noise arose. After-world essence water roared out from those black water streams, transformed into spheres of black mist and attempted to dispel the essence sun fire that had already drilled into his body.

Ji Hao gripped the hilt of the nine suns devil-destroying sword with both hands and put forth his strength to push forward as hard as he could. The long sword pushed Si Water God swiftly back for tens of miles, then thudded him against a mountain.

The sword silently pierced into the mountain and nailed Si Water God on it.

Ji Hao quickly waved his hands and sent out a few spell symbols. Next, nine glowing suns hovered up from the nine suns devil-destroying sword, under the effect of which, the essence sun fire burned more and more ragingly while surging into Si Water God's body like a flood.

Under Ji Hao's perfect control, the essence sun fire only burned Si Water God's body and didn't do any harm to the mountain that he was nailed on.

Si Water God screamed in misery. He extracted an immeasurably great water power from the Si Water River and condensed it into after-world water essence to wrap his entire body with. Nevertheless, the essence sun fire was the extreme of fire in the world; it destroyed all the after-world water essence in a moment. No matter how much water power Si Water God drew from the river, he couldn't weaken the essence sun power inside and around his body, not even by a little bit.

The fire crazily burned Si Water God's limbs and internal organs. He twitched intensely, and screamed in a hoarse voice, trying to free himself from the devil-destroying sword. But the nine divine sun spell symbols shone dazzlingly on the sword, releasing a strong suction force to firmly seal his body. He tried desperately hard, but he failed to move even an inch.

Ji Hao trod on a golden light stream while coldly looking at Si Water God screaming and shouting.

He was indeed a true God conferred by the heaven. His body was protected by an especially solid layer of pre-world water power, and a mysterious, faintly sensible power, that had been giving Ji Hao a strong pressure.

The pre-world water power softened the effect of the essence sun fire for the most part. Added with the suppression given by that mysterious power, Si Water God's body was burning out bit by bit, yet didn't turn into ashes instantly.

However, because of this slow rate of burning, Si Water God could clearly sense that his body had been shrinking inch by inch. The dreadful power released from the nine suns devil-destroying sword made him despair. He looked at Ji Hao in both anger and fear, opened his mouth and let out a puff of flame.

Essence sun fire burned his vocal folds, making his voice extremely strange.

"Earl Yao Ji Hao! Don't you dare kill a true God! Nature will not spare you! If you kill me, you will lose your fortune. In the future, everything will go awry on you! You will bring disaster to all people in your Yao Mountain territory!"

"No one dares to kill a true God! No one!"

Ji Hao held his hands behind his body, looking at Si Water God howling with a harsh voice, and laughed scornfully.

"Lose fortune? Why do you think you can mention these two

words to me after you dared to raise the flood and start a massacre in Yao Meng's city, after you've taken countless lives?"

"Did you say no one dares to kill a true god? Before, this might be true. But now, I do dare to kill you!"

Ji Hao pulled out the nine suns spear, lunged fiercely, and punctured Si Water God's right chest.

Another tremendous wave of essence sun fire was sent into Si Water God's body, until thin streams of golden flame spurted out from every single one of his pores, and his body turned translucent.

Ji Hao widely opened his eye of Dao of sun, and a splendid sunlight penetrated Si Water God's body, allowing Ji Hao to see through even the most secret corner of his body.

Through his body, Ji Hao saw a thin stream of water power flowing around, fighting against the essence sun fire. Deep inside his heart, a river-shaped white divine spell symbol had been glowing with a white divine light. In the areas swept across by waves of white divine glow, the essence sun fire actually seemed to be forced back.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. This white divine symbol should be condensed from the power of the heaven, or the will of the world, when he was conferred as the god of Si Water. This divine symbol represented his godhood!

This divine symbol was under the protection of nature. It equaled a supreme defensive treasure, and could shield Si Water God from all kinds of attack and save him from all kinds of disasters. This symbol was also a proof of identification; it proved that Si Water God was protected by the heaven and nature. If anyone broke this symbol and killed Si Water God, he or she would be punished by the power of the heaven!

Although the heaven was now fallen, at the moment, if anyone

truly killed a true God who was conferred back in the ancient era, the heaven wouldn't be able to give out the punishment anymore. However, true Gods were also under the protection of nature. Si Water God was actually right; if any ordinary living being killed him and broke this divine symbol, a natural disaster would certainly descend on that killer, because nature would punish the killer.

"So what?" Ji Hao looked at Si Water God and laughed out wildly. The bright laughter of Ji Hao sounded weird, and even frightened Si Water God.

Flicked his finger, Ji Hao cast a small magic he learned from Yu Yu. Following a popping noise, yellow and black light suddenly emerged around Ji Hao's body. Above his head, a hundreds of meters huge, black and yellow colored cloud had been spinning slowly, while threads of yellow and black mist reached down, nourishing Ji Hao's body, primordial spirit, and seed of Dao.

"The natural reward!" Si Water God popped his eyes out. His eyeballs even seemed to pop out from his eye sockets. "And...So much! You, you, how can you...how can you have so much natural reward!"

"Didn't you say that I will lose fortune if I kill you? That I will bring disaster to my Yao Mountain people?" Ji Hao looked at Si Water God and said tauntingly, "But I've killed countless non-humankind beings, and I forced Di Family to come to our side to help boost human civilization. I've also won the battle in Pan Xi world and brought Pan Xi world people to our place, to make the fortune of our humankind soar!"

Ji Hao reached his hand out and slapped loudly on Si Water God's face, gnashed his teeth and laughed coldly, "I am protected by the great natural reward of Pan Gu world. I can easily kill a couple of true Gods like you. What's the big deal?"

Si Water God remained silent for a while, then under the great

burning pain, he screamed, "You can’t kill me! You’re not powerful enough! Unless you’re a Supreme Magus, you can’t kill me, not even with pre-world supreme treasures!"

He looked at Ji Hao, sneered and continued, "Even if you burn my body into ash, with the divine power given by the world itself, I can still rebuild my body as a true God!"

Ji Hao nodded, pretended to be enlightened suddenly, then said, "Ah, the divine power given by the world itself? Did you mean the divine symbol hiding in your heart?"

Si Water God’s look changed immediately. He stared at Ji Hao as if he were a ghost, and asked, "You can see it?!"

Ji Hao nodded, pointed at the erect eye between his eyebrows, smiled and responded, "What do you think about my eye of Dao of sun?"

Si Water God was still hanging on the sword, but he made a perfect posture of kneeling. Looked at Ji Hao with a miserable face, he cried, "Earl Yao, dear Earl Yao, I was just fooled by Gong Gong, that sinner! I was forced to do such a nasty thing!"

"Please, don’t kill me, great Earl Yao! Please spare my lowly life!"

Ji Hao’s mouth corner twitched. He looked at Si Water God and gave a heavy slap on his face.

Chapter 960: Roasted Octopus

Si Water God gave up on resisting and let Ji Hao wrap up that divine spell symbol in his heart with a layer of essence sun fire.

Ji Hao locked his finger together and incanted a spell. As his hand motion changed, this thin layer of essence sun fire glowed brightly and transformed into small, sun-shaped thunderbolt spheres, and attached to the divine spell symbol. After this, Ji Hao was still worried that Si Water God might have other abilities to escape. Therefore, he activated the Pan Xi divine mirror and released a dim stream of light that sparkled across Si Water God's body and sealed all powers of this poor God.

The black steel ax and black steel sword, and the long whip generated by the spirit of Si Water River, were all thrown into Ji Hao's pocket. Afterward, Ji Hao pinched Si Water God's neck and dragged him back to the battlefield.

On the roaring waves, countless aquatic warriors from Si Water were still wielding their weapons and attacking warriors under Ji Hao and Yao Meng's commands. These aquatic warriors were from a regular army; they had high-quality armors and weapons, and they fought in ordered formations, seeming to be an elite troop. This batch of aquatic warriors was totally different from the massive group earlier led by Big Shark and his brothers.

Furthermore, these aquatic warriors had been attacking with a special magic formation. They split up into groups, each group containing thirty to fifty warriors. They extracted essence water power from the waves, then created water bombs with the power of the magic formations. Within a short span of time, a large wave of water bombs could be thrown out.

The waves surged inexhaustibly, and the number of aquatic warriors was giant. After they split up into groups, cyan-black water bombs started to flying out without an end. The powers of

these aquatic warriors were limited. Therefore, the effect caused by each water bomb was not so great. However, the number of water bombs was way too huge, and so was the density.

Warriors under Yao Meng and Ji Hao' commands formed a strong defensive line in the woods. At the moment, the bodies of over hundred-thousand warriors were covered by the dazzles of thunderbolts, while muffled thunders could be heard from everywhere. The ground was full of bumps and hollows, and from time to time, large pieces of rock and earth would fall off from the shaken mountains, burying troops of warriors under sand and earth.

Many warriors had been struggling out from piles of sand and stone, with their bodies covered in mud. They ragingly rushed out into the group of aquatic warriors, madly wielded their weapons and killed a great number of aquatic warriors, then returned to the woods.

But the aquatic army had a stunningly high number of warriors. After a certain number of aquatic warriors were killed, countless more would pop out from the water, form new groups and start launching the water bomb attack.

The hundreds of thousands of poisoned magic formation artists were still lying in the woods without being able to move. Therefore, warriors under Ji Hao and Yao Meng' commands could only guard in front of them, form a defensive line to protect them from the overwhelming waves of water bombs, and helplessly suffer the strikes.

Water bombs blasted one after another, and those warriors seemed to be shaken.

Man Man and Shaosi each led an elite Jia Clan warrior troop, fighting a heavily armored group of aquatic warriors. Yu Mu was quickly spreading magic poison in the water, while Feng Xing's arrows flashed across the air from time to time, harvesting the

lives of leaders among those aquatic warriors. Taisi was doing a strange dance while shouting loudly. Wherever his eyes reached, waves of aquatic warriors would suddenly fall to the ground and die.

They had been killing as much as they could, but there were way too many aquatic warriors. They fought intensely for quite a while and found that the number of aquatic warriors treading on the waves was actually raised by a couple of times.

The most annoying one was that giant octopus. The wildness of that octopus was stimulated after he was injured by Si Water God with the long whip. He roared, madly slapping his long tentacles down and sending up groups of warriors under Ji Hao's command into the sky from time to time.

Moreover, the giant octopus had also been releasing strong electric bolts from his mouth. The silver-white electric bolts landed on the ground thunderously, and could even turn three to five human warriors into nothingness, along with their armors and weapons.

Occasionally, an electric bolt would fall on a hill, and the hundreds of meters tall hill would be evaporated in a flash. This giant octopus was indeed powerful.

Feng Xing shot two arrows at the octopus sneakily. But the skin of this octopus was way too thick, that Feng Xing's arrows managed to sank into his body for less than a hundred meters, then were stuck there. A nearly hundred-meter long wound was definitely lethal to a human being, but to this giant octopus, that was only a scratch.

Taisi, who was still confused, also noticed the octopus. He cast a deathly curse on the octopus many times. Every time, the octopus would tremble intensely, then his moves would slow down obviously, as Taisi's curse took a great amount of life-force from him.

However, the octopus was surrounded by countless aquatic warriors. He opened his mouth and sucked hundreds of aquatic warriors into his mouth. God knew why his digestive system was so great, that those warriors swallowed by him would be digested immediately and he would regain his life-force within about a second.

Taisi cast the deathly curse a couple of times in a row, but he failed to do any actual harm to this giant thing. On the contrary, he caught the attention of the octopus. Tens of electric bolts were sent to Taisi, forcing him to turn around and run as fast as he could, nearly scaring him to death.

The octopus madly whipped with his long tentacles, shaking the defensive line of warriors under Ji Hao and Yao Meng' command intensely. Added with the ceaseless water bomb attacks launched by those aquatic warriors, the defensive line even seemed to break.

At this very moment, Ji Hao flew back with Si Water God in his hand.

He silently stood in midair, flicked his left hand and created three earth-shaking thunders.

Down below, all aquatic warriors raised their heads and saw Si Water God held in Ji Hao's hand. These aquatic warriors paused, then followed by a series of clangs, their weapons dropped all over the ground.

Si Water God then moaned with a weak voice, "Kids, surrender, surrender! Our Si Water army will stay out of all this. Just surrender! Otherwise, I will be killed!"

Hundreds of enormous aquatic creatures with strong power vibrations releasing from their bodies trod on raging waves, and rose while roaring. These odd-looking aquatic creatures glanced at each other, then all kneeled on the waves and listlessly said 'yes'.

That giant octopus gave a shrill howl, then flicked his tens of

tentacles and abruptly turned around, attempting to run away along the flowing water.

He never even dreamed that Si Water God would be captured alive by Ji Hao just like this, as Si Water God was more powerful than himself. If Si Water God was captured alive, he could never rival Ji Hao. Therefore, he had to run.

But Ji Hao had his eyes fixed on this giant octopus for so long, so how could he ever let this giant thing run away so easily?

The immemorial sun streamer fluttered in the sky, while countless streams of golden light flowed over from all directions. They transformed into an immense golden light and descended. The golden light transformed into a hand tens of thousands of meters in radius, grabbing the octopus up. Next, essence sun fires burst from the golden hand and wrapped the octopus up.

Before the octopus could yell out in pain, Ji Hao wielded the nine suns spear and spread a stream of Yu Yu's Dao of Qi on it. The long spear expanded to tens of thousands of meters long. Then, as Ji Hao pointed out his finger, the long spear penetrated the octopus's tens of tentacles and his giant head, putting him on the fire.

Within a couple of breaths, a nice aroma of grilled octopus spread out.

"Surrender, surrender, I surrender too! Si Water River God, you ball-less ba*tard, how can you surrender?!"

The giant octopus couldn't withstand the burning pain and cried gut-wrenchingly.

Chapter 961: The Miserable Situation After the Disaster

Ji Hao left a troop to help those poisoned magic formation artists under Yao Meng's command. Then, he grabbed the neck of Si Water God, with Yao Meng dragging that giant octopus, and headed to Si Water City.

Si Water God had been murmuring all the way. This entire area was under the government of his Si Water River. Therefore, wherever Ji Hao brought him to, the flood silently drew back into rivers and stopped surging rampantly.

After half a day, they arrived at Si Water City. Or in other words, they came to the ruins of Si Water City.

Si Water City had disappeared already. This city was built by Yao Meng's grandfather, his father and himself, with countless efforts. It occupied a large fertile alluvial plain near Si Water River, which was rich in many types of natural resources. But now, this great city had become a giant pit.

The whole Si Water City and millions of meters squared fertile farmlands around it had sunk down, turning into a bottomless pit.

Si Water River surged into the pit as turbid waves roared, with watery mist reaching to the sky. This place was turned into a whirlpool hundreds of miles in radius, with countless aquatic creatures happily swimming in and out of it. They laughed, dragged out a few high-quality pieces of clothes from the whirlpool, or some kitchenwares like iron pots and clay bowls.

The city sank, and all of Yao Meng's families and clansmen were killed by the water. But the properties in the city remained undamaged. These aquatic creatures laughed excitedly while searching for all kinds of valuable things in the water, then showed off their harvests to their friends.

Some fierce ones even dove down to the bottom, bringing up bloody human heads one after another, or broken human limbs. They proudly held those human body parts, as if those were medals, giggled, then threw these body pieces at each other.

"Amma! Abba!" Yao Meng had just been through a long-lasting fight, and he remained calm all the time. But now, he fainted and fell straight down from the air. Fortunately, Yu Mu reacted pretty fast, grabbed Yao Meng's belt and dragged him up.

"Si Water territory." Ji Hao clicked his tongue, then his face turned especially dark.

Yao Meng's grandfather didn't have a nice family background. He was given birth by the second wife of the leader of a small-scale clan. After he had grown up, Yao Meng's grandfather was forced to leave his clan and live a vagrant life in the wilderness of Midland. In that vagrant life, this talented man fought natural disasters, countless fierce wild beasts and eventually cultivated himself into a powerful one.

Afterward, Yao Meng's grandfather joined the human army in Pu Ban City and volunteered to go to Chi Ban Mountain to fight in the frontal line. For countless times, Yao Meng's grandfather went deep into the grassland in the northern side of Chi Ban Mountain and attacked the battle forts of the non-humankind, killing incalculable non-humankind beings. He accumulated his credits, until he was conferred the title of Earl Si.

That wasn't a massive war fought by Yao Meng's grandfather. Therefore, despite the fact that he had killed a great number of enemies and made countless meritorious contributions, the credits he earned were still not as great as Ji Hao's, for what he did back in Evil Dragon Bay with Yu Yu's sword formation. For this reason, although they were both conferred the title of 'earl', at the beginning, the territory of Yao Meng's grandfather was not as big as even one-tenth of Ji Hao's territory.

Yao Meng's grandfather, his father and himself were all simple and honest people. They kindly invited homeless people to come to their territory and start a life, helping their people build new homelands. They amassed wealth bit by bit. By the time Yao Meng took over the position of Earl Si, they had spent all they had and finally built the Si Water City!

This was a story of the rise of a human clan in the most traditional way. Countless strong human clans grew larger and larger like this; their ancestors worked as hard as possible, stayed as cautious as they could, to gradually turn their small and weak clans into powerful ones.

Si Water City, Yao Meng, his father, and grandfather put all of their hearts and souls in here. All of Yao Meng's families lived in here.

The tall and sturdy city wall shielded Yao Meng's clansmen from wild beasts, and the fertile farmlands fed the people. To Yao Meng, Si Water City was all he had; it was the only spiritual support of his.

But now, the city sank; it was gone, and everyone who lived in it was killed! Including Yao Meng's father, mother, brothers, all his clansmen, all those loyal warriors under his lead, all those people were killed by these happily laughing aquatic creatures!

The core of Si Water territory, the richest area of this territory, was destroyed thoroughly.

"They built the city with all of their hearts, three generations of them!" Ji Hao clenched his five fingers, squeezing a loud creaking noise out of Si Water Gods' neck.

Looking at Si Water God's pale face, Ji Hao gnashed his teeth and said, "I know that Earl Si and his families are all honest and nice people. They didn't even purchase slaves from Pu Ban Market. People living in their territory were invited over with their kindness. Those were all honest, reliable homeless clans."

With a darkened, frosty face, Ji Hao continued with a deep a scary voice, "They're not like me. I do everything. I purchased countless slaves, I brought over countless Pan Xi world people, and I even bought a large number of non-humankind slaves from a prison of the non-humankind."

Ji Hao's tone became strangely bland and cold while shrugging, "They're not like me. Si Water territory...Si Water God, tell me, you could have destroyed the city, but why did you have to kill everyone lived in it?"

Si Water God's face instantly turned dark-blue. He looked at Ji Hao in fear, because he sensed the strong intent of killing from Ji Hao's tone.

"I...awe! If I flattened Si Water City and killed everyone in the city, the other human beings would..."

"Awe!" Ji Hao interrupted him. He gave Si Water God an especially warm grin, then said, "Indeed, awe! I will kill you, then tell everyone that I killed Si Water God and wiped out your entire family. That should be enough to awe Gong Gong's dogs, right?"

The nine sun devil-destroying sword was raised high. Si Water God screamed himself hoarse.

"No, Earl Yao! No! You're a human minister, and I am a true God. You, you, how dare you kill me? How can you kill me?"

Ji Hao paused slightly, then smiled, "Ah, you're right, I'm a human minister. Killing for no reason seems to be not right."

Yao Meng lied aside and moaned, then woke back up from unconsciousness. Hearing Ji Hao, he growled furiously, "Earl Yao, if you're not doing it, let me!"

Ji Hao laughed wildly out then swung the sword down. Following a quick series of puffing noises, Ji Hao cut off Si Water God's limbs. As the essence sun fire swooshed around, those limbs were burned into ash.

"Earl Si, we cut him together!"

Ji Hao threw the remaining half body of Si Water God to Yao Meng.

Yao Meng curved his lip corners up viciously, then raised his ax and hacked down, chopping off Si Water God’s head.

Ji Hao flicked his finger, and following his move, the nine sun-shaped thunderbolt spheres exploded in River Water God’s heart, blowing up the white divine spell symbol in his heart.

Ji Hao raised the sword and roared resonantly. Rumbling sound waves spread out along with a strong aura of killing. Visible sound waves swept across the whole space like a tsunami, igniting the bodies of those aquatic creatures in the ruins of Si Water City, one after another. Within a blink of an eye, at least a million aquatic creatures were crushed by Ji Hao’s roar.

Yao Meng kneeled down beside the whirlpool and kowtowed loudly towards it.

"Amma, Abba! I will kill every last one of these evil aquatic creatures... You just watch me!"

Chapter 962: Sweep Across and Put Down

"Attack!"

Standing on the head of that giant octopus, Ji Hao pointed at a river bay, with turbid waves roaring in it.

The giant octopus furiously gave a roar, raised tens of tentacles high and smashed down fiercely, along with shrill swishing noises. His tens of thousands of meters long tentacles tore the river apart and raised tens of water walls, with electric bolts sizzling rapidly in them like fierce snakes.

Countless aquatic creatures had been hiding in the river. But now, they all dashed out while screaming and howling. Their bodies were wrapped in electric bolts, and the strong electric bolts released by the giant octopus broke their shells and scales, cooking their bodies. These aquatic creatures leaped into the sky, then fell back down along with a dense, grilling aroma.

Tens of Yao Mountain City magic poison masters had been incanting a spell with deep voices. They poured the liquid contained in a large clay pot into the rapidly flowing river. The dark-green poisonous liquid spread out immediately, making tens of thousands of aquatic warriors, who were still wielding their weapons, cry. These aquatic warriors twitched, then sank into the water and disappeared.

Ji Tian, Ji Di and the other disciples of Ji Hao were holding magic formation flags, leading a group of disciples from Ji Hao's Palace of Dao and forming a great magic formation in midair. They trod on watery clouds and walked forward slowly. From the great magic formation, yellow-colored streams of sword power had been releasing ceaselessly. Every stream of sword power was over three-thousand meters long, descending from the sky and cutting tens of thousands of aquatic warriors into shreds.

Young Magi from the Magi Palace in Yao Mountain City could

also be found in the army. After years of severe cultivation under Ji Hao with no spare expenses spared, these young people had now all reached the senior-level. They were wearing standard war armors, holding sharp weapons, cruising across those hills, rivers, underwater cities and deep pools, one after another, in formidable battle formations.

Wherever an aquatic army rose to cause troubles, this formidable army would immediately launch an overwhelming wave of arrows in that direction. Armor-breaking arrows screamed across the sky and violently penetrated the bodies of those aquatic warriors. Explosive spell symbols blasted on the arrowheads, blowing these aquatic warriors into bits.

Yu Clan warriors from Di Family surrounded hundreds of divine towers. They were supported by great groups of strong and ferocious Jia Clan warriors, added with countless battle puppets, and were following behind Ji Hao's Yao Mountain Army, sweeping across the surrounding area.

Countless Pan Xi world people were also armored to the teeth, led by Elder Destiny as they followed behind Ji Hao's army, yelling and shouting in excitement while killing every aquatic warrior in their sights.

Elder Destiny had the compass of destiny to survey the flowing directions of rivers. Therefore, no gathering site of aquatic warriors could ever hide from his eyes. Those gathering sites were marked one by one on a magic sandbox, then soon being crushed by the army under Ji Hao's command.

After seeing what happened to Si Water City, Ji Hao's mind was occupied by the strong intent of killing, and he couldn't restrain it.

He gathered all Yao Mountain people who were capable of fighting and raised a massive army that was well organized. This army swept around in the entire area with a radius of a hundred million miles around Yao Mountain territory like an enormous

millstone.

Anywhere an alarm sounded, Ji Hao would immediately send his army to help.

Gong Mountain territory, Huang Water territory, Qi Mountain territory, Hao Water territory, Cave Mountain territory, Li Water territory...

Ji Hao had already completed the few water-sealing magic formations that he was responsible for, and at the moment, he had no task on his shoulders. Water-kind armies had been rising and causing damage in every direction. They seized all opportunities and tried everything they could to ruin the water-controlling plan. The cautious ones only sneakily attacked small human clans scattered in further areas while the daring ones gathered into troops, attacking the cities of earls and marquises.

Alarms came from all directions. Many earls and marquises who had their territories near Yao Mountain territory had led their armies out of their territories to help Si Xi build the water-sealing magic formations. By now, their territories were mostly empty, and those aquatic creatures took the great opportunity to march into these empty territories. Therefore, many nearby cities called for help.

The army under Ji Hao's command arrived at every attacked city without delay upon hearing the alarms, and crushed those aquatic warriors.

The army under Ji Hao's lead showed no mercy. None of the aquatic warriors that fell in their hands survived. Not to mention those spirit aquatic creatures, even the ones with no intelligence but only slightly larger shapes, were all chopped into meat paste by Ji Hao's warriors.

Fist-sized shrimps, millstone-sized turtles, six-foot-long fishes, three-foot-long eels, wine-tank-sized frogs, three-meter-long snakes...

All kinds of aquatic creatures, as long as they were slightly larger than they should be and were with a slight potential of becoming a spirit one, Ji Hao's warriors would mercilessly chop them.

After each attacked territory was saved, Ji Hao's army would grow larger. Those warriors guarding their own territories who suffered the sneak attacks launched by those aquatic armies all ragingly raised their troops and joined Ji Hao's army.

The scale of Ji Hao's army grew greater and greater, extending for thousands of miles, raising an overwhelming aura of killing. Wherever this army reached, blood flowed in streams, and cries and screams were as loud as thunders.

Nests of aquatic creatures were destroyed one after another. Deep pools and lakes were dried and buried, while countless underworld cities built in the ancient times were flattened. Tons of nests of powerful spirit aquatic creatures were burned.

The massacre lasted for around a month. Afterward, wherever the Gold Crow battle flag of Yao Mountain territory showed up, large groups of aquatic creatures fled desperately. Not a single aquatic creature dared to fight Ji Hao's army anymore.

However, these poor aquatic creatures could never run from Ji Hao's hands, no matter how hard they tried. If they did not run, they might still survive. But once they tried to run, they would end up being surrounded and cut into pieces by that scary army of Ji Hao, without being able to even resist.

Other than the giant octopus, Ji Hao had also forcibly recruited nearly a thousand Divine-Magus-level powerful aquatic creatures, including a mountain-huge turtle, a carp with dragon horns, a flood-dragon-sized eel, a city-huge viviaparidae…

Ji Hao head learned countless secret magics from Yu Yu's scriptures, including a few effective ones for bringing spirit creatures under control.

Ji Hao mercilessly cast the evilest and cruelest controlling magic on these aquatic creatures, turning these enormous creatures into his slaves and making them do whatever he said. With these powerful aquatic creatures, it became easier and easier for Ji Hao to crush those water-kind armies.

Time flew by. On this particular day, once Ji Hao took care of a water-kind army in Huang Mountain territory, Elder Destiny walked over in a rush.

"Master, thirty-thousand miles away in the front, a sense of power is especially strong. I've also sensed the power of thousands of enormous aquatic creatures around it. I'm afraid this one is even harder to deal with than Si Water God!" Elder Destiny told Ji Hao about his discovery while pointing at the southeast.

Ji Hao gave the order immediately. Followed that, the army under his command marched in that direction.

All the way, every single river and stream was overflowing. People were crying for help in caves or on tree branches. While the rescue team following behind Ji Hao's army was helping these people, the troops at the front had already rushed into an extremely large-scaled water-kind army.

A strong man with silver hair stood on a water column, scornfully looking at Ji Hao's army.

"I am Cloud Dream, a dragon king! Are you here to seek your doom?"

A while later, the silver hair man abruptly laughed out.

Chapter 963: Ambition of the Dragon King

The south of Yao Mountain territory, hundreds of territories away was a large lake, named Cloud Dream.

Cloud Dream was a wide expanse of mist-covered water. Surrounding it were Si Water River, Li River, Ling River and the other hundreds of different-sized rivers. All these rivers eventually drained into Cloud Dream and merged with the two great rivers, the Cloud River and the Dream River, that rapidly flowed eastward.

Therefore, Cloud Dream Lake was the core of this entire water area. Back in the ancient time, the heaven once sent down a Cloud Dream Lake Earl to govern the Si Water River, Li River and the other hundreds of rivers in this area. Si Water God was under the command of Cloud Dream Lake Earl.

However, back then, the non-humankind intruded Pan Gu world, and divine Gods raised an army from the heaven and started a long-lasting war against those intruders. Cloud Dream Lake Earl and the group of Gods under his command fell in the war. After that, this lake became an ungoverned area. Afterward, Could Dream Lake and the vast area around it was given to tens of human earls and marquises as their private territories.

No one knew when a powerful dragon family occupied the underworld city built by Cloud Dream Lake Earl back in the ancient times in the Cloud Dream lake. The leader of this dragon family called himself Cloud Dream Dragon King, and gathered a large group of aquatic creatures to dominate this area.

This Cloud Dream Dragon King was quite a troublemaker. Normally, conflicts often burst between him and human beings in this area. He might kidnap a few children from nearby villages and eat them, or seize a few human girls to serve him as maids, or blackmail surrounding human clans for three to five hundred

lambs and a batch of nice wine. And next year, he might directly loot over a thousand cows from someone's barn.

Things like this happened all the time. Earls and marquises who lived in nearby couldn't tolerant him anymore. Therefore, they joined hands and raised an army to attack this dragon king. After an intense fight, the water-kind army under the dragon king's command was nearly destroyed, and when the human army was about to capture this dragon king alive, the dragon-kind sent an official letter, because of which, the human army could only retreat.

Those angry earls and marquises each tried what they could to dig up the background of this Cloud Dream Dragon King. They then found out that this Cloud Dream Dragon King was actually an illegitimate child of the oldest dragon prince, who was also the oldest son of the current Dragon Emperor!

As a grandson of the Dragon Emperor, this Cloud Dream Dragon King should have been enjoying a luxurious life in the East Ocean. However, the identity of his mother was quite embarrassing to be mentioned. His mother was a Jia Clan girl, kidnaped by the oldest prince. This meant that this Cloud Dream Dragon King was a half Jia Clan being. A mixblood of the dragon-kind and Jia Clan, it was already lucky for Cloud Dream Dragon King that the Dragon Emperor didn't behead him personally. How could he ever be allowed to stay in the Dragon Palace to humiliate his families? Therefore, Cloud Dream Dragon King was sent to Cloud Dream Lake to do whatever he wants. Because his father was the oldest dragon prince, he had been acting unbridled all these years and caused human earls and marquises living in this area tons of troubles.

Ji Hao sat on the giant octopus's head, which had been quickly moving his tens of long tentacles in the water, swiftly passing the troops at the front and reaching to this Dream Cloud Dragon King.

Ji Hao looked at Dream Cloud Dragon King from head to toe. He

had heard about the ‘great’ reputation of this dragon king long ago. In a ceremony held in the Town Hall, Ji Hao heard the other earls and marquises complain about this dragon king, who had been harming human beings all the time. Back then, Ji Hao had already memoried all information he got about this annoying one.

The long silver hair hung loosely on the dragon king’s back. Dream Cloud Dragon King was around fifteen meters and six inches tall, with a snow-white skin. He was especially strong and sturdy, wearing a silver dragon-scale armor, baring his pair of arms. Serpent-like blood veins unsettlingly beat under that snow-white skin of his.

Dragons had noble and powerful bloodlines. Dream Cloud Dragon King was especially handsome, but above his eyebrows were two extremely thin cracks, with faintly visible silver light glowing in them. Ji Hao understood that the pair of cracks was a gift from the bloodline of her mother.

"Dream Cloud Dragon King, I’ve hard so much about you!" Ji Hao stood on the octopus’s head and cupped his hands towards Dream Cloud Dragon King.

"Earl Yao Ji Hao, I know about you!" Dream Cloud Dragon King pointed at Ji Hao, laughed wildly out and said, "That bullsh*t ninth uncle of mine is doing some secret thing with you, isn’t he? Hehe, Feng Qinxin, you’re pretty close with that little woman too, aren’t you?"

Flashing across the air, Dream Cloud Dragon King teleported himself to before Ji Hao’s face, put his hand on Ji Hao’s shoulder and put his large grinning face near Ji Hao’s ear. He laughed, "How about this, you kill that stupid Ao Li and poison Feng Qinxin for me. Let me screw her for a whole night, then I’ll promise you that I won’t touch your Yao Mountain territory. What do you think?"

Abruptly, Dream Cloud Dragon King bumped fiercely to Ji Hao with his head.

Ji Hao was enraged. He boosted up his power and bumped against Dream Cloud Dragon King.

Thud! Followed a thunderous noise, a dazzling fiery light burst from between their heads. Both of them showed their teeth in pain, with their eyes popped widely out, staring at each other.

"Good boy, such a hard head!" Dream Cloud Dragon King gnashed his teeth, grinned viciously and said, "Good, good, you have earned your right to talk to me now. What a hard head, what a great strength! Good, good!"

Letting out a frosty breath, Dream Cloud Dragon King stared at Ji Hao and continued, "Think about it, will you? Hm? Kill Ao Li, take out a stupid brother for that blamed father of mine, so that he will have one less competitor for the throne of dragon emperor. Feng Qinxin, that little woman smells good. I've been wanting to do something to her since the first time I saw her. Do me these two favors and we're brothers. I'll never touch even a grass of your Yao Mountain territory. What do you think?"

Ji Hao saw countless stars glistening before his eyes. Just now, he bumped against the dragon king with his head, and it was indeed incredibly hard, even causing Ji Hao dizziness.

Ji Hao tried pretty hard to concentrate, then gave a cold smile and responded, "Dream Cloud Dragon King, what on earth do you want? Human beings are suffering the flood. The dragon-kind and the humankind, we're allies. What on earth are you doing by raising such a great water-kind army?"

Dream Cloud Dragon King laughed loudly, then bumped again with Ji Hao, still with his head.

Ji Hao was totally infuriated. He activated his power to an extreme point. The great power contained in his body was compressed into a tiny spot, then he made the move of earth-splitting. He sent all his power up silently to his forehead and bumped against Dream Cloud Dragon King.

Another thunderous bang was released, as blood splashed everywhere. Blood surged out in streams from Ji Hao’s forehead along with his skin pieces; even a part of his skull was crushed.

Dream Cloud Dragon King howled out. He suffered worse, as his skull broke, even exposing his beating brain. They were both sent zipping away, with their heads buried in their hands.

Divine Magi could regrow their bodies from a single drop of blood. Ji Hao gave a resonant growl, then his blood, skin and bone pieces all flew back to him, momentarily covering that huge wound. In a short while, that wound healed itself perfectly.

Dream Cloud Dragon King also burst with a great roar while a bright silver light sparkled on his head. Within a breath, his wound recovered as well.

Showing his teeth, Dream Cloud Dragon King looked at Ji Hao and laughed, with a slight trace of surprise flashing across his eyes.

"What do I want? I want to loot a burning house, of course!"

"You’re suffering the flood, what a great opportunity! I’m going to take as much gold, jade, and as many beautiful girls to warm my bed, as many as I can!"

"Hehe, I don’t want to lie to you. I’m also going to take out those human earls and marquises nearby. After I kill them, their territories will be mine, their people will be mine too! Everyone will worship me as Dream Cloud Dragon King!"

"Someone promised me an immortal life, as long as I can have enough people to worship me!"

Chapter 964: Sneak Attack Again

Immortal life?

Ji Hao curved his mouth corners, looked at Dream Cloud Dragon King, as if he were looking at an idiot.

Who dared to promise him something like that? And why would this silly dragon believe that?

Immortal life, hehe, what would that be like? Ji Hao couldn't imagine it at the current stage. Would Po have the confidence to mention immortality? Ji Hao silently took a guess. He believed that not even Priest Dachi, Priest Qing Wei, and Yu Yu dared to promise something like that!

Even a great world like Pan Gu world would eventually collapse, not to mention living beings in it!

The one who promised Dream Cloud Dragon King an immortal life, Ji Hao believed, he or she was either a liar or crazy.

And, Dream Cloud Dragon King had actually believed it. 'So, it seems that a lier met a dumbo. How can this dragon ever believe something like that? Immortality?'Ji Hao pityingly looked at him and thought. He couldn't help but laugh coldly.

Dream Cloud Dragon King's face turned especially dark. He slightly bent his body, with his eyes turning a weird silver color. Two streams of silver-white light dazzled out of those eyes for nearly a hundred meters, piercing towards Ji Hao like two sharp blades.

"Are you laughing at me?" Dream Cloud Dragon King asked with a deep voice sensitively.

"Yeah, I am laughing at you!" Ji Hao laughed louder. Indeed, he was laughing at the dragon, and what could the dragon do?

Swoosh! Dream Cloud Dragon King suddenly disappeared from

where he was standing. Along with a fierce gust of wind, he dashed to Ji Hao. Meanwhile, a pair of oddly shaped weapons appeared in his hands, shining with a bright silver light and hacking down toward Ji Hao. That was a pair of large blades, shaped like coiled dragon tails.

Fast, extremely fast. Ji Hao couldn't even manage to see his move clearly.

A blade hacked straight down towards Ji Hao's head while another one swung towards Ji Hao's waist. Dream Cloud Dragon King laughed with a weird voice as he swiftly lifted up his right knee towards Ji Hao's lower abdomen. This set of moves was completed by him so smoothly and perfectly that every single move was flawless, without absolutely no weaknesses. From his moves, Ji Hao sensed something similar to the top-grade High Moon warriors he had encountered.

Ji Hao gave a resonant roar, then swung the nine suns devil-destroying sword sideway, blocking that blade coming at his waist. Next, he gripped the nine suns spear and lunged upwards, hooking the other blade of the dragon with a small crescent blade on the spear and stopping it from falling down, three inches above his head.

The stainless cloak released the nine blazing suns, shining on the entire area. The dragon king's left knee broke a bright layer of golden light, but the brighter golden light had been surging out from the nine suns in huge streams. Eventually, his left knee stopped three feet away from Ji Hao's body, under the effect of the stainless cloak.

"Die!" Dream Cloud Dragon King growled in anger. Under his skin, his meridians and blood vessels squirmed, as if countless serpents had been moving inside his body. A thunder-like blasting noise could be heard from his right leg bones. Clearly, he had concentrated all his power on that leg.

"You're the one who is dying!" Ji Hao gritted his teeth and gave a sneer. He was protected by the stainless cloak and wasn't harmed at all. However, he still sensed streams of fierce sharp power drilling into his body. Dream Cloud Dragon King had been cultivating himself with pre-world metal power. The incomparably sharp and destructive metal power filled every inch of his body, that he could sense it even through the stainless cloak.

Pre-world metal power was lethal; it was the fiercest type among all natural powers, and was quite suitable for the natures of dragon-kind. Added with the strong bodies of dragons, pre-world metal power could be perfect for dragons who pursued lethality.

Ji Hao chuckled as the Pan Xi divine mirror emerged from above his head and released a dim stream of light, sweeping across Dream Cloud Dragon King's right leg. All of a sudden, a weird expression that seemed to be an extreme level of shock showed on Dream Cloud Dragon King's face. Next, following a crack, his knee swished out from behind his body and heavily landed on the back of his waist, which was a vital body area.

This strike was especially heavy, as Dream Cloud Dragon King had put forth all of his power for this strike. The terrifying force shattered his dragon-scale armor and sent countless dragon scales sent flying in the air. The waist of Dream Cloud Dragon King twisted weirdly and bulged. By now, there was a thirty-degree acute angle between his upper body and lower body, and his head nearly touched his lower legs.

A visible, silvery stream of power was released from his knee, drilling into his body.

Ji Hao heard Dream Cloud Dragon King's internal organs being cut by the pre-world metal power. That was a silvery noise one could hear on knocking a diamond with a steel dagger. Dream Cloud Dragon King's face turned pale like a corpse. He looked at Ji Hao in shock, then a stream of blood gushed out of his mouth.

Without leaving Dream Cloud Dragon King any time to gasp for air, Ji Hao lunged the nine suns spear held in his left hand with full power and penetrated Dream Cloud Dragon King's lower belly.

When the spear pierced into the dragon's body, Ji Hao sensed a great resistance. That dragon body was shockingly strong, that even with the sharpness of the nine suns spear and with Ji Hao's great strength, the spear could only be pushed into that dragon body inch by inch with a solid effort, just like cutting a thick hide with a dull knife.

Dream Cloud Dragon King howled heart-wrenchingly in pain. Blood surged out of his mouth while he desperately struggled and crazily wielded his pair of blades, trying to hack Ji Hao.

"Wanna put up a desperate fight? Be my guest!" Ji Hao laughed out loud while the nine suns devil-destroying sword raised a golden arc light in his right hand. The move of sky-opening was combined with the sharp sword light of the nine suns devil-destroying sword. As a result, the wide and long sword easily cut into Cloud Dream Dragon King's chest.

The essence sun fire burned unstoppably inside Cloud Dream Dragon King's body while his blades landed on Ji Hao's body over and over again.

Pan Xi divine mirror had been sparkling from time to time, sending Cloud Dream Dragon King's attacks back to himself. Whirlwind-like silver blade lights struck on Cloud Dream Dragon King's body in a row, broke his skin and sent his blood and muscle pieces all over the sky. The blade edges and his bones clashed against each other, letting out thunderous clans.

The nine suns spear pierced into Cloud Dream Dragon King's lower belly and came out from his back.

Ji Hao dropped the two supreme treasures, then held Cloud Dream Dragon King's head with both hands. The moves of sky-opening and earth-splitting were made simultaneously. Next, Ji

Hao’s head violently bumped on Cloud Dream Dragon King’s head like a shooting star.

"Don’t you like smash the heads of the others?" Ji Hao roared while the two heads bumped together.

Pop! Cloud Dream Dragon King’s head was broken. Ji Hao squeezed his finger into Cloud Dream Dragon King’s wounds and released the fastest and most violent Yu Yu divine thunder.

The seed of Dao of sun spun swiftly while Ji Hao’s power was sent out like a rapidly flowing river. Hundreds of destructive purple thunderbolts struck in Cloud Dream Dragon King’s head, blowing it up and sending out his brain and blood, splashing like a flood.

"Ji Hao, my friend, you’re too cruel. With such a cruel personality, you’re truly not a good one for living beings in the world."

"You... shall just die!"

Following a series of resonant shouts, two tall men showed up. They were wearing white simple flax long shirts. One of them was holding a sparkling pestle while another one was holding a mini tower. These two pieces were smashed to the back of Ji Hao’s head simultaneously.

Chapter 965: Bao Shu and Bao Yin

A strong gust of wind blew over from behind. Ji Hao prepared to dodge, but suddenly, Cloud Dream Dragon King crazily spread his arms and gripped Ji Hao tight.

Thud! Thud! The golden pestle and tower violently landed on Ji Hao’s back.

The stainless cloak released thousands of layers of golden light and a raging fire, keeping the pestle and tower three inches away from Ji Hao.

The two people who attacked Ji Hao shouted out in surprise. Their tones were instantly added with a sense of greediness.

"Earl Yao Ji Hao, you’re cruel and brutal. Supreme treasures like this are such a waste on you!"

"Supreme treasures like this should belong to our sect. Only we can defeat the evils and benefit the world with it."

Following the furious growls of these two people, the golden pestle had a raging fire spurting from it while the tower released a series of thunder. The pressure given to Ji Hao by these two treasures suddenly grew ten times greater. The golden light and raging fire released from the stainless cloak clashed against the fire from the pestle and the sound waves from the tower, generating a dazzling light and a cloud of warm mist.

But no matter how hard they tried to boost up the powers of their weapons, the stainless cloak stayed perfectly motionless, and those powerful weapons could never touch Ji Hao’s body.

"Attack from the back? Is this how Priest Hua and Priest Mu teach their disciples? You think I don’t know how to do it?" Ji Hao sneered and burst with a great growl, "Feng Xing, show them!"

Not even the slightest noise was made when two golden streams of light dazzled over. These two people had been focusing on Ji

Hao. Consequently, they didn’t manage to dodge timely. Two arrows pierced into the left shoulder of one of them and the right shoulder of the other one.

The white flax long shirts worn by these people were obviously well-crafted defensive treasures. But compared to the stainless cloak, they were like the glow of a firefly compared to the sun. The arrows released by Feng Xing easily penetrated the two shirts, ripped their shoulders up then exploded inside their bodies.

Sharp streams of wind power roared inside their bodies while countless lightning bolts blasted in their wounds. Bowl-sized holes were created on the shoulders of these two people, and their arms nearly fell off.

"Damn you!" They barfed in pain, dragged their weapons and turned staggeringly around, attempting to run.

Ji Hao turned around and saw them lower their weapons. These two people hurriedly took out two tiny bottles from their sleeves, crumbled them and exposed the pigeon-egg-sized round pills in each bottle, that were glowing with a bright green light.

"Feng Xing, do it!" Ji Hao sneered and bumped his head into Cloud Dream Dragon King’s broken head once again, sending up another wave of blood and brain while shouting to Feng Xing.

Another two golden arrow lights dazzled over. The two people had just raised the pills in their hands. But before they could send them into their mouths, the two golden arrows accurately shattered the two pills, turning them into a puff of green powder.

Ji Hao laughed, turned around and breathed out a golden streak of fire, setting ablaze the green powder. Nice aroma suffused the air, while the two men stood in a daze.

Ji Hao chuckled, raised his hands and smashed his elbows heavily on Cloud Dream Dragon King’s head. Cloud Dream Dragon King suffered a series of severe injuries in a row, and now finally fainted

under Ji Hao’s elbow strike.

Pinching Cloud Dream Dragon King’s neck, Ji Hao carried him up like carrying a bag of garbage, then turned around and looked at the two scrawny men with long loosened hair and white shirts. Both of them had sharp noses, wide foreheads, and deep sunken eyes. Their skins were strangely white, and they both had a pair of thin cracks on their foreheads. Clearly, same as Cloud Dream Dragon King, these two people also partially possessed Jia Clan bloodline.

"Aren’t you pure-blood human beings?" Ji Hao knitted his eyebrows.

"Why did you say this?" Although the huge holes on their shoulders were still spurting blood, these two men politely bowed to Ji Hao, and the taller one responded to Ji Hao’s question in a bland tone, "The great Dao of nature is boundless, compared to which, we are just..."

Ji Hao laughed coldly, interrupted him and continued, "Whatever, if you’re pure-blood human beings or not, I don’t care. Priest Mu and Priest Hua took you as disciples, the consequences are for them to bear. That has nothing to do with me. However, you attacked me from the back, that means you’re seeking death!"

The other man gave a faint smile, said carelessly, "No, no, Ji Hao, my brother, we didn’t attack you from the back. We saw you harmed our little brother Cloud Dream Dragon King so brutally. So, we were left with no choice but to save him. I am Bao Yin, and this is my brother, Bao Shu. The one held in your hand is our little brother. His name is Bao Long. You can also call him Cloud Dream Dragon King!"

Bao Yin smiled so warmly, but added with that bleeding hole on his shoulder, his smile seemed to be a bit weird.

Bao Shu made a serious face, looked at Ji Hao, slightly curved his mouth corners upwards and said, "Ji Hao, my friend, for our Great

Masters' sake, please let our little brother go. Ji Hao, my friend, you're so cruel and merciless."

Ji Hao rocked Cloud Dream Dragon King, who was unconscious, gave Bao Shu a smile-like look and said, "Eh? You mean I hit him too hard?"

Opening his mouth, Ji Hao attempted to argue with Bao Shu and Bao Yin about all the evil things Cloud Dream Dragon King had done, what happened today, how this dragon raised a water-kind army and rampantly broke everything he saw. Ji Hao wanted to tell them what was right and what was wrong.

But then, Ji Hao changed his mind. He laughed out loud and said, "Alright, alright, why would I waste any time on you? Not to mention the other abilities, disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu are top ones in the world in terms of debating skills. I can not compare myself with you!"

Giving three resonant laughter, Ji Hao raised Cloud Dream Dragon King and pulled out the nine suns devil-destroying sword, launching a fierce hack.

A deep yet strong dragon roar came from Cloud Dream Dragon King's body. Then, a cold and emotionless voice of a man shouted harshly, "Who dares to harm my child?"

Ji Hao laughed out wildly. Pan Xi divine mirror released twenty streams of divine light in a row, shining on Cloud Dream Dragon King. They not only weakened his own defensive power to an extreme level, but also broke all defensive seals left in Cloud Dream Dragon King's body by the oldest dragon prince.

"Ji Hao, don't you dare..." Bao Shu and Bao Yin barfed.

Puff! The sword was swung down, and the large head of Cloud Dream Dragon King fell on the ground. The immortal sun streamer rolled down and wrapped that head with a dense golden light, burning it into a strand of smoke within a few breaths.

The soul perished, and the head was burned out. Ji Hao loosened his hand and let Cloud Dream Dragon King’s headless body thud heavily against the surface of the water. The broken neck still had blood surging out from it.

Turning around without taking a glance at Bao Yin and Bao Shu, Ji Hao pointed at those shaking aquatic warriors of Cloud Dream Army and growled, "Cloud Dream Dragon King is dead. Aren’t you going to surrender? Do you all want to die?"

Yao Mountain army arrived in a formidable array. The strong aura of killing spread out as they occupied the whole area. Those aquatic warriors glanced at each other, then all dropped their weapons and kneeled on the water surface.

Bao Shu and Bao Yin had their faces turned green in rage. They growled and rushed towards Ji Hao once again.

Chapter 966: The Destruction of Both of Them

"Dragon tendons, dragon blood, dragon liver, dragon bile...All nourishing, all nourishing!"

Cloud Dream Dragon King's body fell on the water surface and sent up hundreds of meter tall waves. He transformed back into the dragon-shape. That was a thousands of meters long dragon, covered in silver scales.

Yu Mu murmured about those tastiest and nourishing parts of dragons while dashing to Cloud Dream Dragon King's body. He ook out his large pot and put it under the broken dragon neck.

Large streams of dragon blood flew into the large pot. The beautiful red blood emitted a dense, strange aroma. Yu Mu gave a big grin, exposing his shining teeth while happily shaking his head.

A few loyal spirit flood dragons under Cloud Dream Dragon King's command furiously roared, trod on clouds and raised dense watery mist while pouncing on Yu Mu. They couldn't accept the fact that their dragon king was killed by the enemy, and now was going to be thrown into a pot of soup.

Sideway, a few golden beams of light flashed over. Feng Xing silently released his arrows from the distance. The arrows shot into the necks of the few flood dragons, exploded and blew their necks up.

These spirit flood dragons transformed back into their original shapes as well; they were all hundreds of meters long, horned flood dragons. Scorching hot blood surged out from their broken neck. Under the effect of the mysterious power released from the flood dragon blood, waves of thin fish-scale-sized crinkles emerged on the water surface.

Shaosi and Taisi had already built an altar. Taisi put the Nail Head Seven Arrow Book on the altar. He looked at Bao Shu and Bao Yin with his pale colorless eyes while incanting a spell with a deep, spooky voice. From the distance, the boiling dragon spirit blood suddenly rose into the sky, gathered into a stream and flew into the altar.

Quietly, the corpses of the few flood dragons withered and corroded, turning into puffs of drifting ash.

The Nail Head Seven Arrow Book glowed faintly on the altar. Then, Taisi waved his arms, started a strange dance. Meanwhile, he was incanting a spell that only he and those powerful, mysterious beings in the world could understand.

Ji Hao floated in the air, with the nine suns devil-destroying sword held in his hand, looking at Bao Yin and Bao Shu as he laughed coldly.

The two poor things were apparently not valued in Priest Hua and Priest Mu' sect, because they each only had one healing magic pill. After Feng Xing shattered their pills, neither of them managed to take out another one. Their wounds bled profusely. They had already quickly dressed those wounds with a small healing magic, but as they wielded their weapons and smashed the golden pestle and tower down towards Ji Hao's head, their intense movements ripped their wounds open, and the blood gushed out once again.

Loud clangs could be heard without an end. The death of Cloud Dream Dragon King clearly was a great stimulation to Bao Shu and Bao Yin. They now screamed crazily, wielded their weapons and madly attacked Ji Hao, as if they had forgotten about their bleeding wounds.

Ji Hao easily defended himself with his sword. With the sword move taught by Yu Yu, Ji Hao could launch fierce attacks and could also put up a strong defense. When he attacked, it would be like the thunder rumbling in the higher sky, and when he

defended, the protection would be as strong as the Chaos before time. No matter how loudly Bao Yin and Bao Shu shouted, or how many times their weapons smashed down at Ji Hao, they couldn't even touch his body.

Both the golden pestle and the mini tower were cast from a high-quality alloy, and were strengthened with thousands of layers of magic seals secretly taught by Priest Hua and Priest Mu. Held in the hand, these two pieces were as light as a feather. But when smashed on the enemies' bodies, these two pieces would be as heavy as a mountain. Additionally, a strong fire had been releasing from them. These two pieces were indeed great after-world treasures.

However, despite the power of these two pieces, they were just after-world, artificial pieces. Besides, Bao Shu and Bao Yin were not so valued by their sect. That meant the one who made these two pieces for them was only an ordinary one among Priest Hua and Priest Mu's disciples. These two pieces were indeed good, but just ordinarily good.

After tens of strikes, the golden pestle in Bao Shun's hand gave a buzzing noise, as tens of half-foot long cracks appeared on it. It couldn't take the power of Ji Hao's sword anymore. Following Bao Shu's moves, the cracks grew longer and longer, and at last, a few cracks connected and this six-foot long golden pestle shattered.

A thunder-flame burst from the pestle while countless metal pieces zipped out. Bao Shu didn't manage to react timely and let those sharp metal pieces cut into his face.

Howling in pain, Bao Shu stepped back quickly, with his face covered in blood. His eyeballs were crushed, and blood flowed out of his eye sockets in streams. The pair of red, thin cracks above his eyebrows opened suddenly and showed another pair of eyeballs, that seemed to be in hypoplasia. The second pair of eyes rolled in the sockets for a few circles, then released two fierce beams of light, glaring at Ji Hao.

"My treasure!" Seeing his pestle shatter, Bao Shu suffered a heartache. He yelled at Ji Hao with a twisted face, with the hilt of the broken golden pestle held in his hand. He didn't pay any attention to his smashed face, because he nearly fainted.

"Bao Shu, my friend, I haven't even made one sword move at you!" Ji Hao smiled blandly and said, "You attacked me and broke your own weapon. How can you blame me for that?"

Before his voice faded, Ji Hao turned his sword edge up. Bao Yin cast a loud growl with the tower of his held in his hands and smashed violently down at Ji Hao. But sadly, the tower landed on the sharp edge of Ji Hao's sword.

Puff! The tower, which was already covered in scratches and cracks, was cut into two, as smoothly as cutting a carrot. The sword accurately cut into a crack on the bottom of the tower.

"My treasure!" Bao Yin screamed, his voice trailing off in a dramatic way. The magic seams in the tower blasted and released a thunder-flame. Countless pieces pierced Bao Yin's body and shredded his long shirt. Two thorn-like pieces penetrated his body and flew out from his back.

"Your bodies are not strong enough!" Ji Hao looked at Bao Yin and Bao Shu, who were now both covered in blood and had been screaming in pain. He laughed with an obvious viciousness and said, "You see, I'm perfectly fine, but how could you end up like this? You can't blame me for that now, can you?"

The stainless cloak sent up the nine blazing suns, hovering around Ji Hao and burning all metal pieces into smoke before they could approach him.

Bao Yin and Bao Shu looked at the splendidly glowing stainless cloak worn by Ji Hao. Hearing his almost shameless words, the fire of anger burned so ragingly in their hearts that it even made them vomit blood.

"You, you, you... good, you, Earl Yao... You, you, what happened today, we will..." Bao Shu pointed at Ji Hao and tried to leave a threatening word then get away.

However, the bodies of both of them quivered simultaneously, while an arrow-shaped shadow flashed across their bodies, and a scary sense of death shrouded them. That strong power of death gripped their souls, then slightly pulled. In the next moment, the senses of power released from their bodies disappeared, as their souls were suddenly turned into nothingness. After that, their bodies collapsed bit by bit, like sandstone statues which had failed to survive the test of time.

Ji Hao was stunned. He found no blood and flesh inside their bodies. A second ago, these were two living people, but now, only their withered skin remained.

Involuntarily, Ji Hao glanced at Taisi in shock. The magic curse cast by Taisi was getting scarier.

Shaking his head, Ji Hao pointed down at the water-kind army of Cloud Dream Lake and said, "Separate all aquatic warriors, send them into the dare-to-die corps. Let them kill for us!"

Chapter 967: Bewilder with A Secret Magic

Ji Hao, the other earls and marquises, and all large-scale human clans had raised their armies to build water-sealing magic formations and suppress the water-kind armies, which was trying to make the situation worse. Underwater cities which had water-kind armies raised from it were flattened one after another.

Water-sealing magic formations were set up one after another. Meanwhile, the watery mist in the air was gradually dispelled. Without those rampant aquatic creatures, the sun appeared in the sky once again and poured the warm sunlight on mountains, hills, lightened up valleys and woods, and cast the coldness away.

The flood was controlled gradually. People walked out from caves, climbed down from trees, and came up to the land from their drifting boats and rafts. These people tremblingly left their shelters and returned to their clans while crying.

Their houses were flushed away, the fertile farmlands were destroyed. Large livestock that could be taken away were drowned to death as well. Their warm and safe residences had become empty areas. Except for the little food they had with them, all stored grains were gone.

"Ancestors souls!"

Cries and wails could be heard from every corner of Midland. Many elderly people, who had been through countless hardships, kneeled on the ground with their arms raised high, looking at the dazzling blue sky and crying in despair.

Before, when the food was not enough, these elderly people could sacrifice themselves for their clans. As their ancestors did, they would go into the woods, find a leeward, warm valley and let themselves starve to death to save the food for younger people in their clans.

But this time, no hope was left.

The food they had was being eaten out. All grains stored in granaries were carried away by the flood, and corps in the farmlands were gone. Because of the flood, even all eatable wild fruits in the woods had disappeared. Nothing was left.

"Our great ancestors' souls, do you want us to die?"

People cried and wailed, and even strong warriors glanced around in confusion. They didn't know what to do. Without food, nothing could happen. Even if they were strong enough to defeat dragons, even if they were made from iron, they would be softened if they were starved for a couple of days!

More despairingly, after the flood, all fierce wild beasts, which were as starving like these people, rushed out of the woods.

These beasts had a much greater survivability than human beings. Human beings could struggle through the flood, and these wild beasts could surely do the same. These beasts were driven crazy by the starvation. They searched around, smartly avoided the other hungry beasts and fixed their eyes on those weak and vulnerable human beings.

Wild beast attacks happened in everywhere. Countless villages and towns suffered rampant attacks launched by waves of starving wild beasts.

"Ancestors souls, do you want our bloodlines to die?"

Standing on a simple fence wall, a three meters and two feet tall Senior Magi had been growling madly while wielding a steel ax, cutting the saber-toothed-cat that pounced on him into two. Before he could collect his trophy, two black snake-tusked cheetahs rushed up, snatched the two pieces of tiger bodies as fast as lightning bolts and dragging it far away, then began gulping.

They swallowed the tiger, drank its blood, then gradually regained their strength. The power vibrations released from their

bodies quickly grew stronger, and their dark-green eyes sparkled with the light of brutality. Those eyes were fixed on that Senior Magus who stood on the fence wall, with limbs that were shaking slightly.

Tens of senior-level wild beasts circled around this roughly built fence wall. In the sky, hundreds of fierce large birds hovered around, screaming shrilly from time to time. Further away, an entirely red poisonous snake hissed out its fork-tongue, with highly poisonous saliva flowing out of its mouth corners while greedily looking at tens of thousands of human beings protected by that rough fence wall.

This village wasn’t large. Among tens of thousands of people, only around ten were Senior Magi. They stood on the fence wall, expressionlessly looking at those wild beasts. They were soaked in sweat while steam rose from their bodies, and every stream of steam was taking away the last bit strength of theirs.

"Fight to death!" A Senior Magus raised his pure steel long spear, then started singing an ancient, sad battle song.

"Fight to death!" The other few Senior Magi raised their weapons, singing together with their brother, singing this old battle song which was passed down from their ancestors, generation after generation. The battle song was simple; it was sad, filled with despair. Only people who had fallen into hopelessness would sing a song like that.

Back in the ancient times, hunted by countless enormous Chaos creatures, human ancestors puffed out their chests and embraced death while singing this song.

When volcanos erupted, when the fire swept across the forest, when an earthquake started, human ancestors sang this song and defended their clansmen with their fragile bodies.

When diseases came, when the earth was covered in dead bodies, human ancestors would sing a song like this while walking into the

forest, tasting all kinds of herbs. Countless Maguspriests were poisoned to death by herbs in the forest, but eventually, they found a cure for every disease.

The non-humankind descended from the sky and slaughtered human beings, turning human beings into slaves, into lower-grade animals. At that time, Emperor Xuanyuan raised his sword and led human warriors to gather from all directions. Every warrior was singing the same battle song. They wore hides as armors, and their shields were made from wood. But they had their chests puffed out proudly, facing the sharp weapons of the non-humankind.

This battle song was passed down from the prehistorical era. When a clan was out of hope, when a group of human beings was about to suffer a total destruction, those human warriors, who had inherited the spirit of their ancestors, would sing this battle song, and fight their enemies to death!

Either would they kill the last enemy in there, or they would all fall in this place.

Behind the fence wall, people stood up tremblingly. They were starved, their limbs were soft and powerless, but they picked up weapons and slowly climbed onto the fence wall, gasping quickly for air with drops of sweat oozing out of their foreheads, looking at those fierce beasts.

They sang louder and louder, and the aura of killing grew denser and denser.

Wild beasts roared unsettlingly. They screamed, because they sensed a great danger from these vulnerable people. The hunger and the sense of danger stimulated these beasts, making them more and more unsettled and irritable.

When a group of beast was about to pounce on the fence wall, golden light spots drifted down from the air.

Every spot of golden light transformed into a swaying golden

lotus after landing on the ground. Golden lotuses bloomed, each having a good-looking young man, wearing a long robe, sitting on it with crossed legs while incanting a spell.

A peaceful vibe was created, spreading out quickly. Fierce large birds landed on the ground one after another, curled their claws and lied on the ground; beasts on the ground lowered their heads and faced the earth, worshiped those young men sitting in those golden lotuses. All poisonous snakes coiled their bodies; the fierceness they showed just now was gone.

Two handsome men in long white robes slowly walked over from a distance. With every step, they moved for three to five miles. As their bodies flashed across the air, they quickly reached to the rough fence wall.

One of them smiled faintly, then said to those stunned people on the fence wall, "Our Master Shifus are kind. They know that you're in danger, so they sent us to defeat these beasts for you, to save you from your suffering."

He took out a scroll and spread it. Painted on that three-foot square scroll were no one else but Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

"Come join us, say the name of our Master Shifus day and night, and you will be able to fulfill your stomachs, warm your bodies. You will have all you need, and nothing will harm you ever again!"

Chapter 968: Have Ample Food and Clothing

Poisonous snakes hid their fangs while fierce beasts curled their claws. Even though they were driven crazy by the hunger, hearing the spell-incanting voices of those young men sitting on the lotuses, they stayed quiet. They lied on the ground gently and softly, without moving even a little bit, just like a baby who was just satisfied by his mother's milk.

The fiercest wild beasts now looked at the two men in long robes obediently and harmlessly, like chickens; their throats moved slightly, letting out soft glu-glu noises.

People on and behind the fence wall were stunned, watching those golden lotuses growing out from the ground. They had never seen anything like that.

Golden light spots descended from the sky and landed on the ground. Then, from each light spot, leaves and tendrils grew out. Next, golden lotuses bloomed on the ground! How could such a thing ever happen?

Even more magically, a small-sized good-looking young man sat on each lotus, peacefully and devoutly incanting a profound 'spell'! This spell was completely different from the one these people incanted during offering ceremonies, but it was extremely comforting. Hearing the spell, these people even felt less hungry!

An elderly man, whose hair were white and body was stooped, walked slowly through the crowd and reached to the two men.

This dark-skinned elderly man supported his body with a roughly crafted walking stick. He tried his best to open his lusterless eyes wider, looking at these two men from head to toe, then asked, "What do you mean? Believe them, then we can have the food we need? You tell me, who would believe something like that?"

People behind the elderly man shook their heads an sighed.

Indeed, who would believe it? Anyone could say the same.

Fill their stomachs? Because of the endless rain, not even a wild fruit could be found in the forest by now,. How could they fill anyone's stomach at the moment?

Some women glanced at those wild beasts, who obediently lied on the ground and stayed motionless. If they slaughtered these beasts, the meat would be enough for all clansmen to have a nice meal, but that could only make one meal. After these beasts were eaten out, the people would starve again.

The two young men laughed. They reverently bowed to the portrait of Priest Hua and Priest Mu, smiled mildly and said, "You can surely believe us. If you follow the guidance of our Master Shifus, if you worship them in your ancestral temple, you will naturally get what you need."

The elderly man with a walking stick wanted to say something else, but the two young men with long robes already started working.

Because of the rain and the flood, the village had disappeared. The fertile farmlands opened by their ancestors were destroyed, and all of the rich soil was washed away. By now, exposed in the air was nothing but cold and hard deep layer soil.

Rich natural powers existed in Midland. If these people could till the deep layer soil as soon as they could, exposing the moist soil in the sun for a couple of days, then bring fresh water into it and carefully take care of it, this area could still become fertile farmlands.

But despairingly, the toxin in the rain had been absorbed by the soil, and the soil was now colorful, like the scales of poisonous snakes. Not to mention growing crops on this kind of soil, if ordinary human beings lived in an area with a toxic soil like this, they might be affected by the toxin and might even die of illness.

As for creating new farmlands and planting crops, to ordinary human beings who didn’t have the ability to remove the toxin from the soil, new farmlands would always be a dream.

The two young men with long robes quickly surveyed the nearby soil, then confidently smiled, cupped their hands to the sky and said, "Master Shifus, please."

Along with their moves, a faint green light poured down from the sky and circled the area with a radius of a hundred meters. Visibly, strands of colorful toxic mist rose from the soil and quickly dissipated under the green light.

The hard and cold deep layer soil suddenly turned soft and rich all of a sudden. This hopeless land was turned into a perfectly fertile farmland, as if it had been through countless years of cultivation. A few women, who were farming masters, rushed to the rich land, kneeled and took full handfuls of black, warm and nicely smelling soil. They were stunned, and couldn’t make any sound.

The soft rich soil layer was a couple of feet thick, and these women had sensed the refreshing aroma of plants from it. Those people were silenced. They slowly walked up, with an indescribable devoutness and fear. They held their breaths, stunningly watching the two young men continue their work.

Even the strongest warrior among these people, the one who feared nothing and even dared to fight fierce wild beasts in the forest by risking his own life, had now held his breath, carefully looking at the two young men. Showing on his face was the dread that had never appeared on him, not even for once.

"Like we said, as long as you willingly join us and worship our Master Shifus, you will naturally have what you need." said a young man while satisfyingly accepting the gazes of fear and devoutness from these people. Conveniently, this young man took out three fist-sized rice seeds.

The three seeds had a beautiful jade-like luster, and emitting a nice aroma of rice. This man dug three human-head-sized holes in the ground, then planted these three seeds. He incanted a spell with a low voice, then waved his hand towards the sky. Another green stream of light poured down on the three planted seeds.

Visibly, the three seeds began sprouting quickly. The green roots drilled Ito the soil while seedlings grew out from the ground.

Following a cracking noise, the seedling reached the height of three feet. All the people shouted out in shock. When did they ever see a plant grow so fast? Before they could realize what had just happened, the three seedlings swayed in the air and grew nine feet tall.

Golden veins, vividly green leaves... As the green light poured down, the three seedlings swayed in a breeze and reached a height of nearly a hundred meters within a couple of breaths.

Human-leg-thick spikes of rice grew out. Next, fist-sized grains appeared on the spikes, and everyone could see those grains swelling.

Within twenty minutes, three giant paddy rice were ripe. Next, a dense aroma of steamed rice spread out. A young man in a long robe leaped up and grabbed down a fist-sized grain. He ripped the husk open and exposed a dark-green-colored, translucent rice grain, that was emitting a great aroma.

This young man handed the rice grain to a strong warrior, smiled and said, "It’s cooked already. No matter how big your stomach is, eat this, and you won’t feel hungry anymore for the next three days. Besides, if you eat this, you won’t feel cold, not even in a sealed ice cave."

This meters tall warrior threw the rice grain into his mouth, chewed for a while, then swallowed.

Instantly, a pinkness emerged on this man’s face, which had

turned pale because of the starvation. A thin layer of sweat oozed out of his forehead as well, as if he was wearing a cotton-padded jacket in summer. He sensed a strong warmth inside his body, that even made him wipe the sweat on his face.

"This..."

A few elderly men were dumbfounded.

"Come join us, and you will have ample food and clothing. Do you believe us now?" The two young men smiled, gently and warmly.

Chapter 969: Ominous Omen

"I surrender, I surrender! Please! Please don’t kill me! Please! Earl Yao!"

Two large carps with golden heads and silvery tails dropped their steel tridents and kneeled by a river while trembling. Without the powers of these two large carps, the flooding river immediately slowed down, and the water quietly flew back into the river way.

Hundreds of shrimp warriors, frog warriors, tens of black fish warriors who had barely transformed their bodies into human shapes, kneeled by the river while quivering. They lowered their heads, not daring to look at Ji Hao and those human warriors around him, who were all emitting a strong vibe of killing.

"Check them!" Ji Hao pointed at these aquatic creatures.

A few Magi from the Magi Palace walked up along with a troop of warriors. They took out fist-sized bronze mirrors and made these aquatic creatures look in the mirror one by one. The mirror had been sparkling with a magical light. Whenever an aquatic creature looked at a mirror and it showed no change, this creature would be sent aside to gather in a certain area.

A large black fish looked into the mirror, when all of a sudden, the glow of the mirror turned blood-red. The few Magi laughed in frosty voices. Warriors following behind them silently rushed up, pressed the large black fish on the ground and chopped his head off, then kicked the corpse into the river.

The glow of the mirror changed, meaning this black fish had eaten human beings!

This large black fish wasn’t the only one who had human blood on his hands. These aquatic creatures raised overwhelming waves and rampantly swept across the land. More or less, they all had human blood on their hands. However, killing human beings and

eating human beings were different.

They raised a flood and drowned human beings to death, but they could explain that they were only following Gong Gong's orders. Gong Gong was the only existing water-king God at the moment, and these aquatic creatures had to listen to his orders. Ji Hao could forgive these creatures for following the trend and harming human beings, as long as he could send them into the dare-to-die corps and let them fight for the humankind to atone for their crimes.

But once they ate human beings, things would be different. They ate human beings, and this touched the bottom line of Ji Hao, and all the other human beings. All aquatic creatures which had eaten human beings had to be executed right on the spot, and this rule was unbreakable.

Howls rose wave after wave. A ten meters long toad was pressed down by the river, and the executioner had already raised the machete in his hand. This toad crazily kicked his heels while screaming heartbreakingly.

"Earl Yao! Master Earl Yao! Please don't kill me! Please! I was only curious. I only ate a small slice, a tiny slice!"

"Master Earl Yao! I didn't eat much. I ate an arm, only am arm! They said that eating human beings can improve our powers quickly, can make us smarter, and we can grow faster. So I ate a small piece, I didn't want to!"

"He had already drowned to death when I ate him! He was dead already. I didn't eat him as a living person!"

"Master Earl Yao! Please don't kill me!"

Ji Hao expressionlessly looked at this crying toad and gave a frosty smile. "You're crying so loudly now, begging for mercy. But when you raised the flood and drowned countless human beings to death, then fed on them, why didn't I see you show any mercy?"

"Behead it!" Ji Hao coldly waved his hand and gave the order to the executioner.

"I, I can, I have something to tell you! I know a place!" For saving his own life, tears and snot spurted out from this toad's eyes and nose. The water-tank-sized pair of eyeballs of his nearly fell off from the sockets. He yelled in a shrill voice, "I know a place with something strange in it. Earl Yao, Master Earl Yao, I can take you there...That's designed for destroying your humankind!"

The machete held in the executioner's hands had already been swung down, cutting into the neck of the toad.

Ji Hao flashed across the air at lightning speed, cracked the space and teleported himself to the toad's side. He gently held the falling blade edge and pushed, making the executioner take a few step backward. Next, a strong essence sun fire was released from Ji Hao's left hand, then he silently pressed it on the toad's back.

The sizzling noise was loud and endless, along with the toad's howls. Ji Hao gently brushed across the toad's back, which was thickly covered in bumps, flattening all of them with the fire. A foot-thick layer of flesh on the toad's back was burned to ash.

The toad howled himself hoarse in pain. He cried, begged, but Ji Hao remained silent. He carefully burned his entire back, then finally began talking.

"What is strange in that place? How did you find it out?" asked Ji Hao slowly.

The two carps with silvery tails shouted out together, "Master Earl Yao, this thing..."

Ji Hao flicked his right forefinger and swiftly hit the air, generating two fist-sized air blasts along with a series of muffled popping noise. The air blasts struck the two carps' chests and shattered all half-foot-thick iron-like fish scales on their chests.

Blood was squeezed out from the two carps' mouths as they were

sent flying tens of meters away, fell on the ground while twitching without an end.

"Speak!" Ji Hao stomped his foot on the toad's head, looking down at the toad with a cold smile on his face.

"My sister is the close servant girl of the most beloved wife of the God of this White Dragon River!" The large toad shouted while trying pretty hard to bring out a polite laugh.

"White Dragon River God? He fell in a war back in the ancient time..." Ji Hao looked at the toad coldly.

"The later one! Conferred by Gong Gong!" The toad hurriedly explained, "Gong Gong didn't tell the human emperor about this. White Dragon River God is a three-headed black flood dragon, good at creating rains, thunder, and lightning, Gong Gong recognized his worth and conferred him as White Dragon River God!"

Gasping for air, the large toad pitifully looked at Ji Hao and continued, "No matter how, I can be counted as a trustworthy one to the river God...Hehe, I'm not so close to him, but after all, my sister is the close servant girl of his move beloved wife. I'm much more trustable than the others. Therefore, I was sent over to as a military inspector of those two carps."

"Military inspector?" Ji Hao looked at the large toad, not knowing if he should laugh or not. For the hundreds of aquatic creatures under the two carps' commands, the river God had sent over a military inspector?

"Speak, what's strange in that place?" Ji Hao laughed coldly.

"Can you spare my life?" The toad looked at Ji Hao while crying, "You spare my life, then I'll tell you all I know. My sister was drunk that night and accidentally mentioned it to me. Otherwise, I would never know."

"I can spare your life, just speak!" Ji Hao stepped hard on the

toad’s head.

"Eh, speaking of it, it’s a mysterious, great magic formation, built in the deepest area of this White Dragon River by the river God, with quite an effort." said the large toad, "Ahyaya, for building that great formation, tons of top-grade water magic crystals were required. That was a tough time, and we were all forced to work in the crystal mine down in the river bottom. You don’t know how hard that was!"

"The point!" Essence sun fire puffed out of Ji Hao’s palm once again.

The large toad was frightened badly, that he even showed the whites of his eyes. He hurriedly screamed, "Ah, ah, my sister said that when the time comes and the magic formation is activated, we will have endless reinforcements! Then, the great water-kind army under Gong Gong’s command will be strong enough to destroy all human beings who are daring enough to resist!"

Ji Hao’s heart missed a beat. Endless reinforcements?

Chapter 970: Unexpected

Ji Hao quickly wrote something on a triangle-shaped jade talisman, then flicked his fingers and sent the jade talisman flying away, followed by a hundreds of meters long bolt of lightning and a series of popping noise.

Ji Hao sent out over a hundred jade talismans like this, to give early warnings to Si Wen Ming, Yao Meng and the other friends of his. Then, he threw a heavy kick on the toad lying and crying on the ground and forced it to lead the way to that so-called deepest area of the river.

White Dragon River extended for hundreds of millions of miles. It was the top-tier large river system in this whole area, and included the territories of hundreds of earls and marquises around Yao Mountain territory. Even Cloud Dream Lake couldn't be compared with this river.

More importantly, this river had a large number of branches, and by the sides of the main channel were thousands of meters tall towering mountains. With such a geographical feature, the river would normally flow rapidly between mountains, and that scenery would be stunning. But at the time of the flood, aquatic creatures in the river had been rampantly raising the water, such that the water-level had even gone higher than the mountains on both sides. Mountains were submerged, and the water surged down over the mountainsides. The mountains contributed to the power of the water, allowing it to create even worse damage.

While crying loudly, the toad led Ji Hao and his people to the upper reaches of the river. On the way, they saw groups of aquatic creatures. Countless different sized water-kind spirit creatures, even the other spirit creatures living in the woods around White Dragon River, all of them had been crazily raising waves to flood the surrounding area.

Ji Hao commanded his army to sweep across. The matter was serious, therefore, Ji Hao didn't have the time to differentiate those spirit creatures. All captured spirit creatures were beheaded and thrown into the water, until the river water turned red, like a river of blood.

Killing all the way, five days later, the area in the front became extensive. A series of towering peaks were connected, looked like lotus petals. Two enormous mountains stood facing each other, with a misty water area in the middle.

This was where the few main branches of White Dragon River met. The mountains in this area were steep; the few large branches surged down rapidly, clashed against each other and created a dangerous whirlpool.

Observing from a distance, Ji Hao found that this water area was tens of thousands of miles in radius. Waves rolled, and other than the main channel of the river, three large branches had also been roaring into this area from both sides each. Six branches met in this place, bumping into each other and merging into that giant whirlpool.

From that long distance, Ji Hao heard the rumbling noise from the whirlpool. A strong friction was generated between the river-water in the whirlpool and the surrounding mountain, peeling off soil and sand from the mountains layer by layer, making the surface of the mountains as hard and sparkling as diamond.

Without a doubt, this whirlpool wasn't so huge at first. No one knew how many years it had been milling until it reached such a magnificent shape.

What made Ji Hao frown were a hundred and eight water-tank-sized chains reaching out of this whirlpool, six chains as a group, and each group of chains tied a floating mountain. They fixed the floating mountain in the air, less than three meters above the river surface. White Dragon River God probably learned this skill from

someone else.

The surrounding mountain were towering, while these eighteen floating mountains were merely hundreds of meters away from the water surface, and were completely sheltered by the surrounding mountains. Those towering mountains were just like a screen. If Ji Hao didn't get so close today, he wouldn't even discover these eighteen floating mountains.

Ji Hao couldn't tell for sure how many years had White Dragon River God spent on building this place, because these eighteen floating mountains were all cast with a thick layer of lava mixed with liquid iron. By now, these eighteen floating mountains seemed to be entirely metal, and had a crazily great defensive power.

On these floating mountains, countless watchtowers stood in ordered lines, with lines of holes below them. From time to time, numerous spirit creatures would walk in and out of those holes and climb up and down those watchtowers, while showing their teeth and waving their arms.

At first glance, Ji Hao found tens of thousands of watchtowers on a single floating mountain. On each watchtower were ten to a hundred water-kind archers, vigilantly glancing around. A large number of water-kind archers on the eighteen floating mountains even made Ji Hao's scalp numb.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye and carefully observed the bows and arrows of these archers, his face turning dark as a result.

Those were not roughly crafted bows and arrows that he imagined. Instead, all bows and arrows used by these water-kind archers had spell symbols sparkling faintly on them, and were entirely made from alloy, decorated with complicated and detailed patterns. These bows and arrows could even be described with the word 'luxurious', as they were made with great artistic awareness. Apparently, these bows and arrows were based on the special taste

of Yu Clan.

The bows and arrows used by these water-kind archers were actually all good-quality ones produced by the non-humankind. Even though the quality of these bows and arrows was not top-grade, as they were produced by the non-humankind beings for sale and not for their own armies, these were still powerful, efficient weapons. With just enough magic crystals to provide energy, each arrow could puncture a foot thick alloy from fifteen meters away.

As Ji Hao saw, these water-kind archers had millions of arrows and bows with such a high quality. Unless all warriors were at the level of Magus Kings or above, any human army that dared to attack this tridimensional defense line formed by these eighteen floating mountains would be annihilated, and every Senior Magi would be shot into sifters.

"Damn it!" Standing beside Ji Hao, Feng Xing, who had the best eyesight, popped out his eyes in shock, staring at those well-equipped water-kind archers on those eighteen floating mountains. He couldn’t even believe his eyes.

Every since the army set out from Yao Mountain territory to clean up rampant water-kind creatures, all water-kind armies that encountered Ji Hao’s army suffered miserably. Among all aquatic creatures Ji Hao had seen, only Divine-Magus-level enormous spirit aquatic creatures could have one to two good weapons, and the others barely had any.

Many weak aquatic creatures simply sharpened the wooden sticks they found in the water with their teeth to use as their weapons.

To a great extent, these humble equipment made the water-kind armies vulnerable when facing Ji Hao’s army. Elite warriors under Ji Hao’c command chopped these aquatic creatures as easily as cutting tofu with large knives, and nothing was difficult at all.

However, this White Dragon River Army they faced right now was equipped with great weapons. The armors worn by those water-kind archers were in relatively lower quality, but at least each archer had a metal or fish scale armor that had a considerable defensive power. Added with the defensive system in this place, if Ji Hao launched a frontal attack, not too many warriors under his command would be able to survive.

"Where did they get so much money?" Shaosi had been doing the financial management for Yao Mountain territory, and at the moment, she was totally shocked. Over ten million high-quality bows and arrows produced by the non-humankind, that was a great fortune. As the God of a river, White Dragon River God shouldn’t be able to earn so much money, not even if he sold himself in parts. He should never be able to afford all these, should he?"

Looking at the roaring whirlpool, Ji Hao helplessly sent out another tens of warning messages.

Chapter 971: Go Alone

Six hours later, Yao Meng arrived with his warriors. After the battle they fought together, Yao Meng and Ji Hao were good friends now.

Yao Meng left his army hundreds of miles away, then came to meet Ji Hao with a few trustworthy warrior commanders. Seeing the solid fortification upon the whirlpool, he couldn't help but curse in a low voice.

"Damn it! Who the hell is this White Dragon River God? Why is he so rich?"

Yao Meng's eyes had even turned green. He stared at those strong bows held in those aquatic creatures' hands and couldn't say a word. Si Water territory wasn't rich. Therefore, Yao Meng's army only had less than ten-thousand good-quality bows like this.

As a human earl, his armory wasn't even as rich as the armory of a leader of aquatic creatures; this made Yao Meng quite unconformable.

"The one valued by Gong Gong sure has some abilities." Ji Hao had carefully scanned across White Dragon River with his spiritual power, and seen everything within the one million miles long section of this river.

White Dragon River basin was vast, surrounded by towering mountains, with very few human beings living in this area. Therefore, all valuable mines in this area became White Dragon River God's private property. He had countless aquatic creatures working for him, and during the past countless years, he had taken immeasurably great amounts of valuable mineral resources from this area.

At the bottom of this rapidly flowing river, Ji Hao found over ten-thousand mine craters. Some were thousands of meters deep,

and some rich magic crystal mines were dug to tens of thousands of meters deep.

By now, these empty mine craters had become the best parenting bases. These craters were now filled with aquatic plants, with countless rapidly-growling aquatic creatures living in. Large numbers of aquatic creatures gathered in these craters, doing nothing but eating and laying eggs.

Normally, a female human being could have one baby at a birth, but these aquatic creatures could lay tens, even hundreds of thousands of eggs at once. Wherever Ji Hao's spirit power scanned across, he saw countless different sized eggs, and billions of aquatic creatures noisily fighting and devouring each other in those craters.

With such a giant number of aquatic creatures and all those mineral resources in this area, it was not so difficult for White Dragon River God to purchase all those weapons from the non-humankind, during the past hundreds of years.

Ji Hao told Yao Meng about his discovery. Yao Meng gasped in both anger and jealousy, and his expression was even a bit unnatural. If this core area of White Dragon River didn't such a great defensive power, Yao Meng would have rushed up with his warriors to rob these rich aquatic creatures long ago.

Another day had passed. Si Wen Ming and the other few earls who were close to Ji Hao, left their armies and rushed over, each with a couple of guards.

Quickly greeting each other, these people came near the whirlpool and sneakily observed the defense of this area. After that, each one of them gasped in shock.

"This...is way too much!" said Si Wen Ming with a darkened face, "Back then, Emperor Xuanyuan said that the heaven is fallen, so Gods of mountains and rivers should be conferred by the human emperor. But before this was settled, Emperor Xuanyuan abdicated

and left."

"This White Dragon River should be ruled by our humankind; all mineral resources should belong to our humankind!" Stomping his foot against the ground, Si Wen Ming continued with a tone of human suprematism while pointing at the flowing river and sneering.

Gnashing his teeth, Si Wen Ming snorted, "Now, all these rare mineral resources have been stolen by these evil creatures and sent to the non-humankind, traded for weapons to slaughter human beings. Such things can never happen again, ever!"

Ji Hao stared at the eighteen floating mountains with a gloomy look.

At night, the wind was cold and strong, blowing fiercely on these floating mountains. The eighteen floating mountains unsettlingly dragged the chains, letting out a buzzing noise.

Lamplights emerged on these floating mountains, which were the aquatic creatures patrolling with torches held in their hands. Lighthouses were built on these flowing mountains, with a magical type of glowing pearl placed in. During night time, those pearls released a bright glow, gathered into a white-dragon-like strong stream of light by well-polished large seashells, then sent into all directions.

The snow-white, cold light flashed across the air, and made the surrounding area even brighter than daytime. Wherever the white light reached, everything seemed to become transparent. Ji Hao and the others surprisingly found that this white light could reach into the rock for hundreds of meters deep, and all bugs and worms hiding deeply underground could be seen clearly under this light.

"Shall we just attack, or...?" Looking at the strong defensive line, Si Wen Ming asked while moving his forefinger across his neck.

When he asked the question, his look was serious, and his tone

was heavy.

Unlike those weak and fragile aquatic creatures which were slaughtered by human armies in the past month, this water-kind army under White Dragon River God's command was apparently raised by Gong Gong himself, with great efforts. In terms of morals, disciplines, and equipment, this army was totally different from the other water-kind armies.

Elites of the enemy should be destroyed as soon as possible. Otherwise, once the endless reinforcement mentioned by the large toad truly arrived, things would get out of control.

However, the White Dragon River Army was so strong, and if Ji Hao and the others truly launched a frontal attack, how many human warriors would be sacrificed?

The other earls who came along with Si Wen Ming all showed bitterness on their faces. They looked at those eighteen floating mountains and fell into speechlessness. Because of the flood, all their territories had suffered great losses in terms of warriors and clansmen, and their clans were weakened largely as well.

Launching a frontal attack to this core area of White Dragon River with a tired army, the result might not be good.

"Uncle Wen Ming, let me go in and take a look the first!" Ji Hao remained silent for a while, pondered carefully then began talking, "If anything truly harmful to our humankind is in there, I will destroy it, even by risking my own life. If nothing important is in there, we can simply encircle this area without launching attacks."

Ji Hao continued in a deep voice, "We can't let our brothers die under those bows, can we? They all have parents and relatives. Besides, how many years have they spent to cultivate themselves into elites? If the casualty gets too big, I'd be sad too."

The other earls nodded, looking at Ji Hao with warmth and kindness.

Ji Hao smiled, and before SI Wen Ming could say anything to stop him, the golden bridge flew out from between Ji Hao's eyebrows. This time, no glow was emitted from the golden bridge. Instead, it transformed into a gust of wind, wrapped Ji Hao up and silently merged with the blowing wind. It airily flew towards the giant whirlpool under the eighteen floating mountains.

Within a few breaths, Ji Hao reached the whirlpool. He carefully observed it to see if there were any other traps in it, then covered the sense of power released from his body with the Pan Xi divine mirror and carefully leaped in.

Chapter 972: Dark Killing Thread

In the giant whirlpool, water currents were rapid, but silent.

The white water currents moved swiftly yet quietly. And if one looked at them for a long while, he would feel like he was trapped in a delusion. The white water was quietly flowing in the enormous whirlpool, reaching down from the water surface, so deep that no bottom could be seen.

Ji Hao let the water currents bring him down.

What surprised him was that he didn't see even one spirit creature down there. Except for the aquatic warriors on the eighteen floating mountains above the whirlpool, not a single aquatic creature was in the water.

White Dragon River God had apparently spent quite an effort on building this area. Diving down from the water surface, Ji Hao found a circle of human-head-sized glowing pearls on the mountains around the whirlpool underwater, every hundreds of meters.

The white pearl glow made the underwater space very bright. The water was flawlessly clear, even scarily clear, that Ji Hao always felt like some great danger had been hiding down here in this strangely clear water.

Diving down for thirty-thousand meters, Ji Hao was brought under a red underground mountain by the water streams. With a sideway glance, he saw a few green spell symbols carved on the smooth surface of the mountain.

These twisted spell symbols should be created by ancient spirit aquatic creatures, because under the white pearl glow, these green spell symbols had been releasing a cold and evil sense of power.

When Ji Hao’s body brushed across these spell symbols, he somehow felt a strange forcefield sweep through his body, that

made him feel cold from the marrow. This feeling was prominent despite the fact that he was so strong now that he could even physically rival a powerful dragon-like Cloud Dream Dragon King.

The deeper he went, the more spell symbols like these existed, and the cold power released from the whirlpool grew strong and stronger. Ji Hao tried to move his palm, but all ten fingers of his were already a bit stiff because of the coldness.

After reaching ninety-thousand meters deep underwater, extremely thin ice flakes emerged from the clear water. Sheet-like white ice flakes floated in the whirlpool in ordered lines, being controlled by the cold forcefield created by those green spell symbols. No matter how rapidly the water flowed, these ice flakes remained motionless.

At this point, Ji Hao caught a big trouble. Carelessly, he was pushed to a straightened white ice flake by the water current.

The golden bridge slightly buzzed, then Ji Hao twisted his body and brushed across the edge of the ice flake. Meanwhile, Ji Hao took out a tungsten steel block and gently scratched the edge of the ice flake. The ice flake remained perfectly undamaged while the solid tungsten steel was cut into two silently.

"Interesting!" Ji Hao packed the two pieces of tungsten steel and carefully focused on the front area.

Countless straightened ice flakes approached him like countless blades hacking down at his face. The rapid water current dragged Ji Hao’s body swiftly to those, thick lines of ice flakes. Smartly, the golden bridge had been adjusting its moving direction, to help Ji Hao easily dodge these ice flakes, which were less than three meters away from each other and disorderly positioned.

In the whirlpool, with a slight carelessness, even a powerful spirit aquatic creature would be pushed into these ice flakes by the water current, and one could imagine how miserable that would be.

Ji Hao couldn't help but silently nod. This White Dragon River God was indeed great. He cleverly set this effective and flexible defense mechanism, but made it look so natural, as if it was a natural phenomenon. This defense mechanism seemed to be simple, but it disabled all ordinary living being from diving so deep.

Diving down along with water currents for quite a while, Ji Hao saw that the color of these ice flakes turned faintly blue from white. As more and more, thicker and thicker magic spells emerged on the surrounding underwater mountains, the faint blue color of these ice flakes slowly changed to cyan-green.

The cold forcefield got stronger and stronger, while the clear water currents turned heavier and heavier.

If the specific gravity of the water from the surface of the river was one, after Ji Hao dived down for a hundred thousand meters, the specific gravity of the faintly blue water in this area had already reached over three-hundred. Added with the great water pressure in this depth, even a Senior Magi could be crushed in this area.

As the depth went on increasing, the water flowed faster and faster. What floated in the water were no longer sheet-sized ice flakes. Instead, those had become dark-green ice threads.

Around ten meters long ice threads stood in the rapidly flowing water. The water flushed across violently, but these ice threads remained motionless. When the water currents brushed across these ice threads, they would sparkle with a faint light.

Ji Hao carefully listened, and heard a ghost-scream-like noise coming from these ice threads.

Tiny spell symbols had been bursting from these dark-green ice threads, drifting in the water and creating long and thin streams of misty tails. These tiny spell symbols were the real sources of those barely audible ghost screams. Each spell symbol would hover

around an ice thread for a short while, then merge back in it.

Ji Hao looked at these seemingly soft yet strong, and extremely sharp dark-green ice threads, and felt that these ice threads were somehow familiar.

Searching through his head, Ji Hao recalled all the knowledge regarding the great Dao, skills for magic-treasure making, and all the other things he learned from Yu Yu, Po, and the Magi Palace. Soon, he found something about these ice-thread-like things in his memory.

That was recorded in Po's the secret note of magic-treasure-making — Pre-world dark killing threads!

This type of ice threads was extremely rare, even back in the prehistorical era. It was known as an extreme form of dark power. These ice threads were soft yet incredibly strong. Except for a few pure positive types of natural powers, such as the essence sun fire, nothing could destroy them.

Pre-world dark killing threads were incomparably hard to deal with. Even if one had the essence sun fire, one may still fail to destroy them, because the essence sun fire might not be strong enough. Even if one were a greatly powerful being and could make the fire strong enough, it would still take a long span of time to melt these ice threads.

According to Po's note, back in the prehistorical era, if a spirit creature could collect pre-world dark killing threads and make a spirit treasure with them, it would definitely be able to dominate a land. With that spirit treasure, ordinary powerful beings such as Priest Corpse could do nothing to it.

Dark-green pre-world dark killing threads already had a great quality, and if the color turned black, that would make it top-quality. If the color turned transparent-gray, that would be a supreme-level quality. If one had the skill, one could even create a pre-world-level treasure with transparent-gray pre-world dark

killing threads.

"Good for you, White Dragon River God!" Ji Hao silently clicked his tongue. All these pre-world dark killing threads in this river were natural treasures! ‘I can’t waste these, I have to collect all of these later.’ Ji Hao thought.

Diving down deeper, the water pressure grew greater and greater, while the cold power in the water grew stronger and stronger. The color of pre-world dark killing threads in this depth gradually turned dark. The deeper he went, the darker it got.

The ghost-scream-like noise turned louder and louder, shriller and shriller. Ji Hao felt that his scalp was numbed from time to time, and even his seed of Dao of sun was slightly shaken.

Moving downwards for thirty-thousand meters further, Ji hao vaguely saw a series of buildings down below, and those pre-world dark killing threads around him were all transparent gray.

Chapter 973: Going in the House

Gray pre-world dark killing threads!

Ji Hao saw lines of thousands of meters long pre-world dark killing threads in the rapidly spinning whirlpool, then his mind was blank.

This kind of pre-world dark killing thread was a legend, even in the prehistorical era. Those powerful ancient spirit creatures had to spend years traveling around the world to luckily find a slight little bit of killing threads like these to create treasures. With Po's great power and abilities, he had been traveling in the Midland and the four wastelands for so many years, but he hadn't found even one gray pre-world dark killing thread!

Nevertheless, right now, right in front of Ji Hao's eyes, there were millions of gray pre-world dark killing threads, each over three meters long.

The gray color meant these killing threads already had a divine-level quality, but these killing threads were not entirely transparent yet, and could not be counted as supreme-level ones. However, these threads were already perfect for making all kinds of magic formation flags, magic treasures, and weapons.

Ji Hao carefully dived deeper. The series of buildings down there became clearer and clearer. Gradually, the pre-world dark killing threads around him turned entirely transparent, when he was around three thousand meters away from those buildings.

"I thought so!" Ji Hao silently praised in surprise. He glanced around, and didn't see any living being in this area. Then, he rummaged his pockets and took out the black steel sword from Si Water River God, who was killed by him earlier. He gently hacked on a gray transparent killing thread with that sword.

Crack! The killing thread remained moveless while the black

steel sword had a thin crack appearing on it. Cold strands of power lingered on the crack. A long while later, after the black steel sword absorbed enough water power, the crack finally disappeared.

This sword belonged to a true God, and was given by the heaven, but it failed to cut a supreme-level killing thread. Ji Hao's eye corners twitched intensively. He truly wanted to pull out the nine suns devil-destroying sword and try to cut these killing threads, but he was afraid that he might disturb the ones in those buildings. Therefore, he forced himself to not do it.

Diving down, the water currents turned even heavier and more rapid.

Raising his head, Ji Hao saw a white funnel-shaped whirlpool spinning swiftly above his head, its bottom being near him. A gray, transparent flask floated in this area. At the opening of this hexagonal flask, a gray-colored sphere of dark power was faintly visible, while a great amount of water power had been surging into the flask from the whirlpool.

On each of the six sides of this flask, a twisted spell symbol had been sparkling. Every ten breaths, a strong stream of dark power would be released from the spell symbol, surge to the surrounding mountains along with shrill ghost streams, then reach up through spell symbols carved on them.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and observed this three feet tall flask for a while, then figured out the secret of this whirlpool.

This giant whirlpool gathered a great dark power, and the strong water pressure was the best tool to purify the dark power. The purified dark power was absorbed by the flask, and transformed into pre-world dark power. Then, it was released to the surrounding mountains, being transformed once again by the magic formation based on these mountains, and eventually condensing into ice flakes in the whirlpool.

Under the strong water pressure, these water flakes were flushed and strengthened by the frigid water currents for countless years, and were purified, compressed gradually, and slowly formed into killing threads. Attracted by the sphere of dark power on the opening of the flask, the purer killing threads sank deeper, and in the end, all threads surrounding this flask were perfect supreme ones. They could be used straight for creating pre-world-level supreme treasures.

"Good one, a truly good one!" Ji Hao nodded and praised.

"Good treasure, a truly good treasure!" The mysterious man's voice came from Ji Hao's spiritual space, "Take it and go... This is the pre-world Liu Ren bottle. Liu Ren represents positive powers, and killing threads produced by it have an extreme-level negative power. Things would develop in the opposite direction when they become extreme. Therefore, these killing threads can actually withstand all kinds of pure fires."

The mysterious smiled and continued, "This treasure is good. You possess the essence sun fire, which is purely positive. It's powerful, but simple as a defense. If you encounter some fierce creatures generated by the pre-world essence sun fire, you won't be able to do anything to them with your fire. However, with this pre-world Liu Ren bottle, you can deliver many unexpected changes."

"So, shall I just take it straight away?" Ji Hao glanced down at those buildings down below.

"Hmm, I am only giving a suggestion. As for how will you do it, that's up to you!" The mysterious man laughed in an irresponsible tone, quite happily, "When the world was just created, this treasure was a famous one. At least three-hundred pre-world devil Gods fought over it and died, but none of them actually attained it at last. It has been so many years. Who on earth was so lucky that actually attained this treasure?"

Sighing loudly and rumblingly, the mysterious man changed his

tone, gave a cold and scornful chuckle and continued, "However, the ones who own this treasure are still not good enough though. With a supreme treasure like this, they are still extracting killing threads in such a silly way!"

Ji Hao paused slightly and asked, "Do you have a better idea?"

The mysterious man remained silent for a while, then responded a bit embarrassedly, "Back then...I heard an old man mention it... He was a master of dark power. But at that time, I didn't think that special magic would be useful for me, so I didn't take it seriously! However, if you attain this bottle, I'll spend some time to try to recall. I think I can recall it!"

Ji Hao curved his mouth corners downwards. 'Alright, this old guy is never reliable anyway!' thought Ji Hao.

He took a few circles around the bottle, then took out those magic talismans and thunder-flame bombs given by Priest Dachi before the Pan Xi World life-and-death game started. He put these talismans and bombs around the bottle, and next, set up a small-world reversal magic formation that he learned from Yu Yu to conceal them. Afterwards, he abruptly dived down and moved into the underwater city down below.

The golden bridge had been shaking slightly. Colorless and shapeless divine light streams flashed across the water, silently broke a few simple magic formations, allowing Ji Hao to easily break into this underwater city.

Although called an underwater city, in fact, this place had a rather simple structure. Barracks were built in the north, south, west, and east, circling a tens of miles huge area. In the square, facing the north were three halls. These were all that was there in this underwater city.

Barracks in the east, west, and south were quiet. Through the opened doors, Ji Hao saw a large spirit aquatic creature sitting in each room of these three long lines of barracks with legs crossed,

and had been silently absorbing the rich water power from the water.

All aquatic creatures in these barracks had been silently cultivating themselves, and no one was making any sound.

In the middle of the square, a floating three-dimensional magic formation floated in the water. It was quiet and motionless, without any sense of power releasing from it. Ji Hao measured this great formation with his eyes and found that over sixty-percent of the complicated structure of this magic formation was beyond his understanding. He turned away from this magic formation, then quietly came to the northern side.

Supreme-level killing threads drifted down from above and descended into the open door, along with shrill ghost screams.

Through the door, Ji Hao saw tens of large black flags floating in the hall, while a low voice could be heard from there.

"Father, are you the most powerful one now with these dark killing flags?"

Chapter 974: The River God and His Sons

The most powerful one in the world?

Ji Hao wanted to laugh.

Among all living beings in the entire Pan Gu world, who dared to say that?

Not to mention those countless years old terrifying beings who lived ever since the prehistorical era and had now withdrawn from society to live in solitude, Priest Dachi and Priest Qing Wei, who were immeasurably powerful, one could just take Yu Yu. Facing Yu Yu, which man would dare to call himself the most powerful one? Not before he survived a sword hack launched by Yu Yu!

Standing by the door of the hall, Ji Hao peeked in.

The hall was clean and empty, and nothing was in it except for a purely black square cauldron in the middle. The cauldron was embossed with countless spirit creature portraits, and had black smoke rising from it. Countless roaring twisted faces emerged from the black smoke one after another. Tens of large black flags floated above the square cauldron, absorbing the black smoke ceaselessly like black holes.

A middle-aged man with a long black robe and a square, slightly wrinkled face was sitting in front of the cauldron. He was especially tall, with broad shoulders. He reached the height of more than three meters when sitting on the ground with crossed legs. If he stood up, he would certainly reach over nine meters.

This man had a dark skin, and he sat on the ground with an unfinished black large flag floating in front of him. Transparent gray killing threads flew in from the outside, seized by the hands of this middle-aged man. Like the most skilled weaver, this man had been weaving those killing threads into this large black flag.

Tens of similar black flags floated in front of the man. Under

these flags were twelve young men, all wearing long robes and sitting in a straight line. They raised their heads from time to time to spurt black fire streams towards those flags.

The one who talked just now was one of these young men. All twelve of them sat on they ground with their backs towards Ji Hao. Therefore, Ji Hao couldn’t see their faces.

The middle-aged man remained silent for a while, as he was swiftly seizing killing threads from the water and weaving the flag. After being weaved into the flag, these gray transparent killing threads instantly turned lusterless and dark, just like a drop of clear water falling into a tank of ink.

A quarter of an hour later, this large black flag was nearly finished. The middle-aged man raised his head, took a slow and cold glance at these young men with his purely dark eyes, then began talking with a frosty tone.

"The most powerful one in the world? Idiots, remember this, the ones who dared to think about that have all died long ago!"

Tiny black spell symbols that belonged to all kinds of spirit creatures had been flying out from his fingers and merging with the large black flag, while this man continued with that cold voice, "You silly boys, you shall remember one thing. If you want to live longer, don’t think that you’re the most powerful one in the world. Don’t you ever think that no one can defeat you."

The large flag was finished already. The middle-aged man opened his mouth and let out a fist-sized, black spirit blood drop, that was wrapped in a dense black fire. The spirit blood drop silently fell on the surface of the flag, which waved like water and quickly absorbed it.

An extended, shrill noise came from inside the large flag, while a frigid power spread out in a swirl. On the ground, large numbers of spell symbols burst with a faint glow and sealed the power inside the hall.

The cold power clashed against those spell symbols on the ground and generated tiny green electric bolts from time to time.

"But father, " murmured the young man who had talked before with an unconvinced tone, "These dark killing flags were made from pre-world killing threads. No treasure in the world can suppress their powers. These days, we've sneakily collected tens of billions of souls. Once all killing flags were completed, we will even be able to destroy the world. You're so powerful, aren't you invincible? Aren't you the most powerful one?"

The middle-aged man raised the flagpole in his hand and smashed heavily on the head of the first young man on his left.

Thud! The young man buried his head in his arms while howling in pain. At the same time, the middle-aged man shouted harshly, "I told you that you're idiots, but you all think that you're so smart! If we could be invincible by simply completing these dark killing flags, back then, your grandfather, the father of your father, wouldn't have his tendons pulled out and skin peeled off, and end up being made into a treasure by someone else!"

The young man who still had his hands on his head yelled out unhappily, "But father, back then, grandpa only completed one dark killing flag, with only ten-million souls in it. We have one hundred and sixty-nine dark killing flags, and tens of billions of souls..."

The middle-aged man hit the young man's head with the flagpole again. Then, he snorted coldly, and prepared to continue teaching his sons, but abruptly raised his head. He glanced outside through the door of the hall with his gleaming dark eyes, then said with a weird tone, "My friend, since you are here already, why do you have to hide yourself? I am White Dragon River God, glad to meet you!"

The large flag held in his hands released a dark stream of light and rolled up. Then, White Dragon River God leaped up from his

seat. Meanwhile, a large hump bulged up from each of his shoulders. Within a blink of an eye, two long necks reached out from his shoulders, connected to two hideous-looking horned dragon-flood heads that had been showing their sharp teeth.

That large toad said that White Dragon River God was a three-headed black flood dragon; it turned out to be true.

The twelve sons of the river God leaped up as well, each casting a loud shout and having a pair of humps rising from their shoulders. Soon, each of them had two flood-dragon heads swaying on their shoulders, one spurting black fire while one spurting black ice mist, seeming to be quite powerful.

Ji Hao knitted his eyebrows. How could the White Dragon River God find a trace of his?

He had the golden bridge and the Pan Xi divine mirror, which were two supreme pieces, but still, White Dragon River God managed to see him. What had this river God been cultivating his dark pair of eyes with?

Coughing slightly, Ji Hao deactivated the golden bridge and the mirror and showed his figure with a faint smile on his face. He politely bowed to White Dragon River God and said, "I am Ji Hao. White Dragon River God, glad to meet you!"

Ji Hao abruptly showed up in the doorway. Watching this happened, White Dragon River God screamed out in a startle, then immediately leaped backward for fifteen meters, almost bumping on that dark square cauldron, despite the calmness he showed just now.

"You, you, you, who the hell are you? You, you, you, how the hell did you get in here? You, you, you wha-what do you want?"

The twelve sons of the river God all screamed out as well while taking a few steps backward simultaneously, staring at Ji Hao as if he was a ghost.

A while later, the young man who was hit by his father for twice shouted, "Father, you’re right! We have to be cautious and careful! You tried this every hour, and we truly got this guy walking out by himself!"

Ji Hao was a bit dumbfounded.

Looking at the river God and his sons, who seemed to be ready to take action, Ji Hao found this quite laughable, and also annoying.

So, the river God didn’t discover any trace of his. Instead, he just habitually said that. Ji Hao was an experienced one, but he was tricked, and walked out himself.

Chapter 975: Dark Killing Flags

Since Ji Hao had walked out already, he didn’t want to hide anymore. He asked straightforwardly, "White Dragon River God, cut the crap. That large magic formation in the square out there, what is that for?"

White Dragon River God paused for a second, then waved the dark flag in his hand and it behind his body. The flag flew to above the black caldron and floated in the water, releasing black mist streams.

Then he rubbed his hands and asked politely and carefully, "May I ask your name?"

Ji Hao clenched his right fingers. The nine suns devil-destroying sword appeared in his hand, with essence sun fire spurting from it. He conveniently wielded the sword, as golden fire spots drifted down from the sword top. Next, spell symbols on the ground exploded one after another along with a puffing noise. A three-hundred-meter long arc-shaped line was left on the ground. Within the line, over ten-thousand spell symbols were cut open and destroyed. Strands of green smoke spurted out from the damaged spell symbols.

With a convenient sword move, without activating any power, the defensive magic formation set in this hall by White Dragon River God was easily broken.

Ji Hao looked at the river God, whose face was suddenly tightened, and said in a deep yet strong voice, "Cut the crap! I want the answer!"

The river God lowered his eyelids and restrained the power vibration released from his body. He put on a harmless face, smiled at Ji Hao and responded, "My friend, don’t be angry, please. My ancestors told us to be nice and kind to people, and to never fight. My friend, don’t attack, what do you want to know? I will tell you

all I know, I promise!"

Raising his eyes, the river God glanced outside, then sighed slightly and continued, "That large magic formation, I don’t know what is it for either. Gong Gong sent over a magic formation blueprint and ordered me to set it up. I’m nothing but a lowly weak aquatic creature, serving Lord Gong Gong with my sons, seeking protection. How can I not listen to his orders?"

Narrowing his eyes, the river God chuckled, "If you want to know what that magic formation is for, my friend, I think you should go ask Lord Gong Gong."

Hearing White Dragon River God, Ji Hao laughed out loud. This river God seemed to be cowardly and extra cautious, but at the same time, he was also cunning and smart. He claimed that he didn’t know the function of the large formation out there, but how did that toad who was captured alive by Ji Hao know it? The toad was nobody but a brother of the close servant girl of the most beloved wife of the river God. Where did he hear things about the large magic formation from?

"You’re not honest, you’re truly not honest." Ji Hao shook his head. He turned around, gripped the sword hilt with both hands and took a deep breath. He then raised the sword, seeming ready to give a hack at that large magic formation in the square.

"My friend, why do you have to push it?" While Ji Hao was gathering his strength, the river God abruptly sighed, swung his arm backward and grabbed down a large black flag that was coiled in a black mist. He flicked the flag towards Ji Hao and said, "Sometimes, giving a choice to the others equals giving one to yourself!"

Following a resonant roar and countless shrill screams, a dense cloud of black mist puffed out from the black flag. Within the black mist, the faces of countless human beings and spirit creatures were visible, while the mist cloud roared towards Ji Hao, along with a

bone-piercing cold power.

Each of the twelve young men grabbed a dark killing flag from above the square cauldron, cast a growl and flicked towards Ji Hao. A great wave of black mist pressed down at Ji Hao, surrounding him like dark clouds.

Ji Hao felt that his skin was pierced by countless needles, and his spirit blood was unsettled. Every single fine hair of his had stood straight up, while stands of warmth flowed out through his pores.

The souls of human beings and spirit creatures in the mist had already been turned into some kind of especially fierce thing. They were screaming, and their screams were like ropes with countless barbs, drilling into Ji Hao's ears, straight into his spiritual space. They seemed to hook his seed of Dao of sun, trying to drag his primordial spirit out of the seed of Dao.

However, Ji Hao's seed of Dao was incredibly strong and sturdy, and was surrounded by purely positive essence sun fire. His primordial spirit was hiding inside the seed of Dao, and didn't need to be afraid of any kind of evil.

If he were an ordinary human being, a Senior Magus or low-grade Qi cultivator, under the effect of the screams made by those fierce evil souls hiding in these dark killing flags, his soul would have involuntarily flown out of his body. But Ji Hao had the seed of Dao of sun. So, he only felt itchy on his whole body, but his primordial spirit stayed as unmoved as a mountain.

The stainless cloak buzzed and burst with a bright light. Nine dazzling suns rose, hovering around Ji Hao while releasing waves of raging fire that spread out. Triggered by the magic Ji Hao learned from Yu Yu, the fire released from the cloak transformed into an enormous lotus with a thousand petals. Ji Hao stood on the seedpod of the lotus, while bright streams of golden light dazzled out from petal, making Ji Hao look like a God descending from the heaven.

The cloud of frigid dark mist rolled above his head, circling around Ji Hao’s body.

However, no matter how hard White Dragon River God and his sons tried to activate those dark killing flags, not a single strand of black mist could ever approach Ji Hao’s body.

Before, Ji Hao’s spirit blood was agitated, and was even about to surge out of his body through his pores. But at the moment, once the stainless cloak was activated, all bad feelings were gone.

Calmly standing in the fire lotus, Ji Hao turned around, grinningly looked at the river God and said, "Like I said, don’t waste my time. Since you don’t want to tell me what it’s for, I think it’s better for me to destroy it."

Smiling coldly, Ji Hao put on a serious face and continued, "White Dragon River God, Gong Gong raised a flood in the human world and killed countless human beings. Our humankind will make him pay for this. You better not go the wrong way. Once you choose the wrong side, you may die because of your mistake!"

Before the river God said anything, Ji Hao continued harshly, "According to the conversation between you and your son, you know things in the prehistorical era, and you can collect killing threads to make dark killing flags. Apparently, you’re a rather powerful one. It’s not easy for you to cultivate yourself to this level, so do not get yourself killed!"

White Dragon River God’s face twitched slightly, then he took a long breath. Next, between his two flood dragon heads, his human head began transforming as well, and soon became another flood dragon head.

While releasing black fire, black ice flakes and black gusts of wind from the three flood dragon heads, the river God shouted at Ji Hao, "It has happened already, so what can we say? We planned this for so many years, and we’ve made so many efforts. How can we give up just like this? If you had stayed outside, that’d be fine.

But since you've come in, don't blame me for having no mercy!"

Roaring brightly, the left and right head of the river God leaned backward, each biting a dark killing flag.

The twelve sons of the river God did the same. They opened their jaws, and each bit two dark flags with their flood dragon heads. Added with the ones held in their hands, thirty-nine black flags were waved quickly towards Ji Hao.

Their middle heads began incanting a spell. Following their voices, the dark mist released from these flags grew denser and denser, darker and darker. Along with shrill, ear-piercing screams, water-tank-sized, ferocious-looking ghost heads gradually emerged in the black mist.

These ghost heads with a cyan-black color were entirely wrapped in ice crystals, and had been drooling towards Ji Hao, greedily and hideously.

As the river God gave a high-pitched scream, thousands of ghost heads widely opened their mouths and pounced on Ji Hao.

Chapter 976: Immeasurable Dark Power

The fastest ghost head was wrapped in a dense black smoke as it rushed to Ji Hao's face.

Ji Hao swung his arm forwards and launched a sword move. Large flakes of golden fire roared out and turned the ghost head into countless black threads. The ghost head screamed shrilly while drawing back. Ji Hao watched it rush back into a black flag, and within a blink of an eye, another ghost head that looked exactly the same as the first one, flew out, rushing towards Ji Hao while screaming.

He wielded his sword and let an arc-shaped sword light flash across the air. Over ten ghost heads were chopped. Countless black shreds of smoke swished backward and flew back into the flag. They twisted and wove together, and turned back into over ten ghost heads, pouncing on Ji Hao once again while raising a dense cloud of black smoke.

"Interesting!" Ji Hao opened his erect eye and released a bright golden light that covered over a thousand ghost heads. Those ghost heads melted like snow statues under the strongest sunlight, and quickly turned into black smoke and drew back. Then, they transformed again to ghost heads and flew out of the large black flag, screaming and tremblingly flying towards him.

Ji Hao snorted coldly. He locked his left fingers together and quickly created tens of Yu Yu divine thunderbolts, which were the fastest and the most violent. Thunderbolts were sharp as a sword, as they hacked down fiercely and cut hundreds of ghost heads into pieces. But within a twinkling of an eye, these shredded ghost heads merged back together in the large black flag and roared out once again.

White Dragon River God's laughter came out from the dense black smoke, "My friend, all souls in these dark killing flags are

indestructible; they're immortal. With your power, you can't do any harm to them, not even with those supreme treasures with pure positive power in your hands."

Pausing for a second, the river God continued, with a trace of greediness in his tone, "How about this, you give me the sword and cloak of yours, then I'll let you leave safely. By giving you a chance to leave, I will take a great risk. After all, Lord Gong Gong might want to know about all these later. What do you think?"

Ji Hao gave an angry smile when he heard this. "You indeed have a wishful thinking!"

The river God remained silent for a while, then asked a bit embarrassedly, "Is wishful thinking a treasure too? What kind of a treasure is it? I know the word 'wishful', but what is 'thinking'? Is it a spiritual treasure?"

Ji Hao opened his mouth, but didn't say anything. He didn't know how to explain it to the river God, neither did he want to waste any time on this.

Were these ghost heads indestructible? That was only because those black flags had been absorbing those black smoke streams transformed from ghost heads that were chopped into pieces by Ji Hao, thus regenerating those ghost heads! Apart from this, those dark killing flags didn't seem to have other special abilities.

Laughing coldly, Ji Hao fixed his eyes on the locations of the river God and his sons, straightened the nine suns devil-destroying sword and launched a violent wave of attacks. He took a big step forward, then swiftly rushed up for tens of steps within a blink of an eye. With Ji Hao's current physical power, even if he couldn't teleport himself, he could cover tens of miles with a single step.

Rushing for tens of steps, Ji Hao surprisingly found that he was still surrounded by dense black smoke. The strong black smoke suffused the entire space, except for the small area with a radius of three-hundred meters that was covered by the golden light

released from the stainless cloak. Above Ji Hao's head, under his feet, in the front, in the back, and both the sides, wherever Ji Hao's eyes could reach, the black smoke had been rolling.

He couldn't see the river God, neither could he see his sons.

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man began talking, "Three-headed black flood dragon, dark killing threads, dark killing flags... These things together remind me of a man. Before the creation of the world, in the era of Chaos, this man was quite famous."

"Eh? Who?" Ji Hao asked subconsciously.

"The old Daoist priest named Three Dark." responded the mysterious man slowly, "He was a three-headed black spirit flood dragon born in the Chaos. He cultivated himself with the dark power and took the shape of a man, living in the era of Chaos. Those pre-world devil Gods called him Old Priest Three Dark."

Sighing for an unknown reason, the mysterious man continued slowly, "Back then, he fought me over a dark soul-breaking spear. I struck him into pieces with a punch. I thought his bloodline had died since then. Never knew he still had descendants who carried that bloodline of his."

"Hehe..." Ji Hao laughed. 'This brutal old man.' thought Ji Hao.

Slightly curving his mouth corners, Ji Hao continued asking, "You...Why did you fight him over that dark soul-breaking spear?"

Remaining silent for a while, the mysterious man murmured, sounding a bit ashamed, "I've been interested in all kinds of weapon, swords, spears, axes. Each time I saw a new weapon, I would want to have it and try it. That spear was ownerless. He fought me over it, and I carelessly punched him too hard."

Hearing this, Ji Hao's heart was even shaking. 'A famous powerful being in the era of Chaos, was punched to death by you, only because you carelessly punched too hard? Are you showing

off?’ "thought Ji Hao.

While Ji Hao talked to the mysterious man, more and more ghost heads approached from all directions, and the cold power released from them grew stronger and stronger.

What surprised Ji Hao was that at first when he wielded his sword and hacked on these ghost heads, he could severely injure them and turn them into a puff of smoke. But now, he could only cut a ghost head into two, like chopping a watermelon.

The two pieces of the ghost head would be connected by countless dark smoke threads, and following an ear piercing scream, would merge back together and recover, seeming perfectly unharmed. The essence sun fire failed to do any harm to those ghost heads.

"White Dragon River God, these dark killing flags of yours are indeed powerful. Aren’t these ghost heads afraid of my essence sun fire." Ji Hao couldn’t help but exclaim out, praising sincerely.

"They do fear that fire." The river God’s voice sounded from far away. Ji Hao felt that the distance between the river God and himself was tens of thousands of miles long. "But do you remember what this place is? This is the deepest area of White Dragon River. The dark power is inexhaustible in this area. These ghost heads were made from tens of billions of souls that I collected in these years. How strong is the essence sun fire under your control?"

"Unless you can evaporate this White Dragon River and all tens of thousands of branches at once with one move, you would never break these dark killing flags of mine." The river God said honestly, "The sword of yours is truly powerful, but what a shame, you don’t deserve a treasure like that. You’re just not good enough."

Sighing slightly, the river god continued blandly, "If this sword is held in the hands of the few powerful beings I know, I wouldn’t dare to go against them at all. I would have kneeled straight on the

ground and begged for mercy. But my friend, you don’t have the qualification to make me kneel and beg for mercy, yet."

Ji Hao straightened his face and glanced around.

This White Dragon River God sounded frank and honest, but it was not hard to tell that he was false-hearted and shameless.

Ji Hao had to figure out a way to free himself from this dark killing flags, then make the river God tell him about the purpose of that large magic formation in the square outside. More importantly, he wanted to force the river God to tell him how many ambushes like this had Gong Gong arranged.

However, before Ji Hao figured a way out, the surrounding black smoke began rolling quickly like a whirlpool.

Trapped in the dark smoke, Ji Hao felt that the world began spinning swiftly, and both the time and space around him had been twisted in a strange way. Ji Hao began spinning weirdly, such that he even felt his brain spinning inside his head.

Ear-piercing ghost screams could be heard. A few ghost heads suddenly pounced on the fire lotuses transformed from the power of the stainless cloak, opened their mouths and inhaled. Shockingly, these ghost heads each inhaled a little bit of the essence sun fire released from the stainless cloak.

Chapter 977: Eat His Own Bitter Fruit

Could this magic formation formed by those dark killing flags under White Dragon River God and his sons' control even twist the time and space, and shake a primordial spirit? Ji Hao was surprised already, and on seeing these ghost heads open their jaws and devour the essence sun fire, Ji Hao was shocked.

But soon, Ji Hao figured it out.

The dark killing thread already had an extremely negative nature. If the essence sun fire could represent the extreme positive power in this world, the dark killing thread would be able to represent the extreme negative power. Extreme negative power and extreme positive power were equally great. The negative power could generate positive power when it reached an extreme level, and vice versa. The mutual transformation could happen between extreme powers, which was the most basic natural law regarding the balance of negative power and positive power, also known as Yin and Yang. White Dragon River God was more powerful than Ji Hao. Therefore, it was totally reasonable for his dark killing flags to absorb the essence sun fire and strengthen themselves!

"Good, good, good!" Ji Hao laughed out loud. Cultivating the enemy's weapons with his essence sun fire? He couldn't do such a silly thing.

Putting back the nine suns devil-destroying sword and dimming down the stainless cloak, Ji Hao let the Pan Xi divine mirror float above his head and release a dark stream of light that wrapped him up. Then, Ji Hao took out the Moho staff that he gained from Moho Family.

Those ghost heads, which rushed up to Ji Hao while streaming, abruptly disappeared once they touched the dim divine light released from the mirror. Next, White Dragon River God and his

sons shouted out in alarm, because countless ghost heads suddenly showed up before their faces with opened mouths and released fierce streams of cold power on them. The river god and his sons didn't manage to react timely, and were struck right on the heads.

Following a few shrill howls, six of the river God's sons, who failed to dodge, had the cold power streams land on their bodies. They were frozen in dark ice, and, their souls visibly transformed into dim streams of light, spurting out from their eyes, nostrils and ears. Those ghost heads happily opened their mouth and seemed to devour these souls.

White Dragon River God crafted these dark killing flags himself, and cultivated these flags with tens of billions of souls collected by him and his sons. But still, they did fear the power of these dark killing flags.

Just like a masterful blacksmith who collected iron ores himself, then finally smithed a good blade, he could still be harmed by this blade without a doubt. No matter how great were the skills of this blacksmith, if he dared to hack himself with a blade made by himself, he would suffer and bleed.

White Dragon River God couldn't even dream that Ji Hao had the Pan Xi divine mirror, such a powerful supreme treasure. With a slight carelessness, six of his sons were injured severely, and even their souls were dragged out of their bodies by these scary ghost heads generated by the dark killing flags.

The river God and his sons screamed and shouted. The river God roared furiously while quickly wielding three dark killing flags and releasing strong streams of black smoke. He tried his best to cast those approaching greedy ghost heads away, carefully protecting the souls of the six sons of his.

"B*stard! You, you, you, how did you hurt my beloved sons?" White Dragon God looked at this six sons who were frozen in dark ice while six hot streams of tears flew out from his eye sockets. He

nearly cried out.

Before Ji Hao said anything, White Dragon River God murmured to himself, "Abba was right! Making dark killing flags are forbidden by nature, and a disaster will descend if one tries to make dark killing flags. My poor boys, I’m sorry!"

The black smoke remained as dense as before, and Ji Hao couldn’t see what happened to the river God’s sons. But he listened carefully and heard the cracking noises that came from frozen fleshy bodies.

In winter, some trees in the forest would freeze. When those frozen trees cracked, the same noise could be heard.

The six sons of the river God were injured by the cold power released by those ghost heads from the killing dark flags. Their Bodies were frozen entirely, and the extremely cold power drilled into their body, creating countless thin cracks on their skins, muscles, bones and internal organs.

White Dragon River God and the rest six sons of his watched the bodies of the six young men slowly cracked in dark ice, turning into minced meat, without having a chance to be cured. This happened within a few breaths.

"My boys!" White Dragon River God screamed hysterically.

The six dark-green light spheres quickly hovered around him. The six young men, whose bodies had already died, wailed and cried in sadness. But without their bodies, their cries sounded like ghost screams, and somehow boosted the coldness in the hall, which was suffused by black smoke.

"White Dragon River God, don’t you still want to tell me the purpose of that great magic formation out there?" Ji Hao wielded the Moho staff.

The water power around his body froze suddenly, stopped moving along with the black smoke released from killing flags.

Deep water flowing noise came from all directions, as the surrounding water power was all brought under control by the Moho staff. Extremely pure streams of water power started gathering towards Moho staff.

Within a second, a water-tank-sized white watery light emerged on the Moho staff.

This white light didn't have a large size, yet it was compressed from all essence water power of the entire White Dragon River. Ji Hao silently incanted a spell and cast a Qing Wei thunder magic taught by Priest Guang Cheng. Next, a series of tiny, thunderbolt-like spell symbols quickly emerged within the watery light sphere. Ji Hao activated his primordial spirit power and transformed it into an enormous watery thunderbolt with Qing Wei thunder magic.

Qing Wei thunder magic wasn't as fast as Yu Yu thunder magic. It needed to gather and transform the power before it burst. However, Qing Wei thunder magic was greatly powerful and effective, and also mysterious. Under the same conditions, Qing Wei thunder magic was always more powerful than Yu Yu thunder magic.

Ji Hao wasn't a master of Qing Wei thunder magic, so he spent three breaths to transform the water power he gathered into a bolt of thunder.

White Dragon River God cried over his sons' dead bodies, which were still frozen in ice. He had lived for countless years, but he only had these twelve direct descendants. With an easy move launched by Ji Hao, he lost six of them. Although he managed to save the souls of his sons, without fleshy bodies, what should his sons do? Should he let his sons cultivate themselves as ghosts? Or anything else?

Three-headed black flood dragons had strong bodies, that could even be mentioned in the same breath with pure-blood dragons.

Additionally, three-headed flood dragons were born with great abilities and powers. Normally, White Dragon River God had been quite proud of his bloodline and strong body. But now, six of his sons had lost their bodies. This was like the end of the world to him. He didn't even know what to do.

Ji Hao didn't give White Dragon River God too much time. Instead, he gently wielded the Moho staff and released a white thunderbolt. The thunderbolt dazzled out and disappeared in the dense black smoke in a moment. The Pan Xi divine mirror protected Ji Hao's body, as Ji Hao locked his fingers together and activated the thunderbolt. Following a muffled boom, all buildings in this underworld city of White Dragon River God were flattened.

Buzz! Wherever the white thunderbolt reached, everything was turned into ash.

Chapter 978: Deep Dark Soul Cauldron

When Ji Hao started the fight against White Dragon River God and his sons, from the barracks in the east, south and west, large groups of aquatic creatures were disturbed. They put on armors and rushed out of their rooms.

These aquatic creatures were all trusted warriors of the river God, and also were the backbone of the water-kind army under his command. Ninety-percent of these aquatic creatures were at the level of Magus Kings, while the rest ten percent were as powerful as Divine Magi.

The hall was wrapped in a dark power, so these aquatic creatures couldn't approach it. Therefore, these well-trained aquatic warriors formed battle formations and surrounded the hall, while tens of powerful ones trod on rapid water currents and flew above the hall. The entire hall was now sealed off.

While these aquatic warriors were preparing for a war, the Qing Wei thunderbolt created by Ji Hao burst.

Waves of dazzling white thunder light shattered the black smoke released from the dark killing flags, spreading out in an unstoppable way. It then landed on the bodies of those aquatic creatures surrounding the hall. In a moment, their armors were crushed by that white, soft yet heavy thunder light, then their internal organs were shattered. They didn't even manage to give a howl before they were turned into nothingness by the thunder light.

Only seven to eight aquatic creatures, who were the most powerful ones, sensed the danger ahead of time, transformed into a stream of water and fled swiftly away, while all the other aquatic creatures were turned into a strand of smoke in the thunder light.

However, on the square before the hall, that large magic formation floating in water was suddenly surrounded by a thick

layer of rapid water currents. Layer and layer, those water currents spun oppositely while vibrating intensely. As waves of thunder power struck down, those water currents quaked, continuously neutralizing the thunder power and protecting the large magic formation. Eventually, the magic formation remained unharmed.

On the flattened hall, Ji Hao looked at the river God and his six sons, who were staggering backward, and chuckled.

By combining the Moho staff and Qing Wei thunder magic, such a great effect was delivered, which was beyond Ji Hao's imagination. With Ji Hao's current power, he could only gather the water power of a hundred-mile radius area at most and compress it into a Qing Wei thunderbolt. The Qing Wei thunderbolt generated by the water power from a hundred-mile radius area would be powerful indeed, but it could flatten a mountain at the most.

Not to mention defeating White Dragon River God and his six sons, or breaking the black smoke released from those dark killing flags, with a Qing Wei thunderbolt like that, Ji Hao wouldn't be able to even kill those high-grade aquatic warriors who all had extremely strong bodies.

Nevertheless, the Moho staff was incomparably powerful. With its power, Ji Hao gathered a giant amount of water power momentarily, then cast Qing Wei thunder magic and transformed it all into a Qing Wei thunderbolt. This Qing Wei thunderbolt was tens of thousands of times more powerful than the one that Ji Hao could generate with his own power.

Ninety-nine percent of those aquatic creatures were struck to death by the thunderbolt, and only around ten survived, managing to escape with severe injuries.

In front of Ji Hao, the White Dragon River God had thin streams of blood flowing out of his mouth corners. The six sons of his had

their horns and scales broken. Their flood dragon heads were vomiting blood as well. What made White Dragon River God's face even more twisted was that the corpses of his six dead sons disappeared without a trace under the effect of the thunder light as well.

"White Dragon River God, you're a well-cultivated three-headed black flood dragon, conferred as a river God by Gong Gong. But you're still a spirit creature." Ji Hao said in a bland tone, "This thunder magic I cast is a positive magic based on the great Dao of nature. The thunderbolts generated by the positive natural power the most are harmful to spirit creatures like you."

White Dragon River God looked at Ji Hao with a sulky face. He opened his mouth, and large streams of blood gushed out. Before, he was forcibly holding it back, but on hearing Ji Hao, his injured internal organs twitched intensely and squeezed the blood out of his body.

"If I were a true God...Thunder magic would be useless to me!" White Dragon River God angrily stared at Ji Hao and growled with a hoarse voice.

"Not necessarily!" said Ji Hao. If White Dragon River God was a true God conferred by the ancient heaven, after accepting this title, his spirit creature power would surely be taken away from him. Naturally, he wouldn't be afraid of the power of thunder. But Qing Wei thunder magic was incredibly powerful and extremely effective, and even true Gods could be killed by a Qing Wei thunderbolt.

However, Ji Hao didn't want to explain all this to the river god. Should he even tell the founding story of his sect?

Holding the Moho staff with his left hand, Ji Hao slightly waved the staff, which quaked the entire White Dragon River along with a buzzing noise. Then, another water-tank-sized white light sphere emerged on the staff head. This sphere of water power was much

more concentrated than the one before. As it emerged, Ji Hao began incanting the spell again while locking his right fingers together. The white light sphere suddenly shrunk, then another Qing Wei thunderbolt was shaped.

"Today, one of us is gonna die!" White Dragon River God viciously stared at Ji Hao and yelled, "You killed my boys, you ruined my future, and you destroyed my hope of achieving the great Dao and an immortal life. Today, I will fight you to death!"

White Dragon River God roared resonantly in a fury. The bodies of his and his six sons began changing quickly, and within a breath, they each expanded to hundreds of meters long. Six enormous black, three-headed flood dragons showed up in front of Ji Hao.

The six flood dragons roared towards the sky, then tens of dark killing flags started vibrating above the large black cauldron behind them. Along with a shrill noise, large clouds of dark smoke were released from those black flags, surging into the black cauldron down below.

The large black cauldron let out a high-pitched noise, while countless ghost and spirit embossments on it began moving like living beings. All of a sudden, a ghost face in the middle opened its jaws wide, and let out a flood-like, black and sparkling stream of smoke. It swept across the bodies of the river God and his sons, pressing towards Ji Hao.

"Deep dark soul cauldron, devour his primordial spirit!" The river God roared furiously. "Destroy his primordial spirit, and I am going to eat his little body as a snack!"

Ji Hao chuckled and pointed the Moho staff out. The human-head-sized thunderbolt was released, flying with a dazzling long tail, and bumped right into that purely dark smoke. Ji Hao changed his hand motion, following which, this crushingly powerful thunderbolt exploded.

The black smoke suddenly spread out. In the explosive moment of the thunderbolt, the black smoke wrapped it up like the long tongue of a frog rolling up a flying bug, swiftly dragging the thunderbolt back into the large black cauldron.

Ji Hao paused for a second, then shouted in surprise, "White Dragon River God, this cauldron is not bad. I didn’t think you have such a great treasure, apart from the pre-world Liu Ren bottle!"

Buzz! The thunderbolt blast in the square cauldron and sent out huge clouds of black smoke. Ghost screams came out along with the smoke, bringing Ji Hao a piercing earache. Thin electric bolts dazzled and sizzled in the opening of the cauldron, and it buzzed for a long while, after which, the thunderbolt Ji Hao released was swallowed up by the cauldron.

"Die!" The river God and his six sons roared out simultaneously. They wielded the dark killing flags and raised large waves of black smoke. Then, along with fierce gusts of wind, these six enormous flood dragons pounced on Ji Hao.

Water currents were agitated while the river God flashed to before Ji Hao’s face and slapped his sharp claw down towards his head.

Chapter 979: Here Comes Yemo Tian

In the heaven, in a magnificent hall with streams of mist coiling around, Gong Gong held his hands behind his body, with his eyes narrowed. He was seriously looking at a hundreds of miles square sandbox in from of him. The sandbox was glowing brightly, as smooth as jade. Colorful light streams had condensed into a detailed topographic map of Midland on it, and every detail on the map was exactly the same as the real thing.

The sandbox was a supreme treasure generated by the great Dao of nature, along with the heaven itself, called Heaven and Earth sandbox. The sandbox included Midland and all four wastelands, and any slight geographic change that happened in Midland or any of the four wastelands would immediately show up on his sandbox. With the Heaven and Earth sandbox, one could clearly see every corner of Midland and the four wastelands.

At the moment, the changes caused by those water-sealing magic formations were clearly visible. Countless meters-wide watery clouds floated above the sandbox, with raindrop-like shadows falling from them. Below those watery clouds were dams built with breathing earth. In each dam, the water level had been rising higher and higher, and so did the body of the dam.

Under the magical power of breathing earth, the endless rain and the sky-devouring flood had both become ineffective.

"Si Xi, Marquis Chong Si Xi, good, I underestimated you." Gong Gong’s body flashed across the air, transformed into a black stream of light and hovered around the sandbox for a while. He carefully observed those water-sealing magic formations, then transformed back into a human shape, and sighed deeply.

"Shall I make a move to kill Si Xi?" River Earl stood by the door of the hall and asked in a vicious tone.

Remaining silent for a while, Gong Gong shook his hand, sighed

and said, "No, No, you can’t go. Si Xi is not that easy to kill. Killing him requires the right person and the right time. If we are going to kill him, we have to be able to get the most out of his death."

River Earl didn’t say anything, but his eyes sparkled with a black light, as if he were thinking about when to kill Si Xi and how Gong Gong and his people could get the most out of Si Xi’s death.

Suddenly, the earthworm-like White Dragon River quaked slightly on the map. Bright watery light spread out from the river, while a thin white beam of light rose into the sky from the central area of the river, along with a swishing noise.

"Eh? What is White Dragon River God doing? He’s careful and cautious, always paying attention to his own moral upliftment without the thought of others, and he keeps saying ‘safety is a blessing’. For his cautiousness and carefulness, I conferred him as White Dragon River God, allowing him to run that place for so many years."

Gong Gong looked at the white beam of light and growled angrily, "I’ve already told him and the others that the great magic formation they’re responsible for is the most important thing. Those badly organized water-king warriors are taking the advantage of this flood, causing troubles to attract the attention of human beings...But they can’t move! They can’t move!"

River God flashed across the air and teleported himself to the sandbox. He locked his fingers together and pointed at the sandbox. Images shown by the sandbox changed quickly as White Dragon area expanded, and soon occupied the entire sandbox. Then, the central area of the river zoomed larger, occupying half of the sandbox.

Above the giant whirlpool, the eighteen floating mountains showed no change at all. River Earl glanced at Gong Gong in confusion.

"The great magic formation is attacked." said Gong Gong with a

dark face, "I've already merged the core magic talismans of those great magic formations with this Heaven and Earth sandbox. If anything abnormal happens to any of those great formations, this sandbox will immediately show."

"The great magic formation under the central whirlpool of White Dragon River is attacked by an outer force, and the force is extremely strong!" Gong Gong looked at the hundreds of meters long white light beam dazzling out from the whirlpool, and continued gloomily, "What is White Dragon River God doing? Did his warriors disobey the order and cause a human attack?"

River Earl pointed at the eighteen floating mountains and said, "But nothing seems to happen on these floating mountains."

Gong Gong narrowed his eyes and his face turned even darker, "That means someone has sneaked into the central whirlpool of White Dragon River, right? Who can it be? Or, someone..."

A cold voice came from the outside, "Or, your people are unreliable and spilled the beans? Gong Gong, you have to understand. If our plan, that has cost us so much money and so many efforts, is ruined because of the mistake you and your people make, you will suffer badly!"

Dishi Cha walked into the hall with a cold face, slowly, unhurriedly, with the particular style of Yu Clan nobles.

Gong Gong turned around. His dark sulky face abruptly turned bright and warm. As a nice smile emerging on that face, he nodded at Dishi Cha and said, "Don't worry, the great magic formations is connected with the entire White Dragon River. Unless someone can destroy the entire White Dragon River area, that is hundreds of millions of miles in radius, that great formation can never be destroyed. Nothing unwanted will happen."

Gong Gong turned his eyes away from Dishi Sha and fixed on Yemo Tian, who was incredibly handsome, standing behind Dishi Cha.

"May I ask, who this is?"

Yemo Tian had a breathtakingly handsome face. His long black, shining hair hung loosely on his back like a waterfall. The tip of his hair nearly touched the ground. What surprised Gong Gong even more was that Yemo Tian's pair of eyes seemed to have some terrifying kind of evil power. The pair of pupils of his had been spinning slowly, like two bottomless black holes. Gong Gong did nothing more than make a short eye contact with him, but he already felt like being devoured, and that feeling was not good.

Subconsciously turning his eyes away, Gong Gong smilingly looked at Dishi Cha.

"I am Yemo Tian, the current Emperor in power of Dark Sun. Yemo Luoye, that bloody woman, is my elder sister." Yemo Shan introduced himself with a careless tone.

He looked at Gong Gong from head to toe and released his strong spirit power, circling around Gong Gong over and over again. Such an impolite move embarrassed Gong Gong quite badly. With a long face, Gong Gong looked at Dishi Cha, silently waiting for his explanation.

"Are you Gong Gong? For this generation?" Yemo Tian laughed, "To be honest, although I grew up in this damned world, this is the first time for me to see a local God in Pan Gu world. Interesting, very interesting. If I can cut you open..."

A stream of black mist rose from Gong Gong's head, with crushing black waves roaring in it. A dreadful pressure immediately filled the entire hall like a tsunami.

Yemo Tian was shocked by the great pressure released by Gong Gong, that his face turned pale, while he shut his mouth and swallowed the other half of his speech back up.

"Enough!" Dishi Cha growled deeply, "Gong Gong, at this point, you are out of choices already. Except for working with me

wholeheartedly, you have no chance to regret. Therefore, I brought Lord Yemo Tian over to let you know..."

Dishi Cha narrowed his eyes, lowered his voice and continued, "To let you know that the powerful man behind me is Lord Yemo Tian's father. This plan of ours is designed for Lord Yemo Tian. The ultimate purpose of this plan is allowing him to control all resources of Pan Gu world and the surrounding three-thousand worlds."

Gong Gong and River God both stared at Yemo Tian in shock.

Yemo Tian smiled faintly and carelessly, then conveniently pointed at the white light on the sandbox and said, "Is something wrong? I'd love to go watch a show."

Chapter 980: The Real Purpose

Yemo Tian put on a dragon-scale tight armor, which was often used by Northern Wasteland clan. He wore a dragon-skin helmet, with a long blood-red tassels covered in glowing spell symbols hanging down from the top, covering the closed erect eye between his eyebrows. Then, he picked up an ancient styled long spear made from dragon bones, and rushed out of the heaven while laughing out wildly.

The few guards of Yemo Tian put on human armors as well, chucklingly and carelessly following behind Yemo Tian, and left as well.

Gong Gong carefully selected a troop of Wuzhi Qi's descendants. Nearly ten-thousand water apes were armed to the teeth, each holding a large stick, and followed behind Yemo Tian while showing their teeth. They escorted him out of the heaven, heading towards White Dragon River.

Yemo Tian insisted on going to White Dragon River to see what was happening. Dishi Tian failed to dissuade him, while Gong Gong was still confused. Gong Gong didn't try to stop Yemo Tian. On the contrary, he arranged an escorting troop for Yemo Tian and let him head to White Dragon River to do whatever he wanted.

The rolling cloud outside the gate of the heaven gradually stopped moving. All of a sudden, Gong Gong turned around and reached his hand towards Dishi Cha's chest.

Dishi Cha transformed into a misty blood-red shadow, flashed backward across the air and left hazy shreds of afterimage behind. Next, Dishi Cha reappeared hundreds of meters away, unhappily stared at Gong Gong and said, "If you have something to say, just say it. Do not get physical!"

Gong Gong's fingers trembled slightly, then he forcibly restrained his complicated emotion, narrowed his eyes, and stared

at Dishi Cha for a long while. Finally, he gnashed his teeth and asked, "What you said just now, what does it mean?"

Dishi Cha clearly knew what Gong Gong was going to ask, but because of the symbolic pride and hypocrisy of Yu Clan nobles, he spread his arms and smilingly threw the question back, "My old friend, what do you mean by that? Is there any question? Haven't we been working perfectly together?"

Gong Gong shouted with his teeth gnashed, "Our Plan!"

"Ah..." Dishi Cha nodded as if he was suddenly enlightened, then grinningly said, "Is there any problem with our plan? Hasn't our plan been running well? See, the twelve new worlds are connected, and the plan is irreversible. Neither those disgusting useless clansmen of mine nor those human leaders that you want to replace, can stop us now."

Taking a deep breath, Dishi Cha raised his arms high, looked at the sky, and laughed passionately and dramatically, "Ah, my great, supreme Blood Moon, old friend, we spent hundreds of years to make this great plan. Now, the beautiful flowers have bloomed on it, and soon, we can expect tasty fruits!"

Gong Gong gave a deep yet resonant growl, then stomped his foot heavily against the ground.

At the moment, the entire heaven was under Gong Gong's control. Once he was angry, all defensive magic formations in the heaven were activated. Countless bolts of thunder flashed across the sky, followed by rumbling thunders. The ground was shaking intensely, while numerous enormous totem pillars, decorated with embossments of thunder, wind and cloud, began glowing dazzlingly one after another.

A terrifying pressure landed on Dishi Cha. River Earl, Wuzhi Qi, Kun Peng and the other senior ministers under Gong Gong's command walked over together, staring at Dishi Cha fiercely. They seemed ready to rush straight up and attack him if he said

anything unpleasant to hear.

Dishi Cha brought quite a lot trusted people to the heaven. Seeing Gong Gong show an intent to turn against Dishi Cha, these Yu Clan nobles in luxurious armors all pulled out their weapons. Tsunami-like power vibrations were released from their bodies, judging from which, these Yu Clan warriors were from different branches of Yu Clan.

Seeing these non-humankind warriors dare even to show their weapons, countless surrounding water-kind elite warriors rushed up. Elite warriors from the most powerful ten Northern Wasteland clans silently formed attack formations. Some powerful Maguspriests flew up into the sky, and easily created a massive wave of dark clouds with rumbling thunders.

"Ah, ah, my friend, don’t be angry." Dishi Cha finally took back that fake smile, looked at Gong Gong seriously and said with a deep voice, "Alright, I get your point. What I can tell you is that, as I said before, our plan is designed for Lord Yemo Tian. Everything is for Lord Yemo Tian!"

Gong Gong even had smoke puffing out from his eyes because of the rage. He gave a thunder-like roar, pointed at Dishi Cha, seeming to almost curse out loud. But Dishi Cha hurriedly gave a big grin and began explaining.

"No, no, it’s not what you think, my dear old friend, dear Water God. I am not going to violate our contract. All human beings in Pan Gu world will worship you and become your devoutest believers. The power of faith from them will make you the owner of Pan Gu world! As we agreed, their souls will belong to you."

"But their bodies will belong to Lord Yemo Tian. They will become Lord Yemo Tian’s slaves, and Lord Yemo Tian will be their only owner. They will grow food, pasture livestock, log thees, build cities, exploit mines, smelt metals, smith weapons and armors...They will even arm themselves and become Lord Yemo

Tian’s private slave warriors."

"This is not conflicting with what we’ve agreed, is it? The bodies belong to me while the souls belong to you! As for the resources of Pan Gu world, according to our agreement, all resources in this world surely should belong to me, as my reward, for helping you occupy the world. Isn’t that right?

Gong Gong remained silent for a while, then gnashed his teeth, pointed at the heaven gate and said, "So, Yemo Tian, such a young man, he...!"

Dishi Cha smiled and said blandly, "Indeed, Lord Yemo Tian is at a young age. But, his father is an extremely noble and powerful man. I chose to follow that man’s lead, so I earned my current position. Because of my background, I was chosen by that nobleman to be the executor of this top-secret great plan."

While shrugging, Dishi Cha continued in that bland tone, "My old friend, I am only an executor. The final harvest will go to Lord Yemo Tian!"

Throwing a complicated glance at Gong Gong, Dishi Cha sneered and said, "Otherwise, as a man given birth by the second wife of a member of Di Family, which was a branch of Dishi Family, without any supporter nor anyone to rely on, how could I ever pass that scary life and death trial? Why could I become a supervisor, and successfully return to Pan Gu world?"

"Without the power of that great man, do you think I could stay safe and alive after I made so many disturbances?"

Dishi Cha pointed at the sky and carried on seriously, "The power and strength of that great man are beyond your imagination! Gong Gong, one day, you might be able to leave Pan Gu world and travel around the universe. At that point, you will hear the noble name of that great man."

Remaining silent for a while, Gong Gong said with a cold voice,

"Yemo Tian is his...?"

Dishi Cha laughed, in a weird, strange way.

Laughing for a while, he mildly responded, "Ah, Lord Yemo Tian is that great man's most beloved son. Of course, Lord Yemo Tian, Yemo Shanye and Yemo Luoye, the emperor in power of Dark Sun, are given birth by the same mother. But for some reason, that you can easily guess, Lord Yemo Tian and the two girls don't have the same father!"

Gong Gong's face turned so dark. What a complicated relationship!

And he, was actually going to work for Yemo Tian, who had such a such a complicated family background!

Chapter 981: Take the Cauldron And the Bottle

Under the giant whirlpool of White Dragon River, White Dragon River God roared resonantly while slapping Ji Hao's head with his sharp claw at lightning speed.

Ji Hao growled brightly as well. He put down the Moho staff and punched White Dragon River God's claw with both fists.

Following a thunderous boom, the heavy and sticky water around both of them was vibrated away, forming a three-thousand meters hemisphere space around them. Ji Hao's entire body was shaking, as a bone creaking noise came from both his arms while two streams of hot steam puffed out from his nostrils. Abruptly, strong streams of power surged out of his body.

Buzz! This strange and strong power made Ji Hao grow taller by over three feet. Meanwhile, his muscles swelled, and faintly golden meridians beat intensely under his smooth skin. He saw twisted dark blood veins moving under the skin even on his ten fingers.

The mysterious man covered the truth with the round platform that he had been sitting on. Therefore, at the moment, Ji Hao couldn't see the gray-colored Chaos blood surging out from his Chaos heart. That blood flushed into every corner of his body, bones, muscles. The scorching hot golden power inside Ji Hao's body merged the Chaos blood just like sugar melting in warm water, then perfectly combined it with Ji Hao's body.

At this very moment, around ten percent of the power that Ji Hao attained through years of severe cultivation disappeared and completely merged with his body. Nourished by this great power and stimulated by the Chaos spirit blood, Ji Hao's bones and internal organs had been through some magical transformation.

An unprecedentedly great physical strength was generated from

Ji Hao's body. Every single pore of his suddenly opened, letting streams of hot steam swish out. Under its effect, the air around him began shaking like reflections in the water, making Ji Hao look like a phantom.

"You have finally stepped on the purest Dao of strength!"

The mysterious man's voice came from Ji Hao's spiritual space, yet Ji Hao didn't hear it.

"Pure strength, pure and clean, great enough to destroy the world. This is the simplest, supreme great Dao. Extremely negative, extremely positive, thunder, lightning, magic curses, time, space, facing extreme, pure strength, those are all bullsh*t!"

Crack! White Dragon River God let out a shrill howl in pain.

Ji Hao gripped his claw with ten fingers. Just now, when his claw bumped against Ji Hao's fists, the river God found that his physical strength was slightly better than Ji Hao. After all, he had been cultivating himself severely for so many years. Therefore, he confidently attempted to crush Ji Hao's fists with this strike.

However, all of a sudden, Ji Hao grew taller by around three-foot, then let out burning hot steam from his entire body. After that, in a great shock, the river God found that in the past moment, Ji Hao's physical strength improved by more than ten times, and had completely surpassed the river God himself.

How could this even happen?

The river God was a three-headed black flood dragon, a magical creature from the dragonkind. He was also a direct descendant of the famous prehistorical old priest Three Dark. In terms of physical strength, although he was not as good as those pure-blood ancient divine dragons, not even current ordinary dragons could compare with him!

Ji Hao was only a human being. Even if he were a peak-level Divine Magus, even if he were a Supreme Magus, he shouldn't be

able to rival White Dragon River God in terms of physical strength! This was a difference between races; not even the strongest human being could be as strong as a dragon!

But obviously, Ji Hao made all the above untrue.

Ji Hao locked the river god's claw with his ten fingers. The suddenly emerged great power in his body made him feel so hot and irritated that somehow, he now believed that he could even punch the sky broken and stomp the earth apart.

With that mysterious power, he could do anything!

The crushingly great power was still releasing from his body without an end. Stimulated by that streaming hot power that had been violently surging inside his body, Ji Hao roared out. Following a series of bone cracking noise, the river God's claw crumbled in Ji Hao's hands. The claw was as thick as Ji Hao's leg, and was known as the sharpest, hardest dragon claw in the world. However, Ji Hao crumbled it bare-handedly. The claw exploded thunderously.

Flood dragon blood splashed to everywhere, spraying on Ji Hao's head and face, with a weird bloody aroma.

Ji Hao laughed out loud, opened his mouth and inhaled, swallowing all the blood spurting out from the river God's claw.

He then held the forearm of the river God, who was howling in pain, then swung upwards and lifted him up. The river God was hundreds of meters long, and was incredibly powerful. Yet, he was raised by Ji Hao and thrown to his six sons behind like a strand of straw.

This may sound like a lot of events, but in fact, all of the above happened just in a single second.

The six sons of the river God didn't manage to dodge as the enormous body of their father smashed straight on their heads.

Ji Hao's overwhelming power was brought to the river God's

sons by the river God himself. The six younger three-headed black flood dragons screamed in pain as their scales were crushed. Countless of their bones broke along with loud cracking noise, and even their internal organs were injured by that great power.

The six poor young flood dragons were sent flying backward while vomiting blood. They thudded on the ground, twitching intensely. But no matter how hard they struggled, none of them managed to stand back up.

"My sons!" The river God shouted heartbreakingly.

"Speak, what is that large magic formation for?" Ji Hao ignored his scream. Instead, he picked the river God up from the ground and madly smashed at that large magic formation.

Countless water currents were stirred up while fish-scale shaped water currents around the great formation quaked intensively, at a scarily high frequency. The river God's scales were cut into pieces by those vibrating sharp water currents. His internal organs were injured seriously by Ji Hao's violent moves, that made him vomit blood, as almost everything inside his body was broken.

Ji Hao smashed the river God at the large formation around ten times, after which, internal organ pieces spurted out from his mouth.

Conveniently, Ji Hao threw the river God to the ground and grabbed over the three dark killing flags held in his mouths.

"No, no, I'm not defeated. My dark killing flags are not complete yet. If I succeed, if I complete all one hundred and sixty-nine dark killing flags, I would..." The river god barfed. Ji Hao didn't want to listen to his howls, so he stomped on his head and knocked him out.

"Your dark killing flags? A creature like you, if those powerful treasures do fall into your hands, you can only bring disasters to the world, and harm countless living beings with them!" Ji Hao

grabbed all dark killing flags held in the mouths of the other six three-headed flood dragons, then pressed his palm on the large black cauldron and destroyed the soul seal left in the cauldron by the river God in the most violent way. Then, he turned the cauldron into his own treasure.

"These treasures are destined to be mine, my friends. Only in my hands can they do good to all living beings in the world! Quote from Priest Hua and Priest Mu."

Ji Hao chuckled while packing all these treasures, then leaped up and reached to the Liu Ren bottle, carefully holding it with both hands.

Same as before, he burned out the soul seal in the bottle with the essence sun fire, then left a soul seal of his own. He thus built a basic connection between the bottle and himself.

After finishing all this, a loud water clattering noise came from above his head. Following that, around ten large-shaped aquatic warriors, who managed to escape from the Qing Wei thunderbolt just now, split the water, diving down at Ji Hao in a formidable way, with countless aquatic warriors following behind them.

Chapter 982: Take the Souls

Rapidly flowing water streams transformed into countless ferocious-looking water-kind beast heads, roaring and diving down. Tens of enormous aquatic beasts roared furiously, and following behind them were countless oddly-shaped, smaller aquatic creatures. They raised their bows and released waves of arrows, screaming down while leaving white traces in the water.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. He stepped backward quickly, grabbed White Dragon River God up from the ground, then lifted him to shield himself under his enormous body.

"River God!"

Those aquatic warriors screamed simultaneously, while those lifelike beast heads, which were transformed from water streams under the effect of some kind of magic, bumped fiercely into the river god's body, sending up his broken scales drifting everywhere. Next, countless arrows pierced into his body.

White Dragon River God had an especially strong body, and these arrows shouldn't be able to harm even a hair of his. However, he was violently beaten up by Ji Hao earlier, and all his scales had been broken already. Countless thin cracks had appeared on his strong, thick dragon skin. Through these thin cracks, many arrows drilled into his body and exploded almost simultaneously, under the effects of all kinds of powerful explosive spell symbols.

Thousands of, different-sized fiery light streams burst from White Dragon River God's body. All those arrows were produced by the non-humankind and were of high quality; any of them could easily flatten a hill.

Thousands of arrows like that exploded inside the river God's body together. The river God was indeed strong, but his internal organs were injured by Ji Hao already, and those injured internal organs were now being vibrated by the explosions of those arrows.

It all caused the river God an unbreakable pain, that made him scream.

"You idiots! Are you trying to kill me and take my piston?!" White Dragon River God even had tears gushing out of his eye sockets because of the anger. He raised the lightest injured head of his with difficulty and growled hoarsely.

"Who ordered to launch the arrows?! I'm going to cook him and eat him as a snack! Ah! Who was it?!" The river God roared so loudly that it made tears waggle in his eyes. Hearing his raging roars, those smaller shaped aquatic creatures all shouted out while hurriedly throwing their bows away.

Hundreds of thousands of bows with faintly glowing spell symbols were thrown away by these aquatic creatures as far away as they could. Surrounding these aquatic treasure, dark killing threads silently floated in the water. Those bows bumped on those dark killing threads and generated a series of puffing noise while these high-quality, exquisitely crafted weapons, which were purchased by the river God with a good sum of money, were cut into pieces.

A stream of blood spurted out from the river God's mouth, mixed with internal organ pieces. The river God cried in an indescribable heart-rending tone, "My ancestors' souls! What did I do? These idiots, are my warriors all idiots like these?!"

Ji Hao patted on a lowered head of the river God and comforted him while trying pretty hard to not laugh out, "Cheer up! If you hadn't threatened to eat them, they wouldn't throw those bows away...I can see that as the God of the river, your words mean a lot to them!"

The river God vomited blood once again in anger. He turned around his only moveable head, stared at Ji Hao and screamed, "Kid, you..."

Before he could finish his speech, Ji Hao grabbed his neck and

smashed him onto that large magic formation, which was protected by countless layers of fish-scale shaped, rapid water streams, once again. Along with a shrill friction noise, pieces of skin were sliced off from the river God's body. Suffering that piercing pain, he couldn't even breathe, and soon, the river God fell unconscious.

"When you're like a piece of meat on my chopping board, you should be more polite to me." Ji Hao threw the river God, who was unconscious, on the ground, then raised his head, grinned to those dumbfounded aquatic creatures and said, "Obviously, your river God didn't have the experience of being captured!"

"Ri-river God, he, he is...so powerful...How, how can he ever be, be captured?!" A crab warrior straightened his stick-like pair of eyes, looked at Ji Hao and stuttered, "You...How dare you come, me-mess around in our, our White Dragon River...Let, let our river God go, now, now..."

A taller aquatic warrior, whose skin was thickly covered with silver scales, kicked the large crab away. He looked at Ji Hao and shouted loudly, "Let our River God go, then we can let you die without too much pain!"

Ji Hao looked at that silver scale aquatic warrior, laughed out wildly and then pointed his finger forward. The Liu Ren bottle flew out, and a stream of dark power surged out from its opening. Then, countless mature and immature dark killing threads swished over and flew into the bottle.

Before those dark killing threads moved, those smaller shaped aquatic warriors lined orderly between those killing threads, carefully keeping themselves away from those dangerous threads. But as Ji Hao activated the bottle, countless extremely sharp and cold killing threads screamed across those aquatic warriors. Immediately, waves of screams were generated. Body pieces were sent up along with blood splashing everywhere, and dyed the entire river red.

Even the tens of enormous aquatic warriors didn't manage to react timely, and over twenty of them had their bodies swept across by dark killing threads. Their bodies were extra huge, tens of times larger than those smaller shaped ones. Therefore, the number of killing threads that sliced across their bodies was large. Before these large shaped aquatic warriors could activate their defensive treasures, their bodies were cut into pieces, along with their own scream.

Within a couple of breaths, all surrounding dark killing threads were sucked into the bottle, and most of the hundreds of thousands of aquatic warriors, who came to save the river God, were killed. Only less than five-thousand of them managed to stand on the ground unharmed.

These survived aquatic warriors trembled in fear, looking at Ji Hao as if he were a ghost.

A high-pitched roar burst all of a sudden, followed by which, except for those enormous ones who had been leading the troops, all the other aquatic warriors transformed back into their original shapes simultaneously. The fishes, shrimps, crabs, lobsters, fled at their highest speed in all directions.

Ji Hao sneered, then took out the dark soul cauldron.

Not to mention the fact that White Dragon River God colluded with the non-humankind, he worked for Gong Gong and attempted to harm the humankind. This was a capital crime. These aquatic creatures followed the river God's lead, and thus could not be spared either. If Ji Hao let them live, how many more human beings would be harmed by them?

A dense black stream of mist was released from the cauldron. Following shrill screams, countless twisted faces emerged in the black mist, greedily dashing towards those fleeing aquatic creatures.

Without being able to give a moan, the remaining tens of

enormous creatures were rolled into the black mist. Countless streams of black mist drilled into their ears, eyes, nostrils, and mouth, as countless fierce evil ghosts crazily tore and devoured their souls. These strong aquatic creatures never cultivated their souls. Therefore, they now had no power of resistance, and could only watch themselves being torn into pieces by those evil ghosts.

The thousands of smaller shaped aquatic creatures didn't run too far before they were caught up by that dark mist. The dark mist rolled over their bodies and pulled their souls out. The cauldron then devoured all their souls and spirit blood.

With the power of the two supreme treasures, Ji Hao wiped out a water-kind army almost instantaneously. Next, Ji Hao patted on the cauldron and released a black mist stream, bringing the river God and his six sons back into the cauldron. The river God and his six sons sank to the deepest area of the cauldron, being suppressed by its power. After all this, Ji Hao turned around and knitted his eyebrows, looking at that large magic formation which was protected by those fish-scale-shaped, rapidly flowing water streams.

Chapter 983: Kill Si Wen Ming

When Ji Hao beat the river God, the surface of the river quaked intensely. The whole thing raised enormous waves which crazily slapped on the mountains on both sides of the river, causing an earth-splitting, rumbling noise.

Si Wen Ming and the others, who had been resting in the woods by the river, leaped straight up and rushed to the river, looking at the roaring river with a great shock. "What happened?" Si Wen Ming shouted.

The few human warriors who stayed on a mountaintop and had been keeping an eye on the river shook their heads. They saw nothing happen on the eighteen floating mountains. Aquatic warriors on those floating mountains were also startled by the suddenly raised waves. Many of them were woken up from their dreams, and now stood on mountaintops, pointing at the roaring river while shouting and yelling.

Suddenly, followed by a thunderous bang, a, hundreds of meter tall water column rose from the middle of the giant whirlpool and bumped on a floating mountain. It shook the mountain intensely and made all aquatic warriors on it fall on the ground.

A few oddly shaped, ferociously-looking enormous aquatic creatures trod on watery clouds and rose into the air while pointing at the river surface and shouting loudly. They were using the language of spirit water-kind creatures, shouting deeply and quickly. Therefore, none of those human beings understood them.

A short while later, an especially clear stream of watery light flashed across the river surface. Everyone on the scene had a feeling that the stream of watery light was the essence of the entire White Dragon River, which extended for tens of millions of miles long. The essence had been drawn into the giant whirlpool, and now, the entire river seemed to be powerless and dull.

Another deep and thunderous boom sounded, but this time, nothing happened on the river surface.

Si Wen Ming and the others surely didn't know that the second Qing Wei thunderbolt created by Ji Hao was swallowed up by the dark soul cauldron. The thunderbolt exploded, but failed to do any harm to the cauldron, neither did the power of the thunderbolt come up to the river surface like the last time.

"What on earth is happening? Is Ji Hao in danger?" Si Wen Ming took a deep breath. Meanwhile, a strong and rumbling noise came from inside his body, that sounded like two giant mountains collapsing into each other. Following that noise, Si Wen Ming grew taller and taller. Within a blink of an eye, he reached to the height of fifteen meters.

Swinging his arm backward, Si Wen Ming pulled out his long sword from the leather sheath, then pierced the sword into the mountaintop that he stood on. The mountain quaked slightly, as the earth power from the surrounding area condensed into visible, dragon-like yellow streams, roaring into Si Wen Ming's sword.

Within three to five breaths, the ordinary-looking sword in Si Wen Ming's hand absorbed an immeasurably great amount of earth power. The pure and heavy earth power wrapped the sword up and turned it into a six meters long, door-sized and crystal-like transparent, yellow sword.

Fist-sized divine earth spell symbols sparkled faintly inside the sword. Si Wen Ming gently wielded the sword, and following his move, the surrounding earth vibrated slightly. Hundreds of mountains and hills in the surrounding seemed to come alive. That rumbling noises came out from these mountains without an end, as if an asleep giant had woken up, and something unexpected was going to happen at any time.

Si Wen Ming tore apart his long flax shirt, bared his chest and approached the giant whirlpool with big steps.

"Water-kind spirit creatures, you were gifted by nature, attained intelligence, and learned to cultivate yourselves, grow powers and were allowed to live long lives. You will not be cooked as food. You are spared from the pain that ordinary aquatic creatures might suffer, which is not easy. Our human beings respect nature, and we never offended your kind. We grow food from the earth, while you live a life in rivers and oceans."

While walking with big steps, Si Wen Ming said loudly and brightly.

His voice was indescribably vibrant, and all surrounding mountains quaked slightly along with his voice, causing a rumbling noise that chimed with his voice. Wherever Si Wen Ming reached, all mountains in surrounding would burst with a dazzling yellow light, while streams of bright yellow light flashed across the air, flowing into his body.

"But, you are born with a lowly nature. Our humankind is suffering a disaster, but you seized it as an opportunity. You raised waves, added fuel to the fire, while attempting to push our humankind into a hopeless situation...You are unforgivable, and you shall be executed!"

Si Wen Ming was worrying about Ji Hao's safely. After all, Ji Hao was still in the river. He growled angrily, then without hearing a word said by those aquatic warriors, raised the sword and hacked down fiercely.

A strong stream of yellow mist rose from his head, transformed into a large, dense yellow cloud that covered his entire body. Within the yellow cloud, water-tank-sized inner spirit stars were faintly visible, seeming to be extra heavy. Among those inner spirit stars, a few were entirely purple. Somehow, the purple glow emitted from these few stars even made the other inner spirit stars mysterious and noble.

Yao Meng and the other few earls popped out their eyes in shock,

looking at the few purple inner spirit stars, which seemed to be so mysterious and majestic. Abruptly, a young, straightforward earl shouted with a deep voice, "That's Zi..."

"Zi your ass! Shut it!" Yao Meng hurriedly covered that young earl's mouth, then lowered his voice and laughed, "Good, good, good, if it's Minister Si Wen Ming, we can all happily accept it. Hehe, all those people have been fighting for so many years and caused so many troubles. At last..."

The group of earls smilingly glanced at each other and nodded.

Si Wen Ming had a good relationship with Ji Hao. This time, Yao Meng and the other young earls fought side by side with Ji Hao against the flood and those water-kind armies. By now, they were all like brothers to each other. Therefore, without a doubt, all these young earls would be on Si Wen Ming's side in the future.

To earls like Yao Meng, who earned everything with their strengths and didn't have strong families or clans to support them, becoming Si Wen Ming's friends at this time equaled a skyrocketing rise.

The group of young earls shouted out loud. Without summoning their troops, they each cast their magic, expanded their bodies as much as they could bear, and released all their inner spirit stars. They trod on flame flakes, thunderbolts, fierce gales or yellow mist of the earth power, approaching the eighteen floating mountains.

"Enemies! Kill them!"

On a floating mountain, a giant aquatic warrior pointed at Si Wen Ming and shouted.

They didn't know Si Wen Ming, but the power vibration came from Si Wen Ming was way too terrifying. It gave a great mental pressure to all aquatic warriors on these floating mountains. Those unsettling smaller shaped aquatic warriors raised their bows and released a wave of arrows towards Si Wen Ming while cursing

loudly.

"Break!" Si Wen Ming gave a faint smile while pressing his left hand in the air. Millions of metal arrows stopped simultaneously, floating in the sky.

The nature of his power was earthly. The magnetic force generated from the earth power allowed him to control all metals in the world. Therefore, all kinds of armors and weapons were just like toys to Si Wen Ming.

These arrows were highly lethal to ordinary people, but to Si Wen Ming, these were nothing but millions of metal toy arrows.

He clenched his fingers in the air, and started a long and loud series of popping noise. Along with that noise, countless arrows were twisted while spell symbols on arrowheads exploded one after another, creating beautiful fireworks.

Si Wen Ming raised his longsword, prepared to launch a hack at all those stunned aquatic warriors on the eighteen floating mountains. But abruptly, a silhouette flashed out from behind him. That was Yemo Tian. He laughed loudly and viciously, while pulling out a purely black, translucent crystal sword, piercing towards Si Wen Ming’s heart from his back.

Puff! The sword pierced into Si Wen Ming’s back and came out from his chest.

"Funny, funny, you’re one of the top-grade powerful ones among human beings, aren’t you? Killing you is so fun!"

Yemo Tian’s laughter sounded like screams of cats, spreading far, far away in the night sky.

Chapter 984: A Body of Breathing Earth

"No!" Yao Meng and the others were terrified. They growled while staring at Si Wen Ming, who was stabbed in the heart. Their bodies were frozen, and their minds were blank. They didn't know what to do or say.

"The bodies of human Divine Magi are strong, right? Hmm, as your cultivations grow better and better, human Divine Magi can even be as strong as, or even stronger than the same level Jia Clan warriors, am I right?"

Yemo Tian put his mouth near Si Wen Ming's ears and raised his voice on purpose, taunted Si Wen Ming.

"They also told me that a truly powerful peak-level Divine Magi can be weapon-proof, not even fire or water can kill them. They can manipulate dragons in their hands, and can even crumble stars in their hands, a bunch of unbreakable freaks, right?"

Si Wen Ming expressionlessly lowered his head, looking at his own chest, carefully sensing the strange feeling given by the strange warm power released from the sword which had penetrated his chest. The sword penetrated his heart. Therefore, every heartbeat would bring Si Wen Ming an unbearable pain, and this unbearable pain caused Si Wen Ming to gradually begin laughing. This great pain made him feel so alive, so real!

"However, your so-called Divine Magi are a joke under my sword!"

Yemo Tian proudly twisted the sword, cutting Si Wen Ming's body with the sharp sword edge, causing a slight puffing noise.

"This spirit holy weapon is made by that lascivious, yet noble father of mine. He crafted this weapon himself. For this dark devouring sword, he even destroyed a small world with a nature of darkness and devouring, then used the core as the main material,

and made this beautiful and magical sword for me!"

"This sword can destroy everything in the entire universe, it can devour everything. The more souls and blood it absorbs, the stronger it will become." Just like a kid with a new toy, Yemo Tian proudly showed his spirit weapon off.

"Dishi Cha returned from my father's place and brought me this sword. I've been kept in the dark Sun Castle by Yemo Luoye, that bloody woman. She didn't allow me to come out. Therefore, I haven't found a nice target for this sword to obtain its first blood!"

'But today, I found the perfect target! Someone told me you're Si Wen Ming, who made our noble Yu Clan people shed so much blood in Chi Ban Mountain. You're him, aren't you? I assume you're a hero among human beings, right?""

"To feed my sword with the blood of a hero, I think this is a good sign. We Yu Clan people are quite superstitious actually. Although our powers can conquer all kinds of superstition, deep down, we believe in some mysterious, inexplicable things. What do you think?"

Si Wen Ming chuckled, but didn't say anything. He narrowed his eyes while enjoying that strange feeling given by his penetrated heart and that long sword inside his body.

"Did you laugh? Can you still laugh?" Yemo Tian's face turned extremely dark. That handsome face of his twisted as he yelled, "You should be crying, screaming, wailing, begging for mercy! You should kneel down under my feet, lick my boots to beg me to spare your lowly life!"

Yemo Tian shouted with a high-pitched voice, "Those maids I killed, didn't they all do the same? They cried, screamed, begged me, kneeled under my feet... They did whatever they could to make me happy, to beg me to let them go!"

"Our brave human warriors will never beg a non-humankind

being for mercy, even if we are going to die!" Si Wen Ming finally began talking, and his tone was as gentle and calm as always, "Especially under such a situation. Are you sure that you can kill me?"

"Eh?"

Yemo Tian screamed. In the next moment, he lost his eyesight. Si Wen Ming violently turned around and let the dark devour sword cut a half of his body open. Meanwhile, he straightened his left elbow and smashed on Yemo Tian's face.

Bang! Yemo Tian's dragon scale armor and dragon skin helmet burst with a dazzling light simultaneously.

Gong Gong gave Yemo Tian a top-grade set of armor that belonged to a Northern Wasteland clan, in order to allow him to pretend to be a Northern Wasteland warrior, and to come to this White Dragon River to see what happened. However, facing a full attack launched by Si Wen Ming, this set of armor was too fragile.

Following that thunderous bang, Yemo Tian's armor and helmet were shattered into tiny bits in an instant. A terrifyingly great force of gravity landed on Yemo Tian's body. That force of gravity was millions of times greater than the normal gravity of Pan Gu world. Under the effect of that force, Yemo Tian was dragged down like a shooting star, thudding loudly against the ground.

Over ten purely dark, strangely shaped magic talismans exploded on Yemo Tian's body, and released dense layers of black light that wrapped him up. They protected him from this destructive elbow attack launched by Si Wen Ming.

Lying on the ground, he suffered from a bad dizziness. All defensive magic talismans worn by Yemo Tian were consumed up. He slowly shook, then raised his head, but immediately, he popped out his eyes in a great shock, because he saw Si Wen Ming's perfect woundless body, and traceless, smooth skin.

"No...How can this be? My dark devouring sword!"

Yemo Tian raised his sword in confusion and said subconsciously, "I sneakily tried it with the few birds raised by Yemo Shanye. With a slight touch, the souls and spirit blood of the few birds were drained by this sword. You shouldn't be an exception!"

Si Wen Ming patted his woundless left chest, looked at Yemo Tian and smilingly responded, "This means this sword of yours has achieved its first blood already, hasn't it? It attained its first blood from a bird. In this case, in the future, you can only kill small animals with this sword."

"Nonsense!" Yemo Tian's look changed immediately. He pointed at Si Wen Ming and barfed, "My spirit holy weapon can only achieve its first blood from a hero! Its power can only be activated by the blood of a true hero! It is you! You, Si Wen Ming! It can't be wrong!"

Forcibly fighting back the bad dizziness, Yemo Tian leaped up and raised his exquisite long sword. He left a black stream of light in the air while piercing to Si Wen Ming's heart once again.

Si Wen Ming didn't dodge, neither did he fend with his own sword. Instead, he let Yemo Tian's sword penetrate his heart one more time. Meanwhile, he was silently surprised by the sharpness of this sword.

Si Wen Ming was a well-cultivated, talented human being. The nature of his power was earth, which meant his body was much stronger than ordinary Divine Magi. But even with his incredibly strong body, the long sword held in Yemo Tian's hands could easily pierce into his body. Without a doubt, this sword would become a lethal threat to human warriors.

When the sword pierced into Si Wen Ming's body, Yemo Tian laughed out wildly. He triggered the devouring power of the sword immediately.

However, the sword failed to devour anything. Si Wen Ming's body was like a halfway melted maltose. No matter how hard Yemo Tian tried to boost up the power of the sword, Si Wen Ming's spirit blood and soul remained as a perfect unity with his body, and the sword couldn't even take a slight little bit of it away.

Yemo Tian refused to believe this. He pulled out the sword, then pierced it into Si Wen Ming's body once again.

Nothing changed. The sword could hurt Si Wen Ming, but failed to do any harm to him.

Once he pulled the sword out of Si Wen Ming's body, his body recovered completely.

Faintly smiling, Si Wen Ming said mildly, "This Divine Magus body of mine cost the last portion of breathing earth possessed by my clan. My body merged with the breathing earth, and became a body of breathing earth. Not even a single drop of spirit blood will spill out from this body of mine. How can you possibly devour me?"

Raising his left hand, Si Wen Ming slapped loudly on Yemo Tian's face.

Chapter 985: Devour Each Other

An indestructible body created by breathing earth, packed with the earth power... As the creator of the secret meridian-expanding magic of the Magi Palace, Si Wen Ming had an especially strong body. His physical strength was even greater than the strength of an enormous dragon.

As the slap landed on Yemo Tian's face, supported by the earth power that came from all surrounding mountains, it was as heavy as a thousand mountains. Yemo Tian felt that a thousand mountains had smashed on his face simultaneously.

A black glow emitted from Yemo Tian's body, within which, an extremely luxurious, exquisite armor, that was complicatedly decorated with rose embossments, emerged on his body. The armor was purely black. It quickly wore itself on Yemo Tian's body, then a black mask, which was thickly covered in rose embossments as well, fell down from the helmet and shielded Yemo Tian's entire face.

Si Wen Ming's slap landed on the mask and generated a thunderous bang. Yemo Tian's body began spinning swiftly, even sending out waves of arc-shaped fierce airstreams, blowing out in all directions along with shrill noises that left visible traces in the air.

His mask was shattered, and so was his helmet. The strong impact force had also broken his armor into inch-long pieces.

Yemo Tian's face was hollowed. A half of that beautiful face was smashed, while tens of sparkling teeth with crystal-like luster flew out of his mouth and clanged all over the ground.

"Master!"

A few Yu Clan warriors hurriedly rushed out from the air and held Yemo Tian up as quickly as they could. Yemo Tian was nearly

slapped unconscious. He slowly shook his head with his smashed face. From that big hole on his face, saliva was flowing out in streams, mixed with blood.

"Eh, ki-kill him!"

Yemo Tian mumbled, while raising his sword with difficulty and pointing at Si Wen Ming. While he was shaking his head, his erect eye had been opening and closing, within which, a black divine light was faintly visible. It seemed about to burst out many times, but eventually, stayed within that eye.

The few Yu Clan warriors seriously glanced at Si Wen Ming, then each gave a long shout and let out a stream of black divine light from the body. Within the black divine light, the tight dragon scale armors they got from Gong Gong to cover their real identities quickly melted away, being devoured by the black light. Next, they put on extremely luxurious black armors.

As nobles of the Dark Sun, these Yu Clan warriors would surely not fight close combat against Si Wen Ming. They pulled out slim and exquisite staffs, which were decorated with all kinds of complicated patterns, and wielded them while incanting a spell.

Si Wen Ming rushed at Yemo Tian with big steps. He was surprised as well. With the slap he launched just now, he was trying to smash Yemo Tian’s head, but that armor of his seemed to be really good. Over ninety percent of the power of that slap was absorbed by the armor, and eventually, only less than ten percent of the power managed to land on Yemo Tian’s face.

Yemo Tian was injured severely, but his life wasn’t in danger. Si Wen Ming had always been quite hostile towards non-humankind beings. How could he ever bear to let Yemo Tian live? Yemo Tian was clearly with a good family background, not to mention the fact that the dark devouring sword holding in his hands was so dangerous, even to Divine Magi!

Rushing for a few steps, Si Wen Ming stopped abruptly.

A three-hundred meters in radius dark swirl emerged from above his head. Following the spell-incanting voice of those Yu Clan warriors, the black whirl spun swiftly. Visible threads of dim light drifted out from the swirl and coiled around Si Wen Ming's body, attempting to drag him into the swirl.

Si Wen Ming gave a resonant growl. He stood steadily on the ground, while tens of thousands of mountains in the surroundings buzzed deeply yet strongly, sending great earth power into Si Wen Ming's body. This connected him with the mountain range he stood on, fending against the devouring power of the dark swirl.

Yemo Tian laughed. Just now, he was nearly slapped to death, but at the moment, he had already caught his breath and cleared his head. He glanced at Si Wen Ming with a bone-deep hatred, then fiercely threw the dark devouring sword towards the eighteen floating mountains above the giant whirlpool in White Dragon River.

"You useless things, offer your blood and souls to great Lord Yemo Tian!"

The sword flashed across the air and transformed into tens of thousands of shreds of shadows, silently flying towards the tens of millions of water-kind warriors on the eighteen floating mountains. Those aquatic creatures didn't have the time to react at all, before their bodies were penetrated by those dark shadows.

Popping noise could be heard without an end, as the bodies of those aquatic creatures exploded one after another. Their bodies withered momentarily, then exploded, and became puffs of dust. All of their spirit blood and souls were devoured by the sword within a single moment.

On the surface of the sword, a vivid blood-red light was flowing in streams. Following a loud puffing noise, a blood-red mist descended from above Yemo Tian's head, merging with his body and healing his smashed face within a second.

While chuckling, Yemo Tian slowly stood up. The power vibration released from him grew stronger and stronger as the blood-red mist kept merging with his body. He excitedly clenched his fist and said, "Father is right, as long as I can use this sword right, I will become incomparably strong! The spirit blood and souls of all living beings can transform into my power!"

"With enough time, with enough living beings for me to devour, I will be as strong as my father!"

"Devour, devour, endlessly devour... This is the core of the power of the Dark Sun bloodline. As long as I am brave enough to devour every living being that I don't like, all they have will become mine!"

"Strength, life-force, sons...Even their fighting skills and experiences... Ah, how wonderful... I feel like I'm capable of anything!"

Yemo Tian yelled passionately. He slightly moved his body, but tends of shreds of afterimages were left in the air by him. Smoothly, he launched a series of punches and kicks, and every move of his was neat, quick, and effective.

By launching the punches and kicks, he even created shrill swishing noises, and faintly visible, white-colored airstreams fiercely sliced the air open, flowing to a long distance away. This practiced fighting skill was obviously not what a noble Yu Clan man could have!

Ji Hao stood on the dark soul cauldron, wrapped in a dense black mist as he dashed out of the giant whirlpool.

When he came out of the water surface, he heard Yemo Tian yelling and saw the dark devouring sword crazily devouring souls and spirit blood of those aquatic warriors. Facing the sword, those aquatic warriors had completely no power of resistance. The sword could even easily penetrate Si Wen Ming's body, not to mention those relatively weak aquatic warriors.

Ji Hao scanned across Yemo Tian’s body with his spiritual power and sensed the power vibration released from him growing stronger and stronger. Abruptly, Ji Hao laughed out, "Eh? Can such a good thing truly happen? But, I can’t let you do the harvest! Even though they’re a bunch of damned spirit creatures, they’re local living beings of our Pan Gu world. Benefits should always be kept for our own people. This had always been the right way, ever since the beginning of time!"

Pointing at the cauldron, Ji Hao released a large cloud of black mist that wrapped the eighteen floating mountains up.

Compared with the dark devouring sword, the dark soul cauldron could devour souls and spirit blood at a much higher efficiency.

Black mist wrapped those aquatic warriors up and slightly rotated, immediately after which, countless aquatic creatures fell on the ground, screamed and howled. Then, their spirit blood was drained and their souls were pulled out of their bodies. At last, their bodies became dried skeletons and thudded on the ground.

Chapter 986: Deep Dark Soul Cauldron

"Ha! Ji Hao, you're okay! Good!"

Si Wen Ming was locked by the power of the dark swirl created by the few Yu Clan people, but on seeing Ji Hao flying out from the whirlpool, he laughed out loud happily.

Ji Hao stood on the large cauldron, and was surprised by the weakness of those aquatic creatures. Even some relatively stronger, enormously shaped aquatic creatures were turned into withered skeletons when the black mist rolled across.

Hearing Si Wen Ming, Ji Hao showed his figure from the dark mist and laughed proudly, "I'm alright, alright. Not only okay, I've also captured White Dragon River God alive, and got a few treasures from him!"

A three-hundred-meter long crocodile struggled and roared in the black mist. He was large in shape, with iron-hard skin and great strength. With these, he attempted to free himself from the black mist released from the dark soul cauldron. However, the black mist wrapped him up and quickly rotated. Meanwhile, a black light spot began sparkling between the crocodile's eyes. In the next moment, it paused suddenly, then all his spirit blood spurt out from his mouth, nose, ears, and eyes, along with his soul, and soon was absorbed by the cauldron.

"White Dragon River God? Good for you!"

Ji Hao popped out his eyes in shock. He finally figured out why did the dark soul cauldron devour such a large water-kind army, with quite a lot of powerful warriors in it, so quickly and easily. It turned out that White Dragon River God harbored a malicious intent towards his warriors since long ago. He had been seeing the spirit blood and souls of these aquatic warriors as the 'food' of the dark soul cauldron all this time. He planned to extract the souls of these aquatic warriors already, as the materials for his dark killing

flags.

Therefore, the river God left a magic seal in the body of each aquatic warrior under his command, including those Divine-Magus-level ones, Magus-King-level ones, or those weak ones who had just gained a slight little bit of power, and still had shells or scales on their backs, unable to even transform into human shapes.

With the river God's power, this was surely easy. After all, not a single warrior would go against their biggest leader!

Nevertheless, Ji Hao harvested the result delivered by all the preparation done by the river God. Yemo Tian's dark devouring sword had devoured less than a hundred thousand aquatic warriors, while the rest hundreds of millions of aquatic warriors were all swallowed up by the dark soul cauldron under Ji Hao's control.

Just now, the evil ghosts released from the cauldron by Ji Hao seemed to be hazy and translucent. But after devouring so many souls and spirit blood, the figures of those evil ghosts turned much clearer, and their bodies now looked even like real fleshy bodies.

Si Wen Ming clapped his hands while laughing out wildly, "Good, good treasure! Is this the treasure you got from White Dragon River God? Looks a bit like one of those pieces made by Maguspriests from the Dao of ghost."

Maguspriests from the Dao of ghost, they specialized in the study of ghosts, human souls and all kinds of mysterious creatures. When they come near oneself, one would feel nothing but a frigid gust of wind, and when they would leave, one would see nothing but a stream of dark mist. The dense dark mist released from the cauldron looked indeed quite similar to the magics of those ghost Dao Maguspriests.

Ji Hao laughed loudly, then flicked his hands and sent out the one hundred and sixty-nine dark killing flags made by White Dragon River God. Each flag was hundreds of meters squared in

area and purely dark, floating above the dark soul cauldron and absorbing those twisted, screaming souls releasing from the cauldron at a stunning rate.

Strong black mist puffed out of the cauldron. Within the mist, those enormous black flags fluttered in the air. Ji Hao stood on the cauldron within the black mist, looking a bit like a thousand-year-old evil Magus who had just come out of his isolation.

The dark soul cauldron slowly flew towards Yemo Tian. Ji Hao stared at Yemo Tian and said coldly, "Dark Sun? The sword of yours seems to be not bad!"

Yemo Tian put the sword back into the sheath and stared at Ji Hao with a gloomy look, seeming to be quite unhappy. Tens of millions of aquatic warriors, if his dark devouring sword could devour all of their spirit blood and souls, he believed that he would be able to break into a higher level.

Back in Liang Zhu City, the base of the non-humankind in Pan Gu world, Yemo Luoye had been guarding against him as if he were a thief. He had this supreme weapon, but he dared not to use it. He clearly understood that Yemo Luoye was highly vigilant against him. If he dared to do anything inappropriate in Liang Zhu City, Yemo Luoye would never, ever show any mercy to him, even for their blood relationship.

This time, tens of millions of aquatic creatures were right in front of him. This was a banquet, but Ji Hao ruined it. The dark soul cauldron was incredibly powerful, that it actually drained so many aquatic warriors within a single second.

Yemo Tian angrily stared at Ji Hao, gnashed his teeth, laughed coldly and said, "Ji Hao? I’ve heard about you! Earl Yao Ji Hao, a human being, hehe, do you remember those prisoners you purchased from Black Shark Castle? That money is all in my pocket now. I should thank you for it."

Ji Hao looked at Yemo Tian as if he was suddenly enlightened,

then said, "Ah, so you're the supporter of that prison manager? I assume that you're an especially noble and powerful being. Otherwise, who dares to sell prisoners in such a big way?"

Yemo Shan kept his teeth gnashed. He looked at the hundred and sixty-nine fluttering dark killing flags above Ji Hao's head, and continued with that dark face of his, "Cut the crap. For the sake of the business we did before, hand out the spirit blood and souls of those water-king things, then I won't do anything to you today!"

Ji Hao shrugged, laughed relaxedly, and said, "How can you not do anything to me? What can you do to me anyway?"

Yemo Tian slowly pulled his sword back out, raised it and glanced at Si Wen Ming, who was locked by the few Yu Clan warriors, disabled from moving at the moment. He then said coldly, "Just now, I made a mistake. Si Wen Ming merged his body with breathing earth and attained an unbreakable ability, just like the breathing earth itself. I didn't think of that, so I lost out."

Taking a deep breath, Yemo Tian laughed coldly, "But this time, I won't be careless again. Thank you for the lesson you taught me. At this stage, I am lacking experience in many aspects. Therefore, I will...be extra careful, extra cautious. I will grow stronger and stronger, until you all kneel under my feet and lick my boots!"

Seeing Yemo Tian raise his black transparent crystal sword, Ji Hao pulled out the nine suns devil-destroying sword.

He smiled and said, "Your sword is not bad. I happen to have a nice sword too. Why don't we have a contest with them?"

He raised the nine suns devil-destroying sword at an angle. On the sword, nine spell symbols of sun glowed with a dazzling fiery light. Meanwhile, the temperature began raising soaringly.

Yemo Tian laughed out and pointed the sword at Ji Hao. Suddenly, the sword disappeared from his hand and in the following moment, it popped out from behind Ji Hao, released a

black beam of sword light while piercing straight towards Ji Hao's back.

High-pitched ghost screams could be heard without an end. Behind Ji Hao, from a purely dark, blackhole-like dark killing flag that seemed to devour the whole world, a pair of ghost claws reached out and grabbed the dark devour sword.

The sword slightly quaked, then cut the pair of ghost claws into pieces. It then pierced towards Ji Hao's heart from his back. However, another pair of ghost claws, four ghost claws...Hundreds of ghost claws thrust out from the flag, reaching to the sword while striving to be the first.

The dark devouring sword vibrated intensely, cutting those ghost claws into pieces one after another. But no matter how fast it moved, more and more ghost claws reached out and coiled around it, and the sword could never free itself from those ghost claws.

Ji Hao laughed. These dark killing flags were even harder to deal with than he thought. Good, indeed great treasures!

Yemo Tian's face turned as dark as ink. Why couldn't his spirit weapon deal with a small flag of Ji Hao?

Chapter 987: Shapeless Deep Dark

Those ghost claws could be destroyed easily, yet they would grow back out immediately.

Countless ghost claws had been reaching out from the dark killing flag. The dark devouring sword was incredibly sharp, that a quick swing of it could break over a hundred ghost claws. But no matter how many ghost claws were chopped into pieces, a multitude of ghost claws would grow out from the flag, drag the sword, and disable it from moving.

This dark killing flag was the most powerful one among the hundred and sixty-nine made by White Dragon River God. This flag was the highest grade one, and had the evilest ghosts in it. Ji Hao roughly calculated and found that the number of evil ghosts in this flag was at least a billion.

The dark power released from the flag condensed into ghost claws, which were as strong as the bodies of Divine Magi. The dark devouring sword flew out from Yemo Tian's hands, but it could only break a limited number of ghost claws at one time, and more ghost claws would always grow out after every move of the sword. The sword was even dragged into the flag by countless ghost claws.

Yemo Tian couldn't bear watching, unable to help but growl 'impossible' hysterically. Meanwhile, he had been incanting a spell to control the dark devour sword to devour those ghost claws.

The nature of the power of the Dark Sun was destruction and devouring; it could destroy and devour everything in the world. The more it devoured, the stronger it would become. Like the spirit blood of Yemo Tian, the dark devouring sword could also devour anything to grow its own power. However, these hideous ghost claws moved too quickly, just like phantoms. These ghost claws were clearly tangible, but no matter how hard Yemo Tian tried to boost up the devouring power of the sword, the sword

couldn’t absorb anything from those ghost claws.

It was all empty, these powerful ghost claws seemed to not even exist.

Ji Hao was less than thirty-meters away from the dark devouring sword, and clearly heard the sword let out shrill screams. The strong power vibration released from this fierce sword had been dragging Ji Hao’s body forward, even agitating his bloodline.

Even with such a great devouring power, the sword failed to gain anything from those ghost claws, which surprised Ji Hao.

"Is this dark killing flag really so magical? Even my essence sun fire couldn’t suppress those evil ghosts in it. Is there anything in the world that can restrain its power?"

"The dark killing flag is not the magical one, it’s the Liu Ren bottle and dark soul cauldron." said the mysterious man rumblingly, "These two treasures are not easy to find. They’re natural crafted supreme treasure with an extremely negative power. I didn’t think any of those extreme negative treasures could still be found out here."

"Extreme negative treasures?" Ji Hao asked.

"The power of the sun is purely positive. It’s the star of the daytime, the extreme of all positive powers in the world. Its strong, violent, and anyone can see it."

"The extremely negative power is soft and restrained, represented by the Tai Yin star, the extreme of all negative powers in the world. Ordinary people can barely see it."

Ji Hao was shocked by the mysterious man’s words, "Tai Yin star? I have never heard of a star with that name." said Ji Hao.

The mysterious man remained silent for a while, smiled and said, "How can Tai Yin star not exist? The extremely negative power and the extremely positive power, how can any of them be missing?"

"As I said just now, the extremely negative power is too soft and restrained, and the Tai Yin star has been hiding deep in the starry void. Not everyone can see it."

"Besides, a very long time ago, the Tai Yin star was taken by someone for private use. That someone sealed an area of the starry void and healed his injuries with the Tai Yin star. Therefore, hehe...By now, no human Divine Magus can ever take the Tai Yin star as his or her spirit star."

Pausing briefly, the mysterious man sighed and said, "Just like the power of those dark killing flags, the power of the Tai Yin star is invisible and unpredictable. If a Divine Magus can take the Tai Yin star as a spirit star, not to mention the other magical effects, only for hiding and assassinating, this Divine Magus could become the top-ranked one in the whole world."

Ji Hao pause for a second and roughly imagined what the mysterious man described. He couldn't help but have his scalp numbed.

"So, the Tai Yin star is hidden by someone." murmured Ji Hao, while his fine hair stood straight up. Who could achieve such an unimaginable thing as hiding the Tai Yin star and sealing an area of the starry void, only to heal himself?

The dark devouring sword quaked quickly along with Yemo Tian's voice, releasing a dreadful devouring power, trying to devour those ghost claws. But as the mysterious man said, the extremely negative power was too unpredictable. Those ghost claws were wrapped around the sword, yet the sword couldn't absorb any power from them, no matter what.

To the dark devouring sword, these ghost claws were like reflections in the water, so clear yet could never be reached. The sword failed to absorb any power from those ghost claws, so how could it ever destroy those ghost claws and get away safely?

Countless ghost claws grabbed the sword tightly, dragging it to

the dark killing flag. Once the sword was dragged into the flag, it would depend on Ji Hao's mood if it could come back out or not.

Yemo Tian's handsome face turned dark and gloomy, staring at Ji Hao as he said slowly, "You have enraged me, you have truly enraged me. Let go of my spirit weapon. Otherwise, I will let you lowly barbarians know what fear is."

Ji Hao stood on the dark soul cauldron, continuously sending waves of evil ghosts to the one hundred and sixty dark killing flags from it. These evil ghosts nourished those flags, and had been improving and completing the powers of those flags.

Hearing Yemo Tian, Ji Hao smiled at him provokingly and said, "If you're a man, don't spout too much useless talk. If you're a real man, talk with your fists! Do you want to teach me about real fear? Come, show me what you got, I'll fight you with one hand."

Ji Hao held his left hand behind his body while waving his right hand at Yemo Tian. Then, he clenched his fingers and caused a loud popping noise. His five fingers broke the space directly, leaving five short space cracks in the sky.

Such a scary physical strength made Yemo Tian's eye corners twitch. He even subconsciously took a step backward.

Si Wen Ming, who was locked by the black swirl controlled by the few Yu Clan warriors, glanced at Ji Hao in surprise. He blinked his eyes and clenched his fingers like Ji Hao did. A muffled boom was generated, along with which, a large circle of air blast was generated around Si Wen Ming's fist. A strong wave of airstream was released, shaking the few Yu Clan warriors and disabling them from standing steadily.

Nevertheless, Si Wen Ming tried his best, but still failed to crack the space directly like Ji Hao.

"Good boy! Unwittingly, the little kid I brought over from Southern Wasteland has grown up even stronger than his uncle

Wen Ming!" Si Wen Ming laughed happily, "Good, another strong human being, good, perfect!"

Delightfully looking at Ji Hao, Si Wen Ming then cast a sideway glance at Yemo Tian and said, "Are young men among non-humankind beings all like this? Good-looking boys who can do nothing but talk? Well, this...seems to be a good thing too!"

Yemo Tian had sensitive ears. He heard Si Wen Ming’s murmur clearly, and that made him growl in anger.

He opened his erect eye, and the dark divine light seemed to burst from that eye.

"Zhong!" Ji Hao suddenly burst with a great roar.

A water-tank-sized ghost head silently emerged from behind Yemo Tian, opened its jaws and released a gray stream of mist that sprayed on Yemo Tian’s body.

Yemo Tian screamed out, as his entire body was immediately covered in extremely frigid ice flakes.

Chapter 988: Destructive Weapon

The essence sun fire was like all types of fire contained in the few supreme treasures that belonged to Ji Hao, with an extremely positive nature. It could destroy anything in the world, yet it could also generate an inexhaustible power of creation.

The extremely negative power was cold and soft, and was the extreme of all negative powers in the world. In a good way, the extremely negative power could also nourish everything in the world and deliver the power of creation, but in an evil way, it was cold and destructive, and could perish any living creature in the world.

The dark killing flags contained the extremely negative power. The dark soul cauldron turned countless souls into evil ghosts, and what was extracted by the dark killing flags was only a slight little part of the extremely negative power of those evil ghosts.

Ji Hao was never a good namer, so he named that as Dark Cold strike. Just now, what landed on Yemo Tian's body was nothing else but a Dark Cold strike.

It was soft and frigid, and could drill into any corner of the body of a living being. It would linger in the body for a despairingly long span of time. The Dark Cold strike did not just freeze Yemo Tian's skin, muscles and bones, it had also drilled into his soul, and was freezing his soul into an ice block.

Fortunately, despite the weak physical bodies of Yu Clan nobles, they did have especially strong soul powers. A dense black stream of fire spurted out from Yemo Tian's erect eye, from which, Yemo Tian's heartbreaking screams could be faintly heard.

That scream was barely audible, and only powerful beings were strong souls could hear that scream on the soul level. Obviously, Yemo Tian's soul had been fighting against the dark cold strike as hard as possible.

Ji Hao chuckled, while a whole three-hundred water-tank-sized, purely dark ghost heads popped out around Yemo Tian. These ghost heads were twisted and hideous, viciously staring at Yemo Tian, as they slowly opened their mouths widely, with frigid strands of gray mist drifting out from their mouth corners.

"Surrender, or perish!" Ji Hao looked at Yemo Tian and smiled coldly.

"Surrender? How can I surrender to you lowly, insignificant barbarians? I am Yemo Tian, I am a direct descendant of that great man. I am going to become the supreme owner of Pan Gu world and all three-thousand worlds nearby!" Yemo Tian widely opened the erect eye between his eyebrows, then the black fire began burning more and more ragingly.

In midair, within the dense watery clouds, over ten-thousand heavily armored water ape warriors stood in the sky.

A few large apes with golden armors and large sticks showed their teeth, anxiously scratching their heads and necks while surrounding a larger shaped ape, who had an especially long neck. They were all shouting and yelling.

"Big brother, I say we attack now, what do you think? If we kill Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao, Lord Gong Gong will be happy."

"Indeed! Kill those bastards! They always bring us troubles!"

"Do it, Lord Gong Gong ordered us to protect Yemo Tian. We cannot let Ji Hao kill him in this place!"

The larger ape sat on a watery cloud, with a pair of eyes shining brightly, looking down at the fight which was happening down below, hundreds of miles away. A while later, he laughed confusingly, "What‘s the hurry? Just let Ji Hao kill that kid. Before we left, Abba secretly told me this, and I assume this is Lord Gong Gong’s idea too."

The group of apes paused for a second, then lowered their heads,

looking at Ji Hao and Yemo Tian.

The large ape proudly glanced at the group of confused apes, and suddenly had a strong sense of superiority as a smarter one. He chuckled and said, "If Ji Hao killed this kid, he would bring himself a huge, huge trouble. Neither Dishi Cha, nor Yemo Luoye would ever let him go."

The large ape smirked loudly, then gnashed his teeth and said, "Didn't you find that till now, it's our Gong Gong Family that has been suffering all losses. Dishi Cha claimed to be a partner of ours, but what did he do? We have to stimulate him, to let him work, let him shed some blood."

The other apes were still confused, but didn't stop them from looking at the large ape in admiration and asking carefully, "So?"

The large ape raised his head and said slowly "So, although Lord Gong Gong ordered us to protect this kid, we shall let him die. When he dies, we will go seize an arm or two to three legs of his, and bring it back to show Dishi Cha. That will be it."

An ape calculated with his fingers, lowered his voice and said, "Big Brother, Yemo Tian has two legs only. How can we get three legs?"

The large ape grabbed the stick by his side and heavily knocked this ape on the head, giving him a serious dizziness. It made him thud his butt on the cloud, and unable to make any noise for a long while.

Ji Hao stood on the cauldron, surrounded by a black mist that made him look like a devil from hell. Hearing that Yemo Tian refused to surrender, Ji Hao didn't want to waste any time on talking. Instead, he clapped his hands and let the three-hundred ghost heads open their jaws simultaneously. The power of dark cold strike transformed into strong gray mist streams, roaring out and shrouding Yemo Tian in a flash.

Clang! Clang! Strange metal-crashing noises sounded from Yemo Tian's body, while a crushingly great pressure spread out. It was as terrifying as a tsunami, and even made people feel hard to breathe.

Ji Hao sensed a piercing pain from his brain. The spirit power he released was crushed suddenly by that scary pressure, as two streams of blood gushed out of his nostrils. Hurriedly, Ji Hao controlled the dark soul cauldron and drew quickly backward.

The looks of Si Wen Ming and the few Yu Clan warriors changed suddenly. The pressure released from Yemo Tian's body was not even something that living beings should have. That was a merciless, emotionless, extreme terror, that existed for nothing else but destruction.

Si Wen Ming also moved backward as quickly as he could. As waves of pressure landed on his body, layers of yellow-colored glow emerged around his body, mixed with thin strands of purple mist. The glow was crushed layer by layer, and slowly, blood began flowing out from his ears and nostrils.

The few Yu Clan warriors suffered the worst. Being struck by that pressure, countless cracks appeared on their armors, squeezing a series of cracking noise out of their bones. Next, they all fell to the ground like broken sticks.

Obviously, this destructive pressure could largely suppress Yu Clan people from the Dark Sun. The damage it caused to those Yu Clan warriors was way more serious than the damage to Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming.

Following a series of clang, the dark cold strike released by the three-hundred ghost heads suddenly froze, becoming an ice shell, then being shattered by that great pressure. It exposed a purely dark...human-shaped thing, silently floating in the sky while releasing a strong power vibration.

The three-hundred meters tall human-shaped thing was slim, and looked at a giant armor, with twenty-four pairs of wings

spreading on its back.

The twenty-four pairs of, over nine-hundred meters long wings had different types of power. They were wrapped in fire, gale, thunderbolts, poisonous gas, flood...All purely dark, giving a feeling of destruction, and seeming ready to destroy the whole universe.

On the giant human-shaped thing's head, between the pair of eyebrows, was a transparent dark crystal. Yemo Tian was silently floating inside the crystal, looking down at Ji Hao.

"This is the destructive weapon Dishi Cha brought to me from my father!"

"I was keeping this as my trump card. I wasn't going to activate it before the last gasp!"

"Lowly ants, you have actually forced me to use my trump card. Yemo Luoye, that bloody woman must have sensed the power of this destructive weapon, as well as people from the other eleven families in power!"

"It's all your fault!"

The destructive weapon had eight long and slim arms. At the moment, one of those arms raised high and slapped down towards Ji Hao.

Chapter 989: Shaking the World

Ji Hao flashed across the air, followed by a dense cloud of dark mist. He reached to Yao Meng, then the golden bridge released a dark golden stream of light and rose into the sky, bringing the group of people over a thousand miles away.

Si Wen Ming roared resonantly, then stomped his right foot against the ground. The ground quaked, then a rumbling buzzing noise came everywhere. Next, Si Wen Ming flashed across the air and moved himself over a thousand miles away as well.

The destructive weapon slapped on a towering mountain beside White Dragon River. A black dim light spurt from that enormous palm, under the effect of which, that nine-thousand-meter tall mountain was turned black in an instant. That was a vivid, transparent, sparkling black, a black that shouldn't even exist in this world.

Between the mountain and the air surrounding it, an extremely thin, transparent screen seemed to emerge, isolating this changed mountain from the surrounding environment.

In the next moment, the destructive weapon took its arm backward and released another stream of dark light that rolled up the few Yu Clan warriors and brought them onto a shoulder of it. Then, a short swishing noise was generated, followed by a loud popping noise. Afterward, the destructive weapon cracked the space and teleported itself up to the sky, thousands of meters high.

That extremely thin screen exploded all of a sudden and let that black crystals-like mountain, which now seemed to be evil, make contact to the air of Pan Gu world and the surrounding mountains.

A dazzling light beam rose into the sky, as Ji Hao, Si Wen Ming and the others closed their eyes subconsciously.

The ground was shaking, and so was the air. A rumbling noise

could be heard, then no one could hear anything else. Everyone felt that both their body and the soul were blank, to the point that Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming almost forgot about their own existences.

A hundred miles in radius, black-red mushroom cloud burst in the sky and released a giant puff of dust with the power of destruction, causing friction against the air. Countless water-tank-sized red thunderbolts struck down from the sky, and then nothing existed anymore.

From the round-shaped area, with a radius of eight-hundred miles, flame-red thunderbolts burst in all directions, striking the surrounding area. Mountains were flattened one after another, while countless animals were turned into strands of smoke.

A thousand miles away, those armies brought over by Ji Hao, Yao Meng, and the other earls had been retreating at their highest speed. Among those human warriors, Divine Magi and Magus Kings were roaring, as they combined their powers and pulled up numerous mountains to throw them backward, fending against those dazzling and sizzling red thunderbolts.

Maguspriests cast all kinds of mysterious magics to help their armies retreat faster. Those great armies brought up fierce gales, as human warriors trod on flames, surrounded by hurricanes and thunderbolts, trying their best to run as far away from the explosive spot as they could, with confused looks.

The puffing noise could be heard without an end. The destructive weapon launched a quick attack, but under the effect of this quick, convenient attack, everything was destroyed within the area eight-hundred-mile in radius. Not even a single trace managed to remain, as if nothing within this area had ever existed.

Ten whole minutes later, that dark, ball-shaped black hole, which had devoured everything within that area, began shrinking, along with that puffing noise. The strong Dao of space of Pan Gu world crushed this completely empty black hole, but it took a

quarter of an hour for that damaged area of space to fix itself.

Within that area, all mountains had melted, but then, motivated by a magical healing power, those melted mountains solidified themselves quickly. Thousands of differently sized mountains stood in the darkness of night. Under the starlight, all these mountains had turned crystalline and colorful, sparkling with a beautiful light.

Roaring water streams from White Dragon River surged down into the giant pit on the ground, which still had steam puffing out from it.

Along with the loud water clattering noise, a thousand-mile-wide, round-shaped lake was formed among those crystal mountains, connected with the giant whirl of White Dragon River. It looked like a large water tank with a small water-plate beside.

"A terrifying power!"

The destructive weapon floated in the sky, while Yemo Tian laughed proudly inside the dark crystal between its eyebrows. The destructive weapon turned his laughter so loud that it resounded across the entire forest with a radius of tens of thousands of miles.

"What a destructive power! I can sense it, not only those mountains, the forest and those poor animals are destroyed, I can also sense that within that area covered in the destroying power, some natural laws in this world are destroyed already."

"This power is great enough to destroy the natural laws in this world. Lowly, small barbarians, aren’t you going to kneel on the ground and beg Lord Yemo Tian for mercy?"

Ji Hao, Si Wen Ming, and the others raised their heads, looking at the faintly glowing, dark destructive weapon, stunned. At the moment, everyone remained silent.

By a single strike, a thousand mile long mountain range was destroyed. A one-star human Divine Magus could do the same by

consuming all his or her power, and even risking his life. However, that would only result in a physical damage. Divine Magi could do no more than turning mountains into stones or even sand, but this strike launched by the destructive weapon had truly destroyed everything in that area. All mountains in that area were flattened and changed, and even the natural law in that area had been destroyed entirely.

Destroying the natural law within a certain area, no human Divine Magi could ever do this. Divine Magi with one inner spirit stars couldn’t do this, neither could Divine Magi with eighty-one inner spirit stars.

As for whether Supreme Magi could destroy the natural law within a certain area, neither Ji Hao nor Si Wen Ming had reached that level. Therefore, they didn’t know.

"Still not kneeling? You lowly...Mortal things!" Yemo Tian screamed.

Back in the heaven, Gong Gong, who had been watching this fight with a magic, had his face twisted. His eyes were glowing with the fire of anger as he pointed at Dishi Cha and cursed out loud.

Dishi Cha stared at a magic mirror with a great shock. In that mirror, the enormous destructive weapon floated in the sky. Dishi Cha had been shaking, and couldn’t say a word for quite a long while. In the end, he stuttered to Gong Gong, "I, I didn’t know... The small piece of crystal that great man told me to bring to Yemo Tian, is actually...is...is..."

All of a sudden, Dishi Cha pointed at the sky and yelled hysterically, "Destructive weapon! It’s a destructive weapon!...He’s only an illegitimate child, nothing but an illegitimate child. Is he worth such a great cost? Is he worth? Damn it! My plan, my plan!"

Gong Gong weirdly looked at Dishi Cha and abruptly gave a cold laugh, "It seems that, my old friend, there’s something that you

haven’t told me yet, right? You have a secret plan, don’t you? Hmm? Do you want this kid to become your...puppet? "

Dish Cha was still yelling at the sky. He cursed with evil words, and he didn’t have the time to answer Gong Gong’s question.

Far away in the north, outside Liang Zhu City, Yemo Luoye, Dishi Yanluo, Fan Hai and the other emperors in powers floated in the midair, nervously looking at the south.

"The supreme weapon..." They gasped in shock.

The other emperors in power were with a dark, sulky faces, but Yemo Luoye’s beautiful face was badly twisted, that even made her look like a hideous ghost.

Chapter 990: Dachi Makes a Move

Yemo Tian’s voice resounded across the sky and made the surrounding mountains shake.

"Barbarians, kneel, worship me, like your ignorant ancestors worshipped those lowly and weak Gods... Worship me! Because, I’m even stronger than your Gods!"

Yemo Tian floated in the dark crystal, looking down at Ji Hao and the others.

The destructive weapon swung another long arm down and clenched those fingers, sending a great mountain up into the sky, slowly flying below the weapon itself. Yemo Tian gave a faint smile, then wielded his right hand. Followed by his move, the destructive weapon wielded an arm as well, then this mountain disappeared.

The mountain disappeared completely, without leaving even a trace.

Ji Hao and the others couldn’t even clearly see how the mountain disappeared.

No process was needed. With a single thought of Yemo Tian, the mountain was turned into nothingness, as if it never existed.

"Retreat!" Said Ji Hao with a low voice, "Let our warriors retreat first. This monster...What the hell is this? Has somebody seen anything like this?"

Ji Hao was confused. A hundreds of meters tall human-shaped weapon, with twenty-four pairs of wings, all with different appearances... Some similar to the wings of angels, some looked like the wings of devils, some were membranous, like the wings of a dragonfly, while others were like the wings of butterflies...

The destructive weapon was well shaped, with smooth lines, looking exquisite and evil. Looking closer, Ji Hao found that the

weapon was thickly covered in countless complicated embossed patterns. Every inch of those patterns had been releasing an extremely evil feeling, that was twisted and attractive, making people want to embrace the evil and destroy themselves.

Pan Gu world was a simple world, while the destructive weapon looked far beyond this era in Pan Gu world. In a simple world like this, such an enormous weapon abruptly appeared, with such a dreadful power that was great enough to even destroy the world. This made Ji Hao feel ridiculous.

All of a sudden, an arm of the destructive weapon wielded. Puff! Those dark killing flags that Ji Hao hadn't been paying attention to, began fluttering, releasing countless ghost claws that reached to the sky. However, those ghost claws failed to grasp anything.

The dark devouring sword cracked the space and teleported itself away from those ghost claws, then flew to a hand of the destructive weapon, followed by a black stream of light.

The destructive weapon raised all eight arms together and held the sword, looking like a black lotus. The starlight dimmed down suddenly, and following a strange buzzing noise, the six-foot-long sword expanded quickly, reaching around three hundred and sixty meters long within a blink of an eye.

The glowing sword split up, along with a long-lasting sizzling noise. Next, each hand of the weapon gripped an enormous dark devouring sword.

Yemo Tian smirked loudly, while controlling the destructive weapon to move in a circle. Then, each of the eight dark devouring swords released an arc-shaped sword light that landed on the vast mountainous area.

Mountains were devoured one after another, creating a three thousand miles wide plain area under Yemo Tian's feet.

Within this area, countless wild animals had their spirit blood

drained. It turned into a dark blood-red mist, drifting up to the destructive weapon. The blood mist sprayed on the surface of the destructive weapon and soon was absorbed.

Yemo Tian let out a moan in pleasure. He trembled slightly, while a dense blood-red light slowly emerged in his erect eye, and said, "Power, this is power! The more I kill, the more I devour, the stronger I will become!"

He suddenly opened his eyes, looking at Ji Hao and the others, and laughed with a shrill voice, then said, "I have decided, I don’t need you to worship me. I don’t need you to surrender. I only need your lives and your souls! Killing and devouring, how beautiful are these words!"

The enormous destructive weapon slightly quivered, then this giant human-shaped thing suddenly moved to before Ji Hao and the others’ eyes, raising the eight dark devour sword high. As Yemo Tian was about to launch the move, silently, a man with a long robe showed up behind him.

"Brother Xuan Du!" Ji Hao shouted out in surprise.

Priest Xuan Du smiled, then sent out a magic talisman with a sense of Chaos power releasing from it from his hand. The magic talisman transformed into a stream of Chaos power and fiercely slapped on the back of the destructive weapon. The space around the destructive weapon was disturbed immediately, then followed a loud crack, a, miles in radius area disappeared without a trace, along with the destructive weapon.

"Ji Hao, follow me!" Xuan Du waved his hands at Ji Hao.

Ji Hao quickly glanced at Si Wen Ming. Si Wen Ming nodded quickly and said, "Don’t worry, I’ll take care of your army!"

Ji Hao nodded, then packed the dark soul cauldron and those dark killing flags, trod on a cloud, and flew to Xuan Du. From above Xuan Du’s head, a yellow-colored silk handkerchief with an

embroidery of a Ba Gua diagram appeared and slowly spun, releasing a yellow-colored stream of mist that wrapped both of them up. Next, the figures of both Xuan Du and Ji Hao turned hazy, then disappeared.

In the next moment, Ji Hao arrived in a magical space. This space was suffused by gray-colored airstreams, with a clear sphere of light floating in the middle like an egg.

Within that clear sphere of light, streams of purple mist had been coiling around each other, while a dense yellow mist descended from above, steadily held holding a not so large, ancient-styled, mottled palace of Dao.

The palace was built with blue bricks, glazed tiles, and wooden pillars; it was only hundreds of meters squared in area. A faint aroma spread from the palace of Dao, and the wind chimes hanging under the eaves tinkled without being blown by any wind. The silvery tinkling made Ji Hao feel completely refreshed, as all of the negative power in his primordial spirit was wiped out immediately.

Ji Hao followed Xuan Du slowly into the palace of Dao, then saw Priest Dachi, Priest Qing Wei, and Priest Yu Yu in the middle of the palace, sitting on hassocks in a straight line.

"Uncle Dachi, Uncle Qing Wei, Shifu!" Ji Hao walked into the palace and bowed to each of them.

"Sit!" Priest Dachi pointed at the ground, then a dark-yellow hassock appeared in front of Ji Hao. Ji Hao hurriedly sat down, then Xuan Du stood beside Ji Hao and lowered his eyelids, without making any move.

Remaining silent for quite a while, Priest Dachi waved his hand and let out a series of light and shadows. A glowing-red, broken, human-shaped thing emerged in the light and the shadows. This human-shaped thing was only around sixty meters tall, glowing-red, and was dilapidated, covered in cracks and holes. Obviously, it

was wrecked pretty hard.

"This is called the blood-killing weapon. Back then, when the non-humankind intruded for the first time, this was the only blood-killing weapon they had." said Priest Dachi blandly, "I saw it doing too much killing... Therefore, I stopped it on my own. I fought it for seven days, and finally broke it. I have to mention that these years, I've been raising yellow scarf warriors and other similar types of warriors of Dao, and learned quite a lot from this thing."

Ji Hao silently listened to Priest Dachi. It turned out that Priest Dachi and the other powerful being had encountered similar destructive weapons back then.

"But today, that weapon used by that non-humankind kid... is obviously much more powerful than this blood-killing weapon. If this happened before, it would be alright. But at this time, Pan Gu world is suffering endless internal difficulties, even leading to a turmoil!"

Priest Dachi opened his eyes, looked at Ji Hao and said gently, "Ji Hao, the mortal affairs of our sect will be in your charge. We will explain to the human emperor, and you shall focus on dealing with those non-humankind beings."

Sitting aside, Priest Qing Wei also said with a bland tone, "Take out the few treasures you attained today. My brothers and I will help you to build connections with those, to improve your defensive power!"

Hearing this, Ji Hao was surprised.

Chapter 991: The Twelve Emperors in Power

Back in Liang Zhu City, in the government hall which was still under re-construction, countless warriors were armed to the teeth, surrounding a round-shaped, secret chamber.

Compared to the other halls, this hundreds of meters wide secret chamber could even be counted as tiny. A round-shaped, metal table was placed in the middle of the chamber, with twelve exquisitely crafted, large armchairs standing around it. Yemo Luoye and the other eleven emperors in power sat on those armchairs with gloomy faces, without saying a word.

A long while later, Fan Hai, who was wrapped in strong death power, abruptly began talking. His high-pitched voice sounded like a sharp steel pricker, fiercely breaking the quiet in the chamber.

"Supreme weapon, that power was definitely from a supreme weapon. Moreover, it’s at an even higher level than Blood Killing from the Blood Moon, the one we used to own. Blood Killing was only at the level of ‘Doom’, and it was antique."

"But this one, is it at the level of ‘Immortality’? Or ‘Eternity’?"

Speaking the word ‘Immortality’, Fan Hai subconsciously curled his body up, with the word ‘Eternity’, he even started trembling. The green flame burning in his eyes shrunk into a needlepoint. It was not hard to tell how nervous, and even frightened he was.

Dishi Yanluo suddenly threw a punch at the round metal table in front of him.

Dong! Large numbers of spell symbols burst from the table, sparkling with a bright fiery light. Dishi Yanluo had put forth all of his strength for this punch. Despite all those spell symbols thickly covering the table, he still managed to put a three-inch deep, fist-shaped dent on it.

"What’re you talking about? Are you joking? Immortal-level

supreme weapon, how much would it cost? How many worlds would be drained, and how much manpower and material resources would be consumed to produce one Immortal-level supreme weapon?"

"As for an Eternal-level supreme weapon, haha... haha... Which one of you have ever seen one with your own eyes? That's a legend! My dear brothers and...sister...that's only a legend, you know? Back in our hometown, which great force could still have enough resources to allow them to afford an eternal-level supreme weapon?"

Once again, the secret chamber felt into a deathly silence.

Another while later, an emperor in power, who looked like a hazy shadow, murmured with a deep voice, "People, in this primitive and barbaric world, we are dominators from Yu Dynasty. We are standing high above the masses, and our civilization is way more developed than those lowly ignorant barbarians."

"We built magnificent cities and beautiful castles... We are high up above, enjoying our lives. We appreciate art, we throw all kinds of high-class parties, and we do whatever we want to enjoy our long and elegant lives...like real nobles!"

"However, we shall never forget our true origin."

This emperor in power lowered his voice, his tone filled with an indescribable mysteriousness as he continued, "In this world, we can get whatever we want. We have the greatest powers, we control countless lives, and their honors and disgraces."

"But we have to remember the place we came from, the place where our ancestors lived. Our families, our forefathers, they were just bottom-level beings in that strong, dreadful, strict and merciless world, that great world."

"Our ancestors were a group of impoverished aristocrats, homeless cultivators on the tramp, even exiled prisoners and

prisoners awaiting execution, low-grade artists, or lowly prostitutes...Those people came to this untouched realm with the last glimmer of hope, and luckily, they found Pan Gu world!"

"Primitive, wild Pan Gu world, with countless resources, slaves, and, faintly visible three-thousand worlds surrounding this world. By exploiting resources of this world and enslaving people in this world, our ancestors built a base in Pan Gu world, gradually reaching to the surrounding three-thousand worlds and attaining the great powers and wealth that they dared not to imagine before."

"Even our hometown began to rise and develop again, gradually attaining greater powers and strengths, because of those resources sent back by the lucky ones in Pan Gu world."

"However, we have to know that beyond us are the true powerful families, true eternal beings. They're the dominators of that powerful and dreadful world. Facing them, we're nothing but trembling bugs."

"Before they notice us, we can still have what we have in Pan Gu world, all to ourselves. But after they fix their eyes on us, what will happen to us? Can we truly ensure our own safety by lying and concealing?"

"Don't guess their intentions and purposes with our narrow ranges of knowledge."

"Don't try to measure their capabilities with our ignorance."

"Don't even think about reaching their omnipotence with our stupidity."

Yemo Luoye finally couldn't bear listening all these. She gnashed her teeth and squeezed out a few words, "Lord Jialou Min, what on earth are you trying to say?" Jialou Min was the emperor in power of the Mirage Moon. At the moment, his figure turned hazier and hazier, while he continued with that deep and scary voice, "That

power, we all sensed it, cruel and terrifying, destructive, devouring. The power of the Dark Sun, we can all sense it... That's the power of the Dark Sun."

Dishi Yanluo stood up, supported his own body with his pair of fists pressed against the metal table. He looked at Jialou Min and said with a deep voice, "Jia Lou, my brother, are you saying that this woman, Yemo Luoye, has betrayed us?"

Yemo Luoye immediately stood up and growled harshly, "Are you trying to start a war between the twelve families of ours? Don't forget the holy oath of alliance our ancestors made when they found Pan Gu world...I will never betray it!"

Dishi Yanluo licked his own lips, then gave a greedy glance at Yemo Luoye's beautiful face, and said, "Betray or not, you can't just say it. Hmm, I have a suggestion, that Yemo Luo has to cooperate with us for examination, and during this period, she should be under the supervision of someone reliable!"

Fan Hai laughed with an especially cold and creepy voice, "You're not suggesting that you're the reliable person, are you? Oh, come on!"

"Enough!" said a strong, deep voice, "We are facing a crisis, don't think about those unimportant things."

An extra tall and sturdy, red-colored figure stood up, heavily patted on the metal table and said, "I, Piji Nu, believe that Yemo Luoye would never do stupid things like that. We have to combine our powers and fight against this crisis together!"

Piji Nu clapped his hands, then said loudly, "With the name of Red Moon, I suggest, we call back all our armies in the twelve new worlds, and prepare for the war with all our powers. I hope that the twelve of us can know that only we are our true allies."

Yemo Luoye raised her right hand the first and responded, "I agree."

Dishi Yanluo looked at Piji Nu in a slight fear, then slowly raised his right hand, "I agree...Piji Nu, for your sake!"

Fan Hai and Jialou Min glanced at each other, then these two dark and cold ones raised their right hands together.

Soon, the other emperors all raised their rights hands, one after another.

Chapter 992: Pride

Pan Jia world, a large white halo hung in the sky. From that hundred-mile-wide halo, countless Jia Clan warriors armed with heavy armors and long spears trod on metal plates and descended.

Purely metal, beautifully glowing, enormous warships flew out of the halo. Countless dark-kind warriors with light armors, and non-humankind slaves with half-body leather armors stood on these warships, with their eyes fixed on Pan Jia world, this world of water.

Metal warships steadily landed on the water surface, and following the dark-kind warriors' growls, those odd-looking non-humankind warriors immediately began working. Water-tank-thick metal chains were thrown out from both sides of each warship, as magic formations shone dazzlingly on the countless ships. Those thick metal chains accurately flew into those magic formations, causing loud series of clangs.

Exquisitely designed locks secured those chains tight, connected those metal warships, and quickly formed a metal great wall.

Four-thousand metal warships formed a square, and after all the warships were connected, a tens of miles square floating fort slowly descended from the halo.

One fort, two forts, three forts...

Not long after, whole thirty-six metal floating forts descended from the sky and landed on the surface of the water. They raised great waves and caused muffled, thunder-like booms.

Dishi Yanmo, who was in charge of this new-world-conquering mission from Dishi Family, stood on the tallest watchtower of a floating fort. He frowned, looked around and said, "A pure...water world... Hmm, simple, but the risk is lower than those complicated large worlds, by at least three-hundred percent."

Flicking his finger in the sky, a large sphere of pure water power quickly gathered on his finger, soon condensing into a polyhedral crystal piece.

Dishi Yanmo put this bean-sized crystal piece under his nose and sniffed, instantly showing a wild joy on his face, "Without any impurity, the water power in this world is perfectly pure...Great Blood Moon, not even a grain of dust exists in the air. Such a pure world, if any water crystal mine exists..."

Large chains roared out from each edge of the floating fort, reaching to the fort next to it

These forts were connected to each other, then to the surrounding warships, and soon, thirty-six floating forts and four-thousand metal warships formed a tremendous, square-shaped, metal frame.

Xiu Clan masters walked out from those forts and threw out numerous metal balls, which were thickly covered in complicated spell symbols. These metal balls expanded swiftly along with a sharp metal clashing noise, quickly transforming into three-hundred meters wide square metal boards, loudly clanging against each other while falling down from the sky.

Shackles existed under each metal board, interlocking tightly and allowing them to match together perfectly. As these metal boards landed on the water surface, the space between those floating forts and metal warships turned into ground paved by metal boards, after which, countless dark-kind and non-humankind warriors and slaves hurriedly walked out and began building barracks.

All barracks were prepared with magic, and in no time, lines of metal barracks landed on the ground. Thus, a great metal fort stood on the vast water surface of Pan Jia world in merely a couple of hours.

Looking down from the sky, this thousand miles long metal fort glowed brightly in this dim world, especially those erect eyes

floating upon every divine tower in those floating forts. Occasionally, a blood-red stream of light would flash across the sky, bright enough to lighten up the area with a radius of tens of thousands of miles.

Large troops of Jia Clan warriors led great numbers of dark-kind and non-humankind warriors and slaves, trod on metal plates and flew in all directions. They growled at each other, continually reporting their discoveries.

Water, water, water, boundless water. The frontal troop had already reached over ten-thousand miles away, but still, they saw nothing but water. Not even a single leaf was found floating on the water.

Around ten-thousand miles away from where Dishi Family people landed, Ao Li stood on an iceberg he created with magic. He narrowed his eyes while looking at the blue-cyan ice mirror, that was decorated with nine dragon embossments, in front of him.

The surface of the mirror was rippling like water, through which, Ao Li saw every single move made by those Dishi Family people, including those metal worships that descended from the sky, and the army that built an enormous metal fort on the water.

Tens of ten meters tall dragon warrior commanders, who were with human bodies and dragon heads, stood behind Ao Li. They were wearing heavy armors and blood-red cloaks, having their arms crossed before their chests. Their large dragon heads were slightly raised, letting streams of warm steam puff out of their nostrils. They looked proud, as if they were the most powerful beings in the whole universe, and no one was worth for them to even take a short glance at.

For countless years, every time when powerful beings among the dragon-kind came out for a mission in large groups, they all looked like this.

Especially the two dragon-kind members that stood on both sides

of Ao Li, they were the tallest and sturdiest ones among them all, and the power vibration released from them was especially strong and prehistorical. Their scales were mottled, vaguely showing the long years that they had lived through. Their dragon horns were dagger-sharp; apparently, those horns were sharpened by countless times of fighting and killing.

Dragon warriors stood around the two of them looked especially proud as well, but when their eyes occasionally landed on these two especially strong ones, their pupils would sightly shrink. Traces of respect, and even fear, would subconsciously show on the faces of those proud dragons as well.

These were two prehistorical dragons. Among the dragon-kind, they had special titles as dragon kings, and their positions were only slightly lower than the dragon emperor. Not to mention their magic powers, in mere terms of physical strength, these two dragon kings, who had the titles of Corpse Mountain Dragon King and Blood Sea Dragon King, could rival human Supreme Magi.

Corpse Mountain Dragon King and Blood Sea Dragon King were brothers. Their titles came from the countless living beings they had slaughtered during the past years.

"Kid, I can strangle all these chickens to death myself. What are you waiting for?" A while later, Corpse Mountain Dragon King abruptly began talking.

"Hmm, your Grandpa Corpse Mountain can strangle all of them to death, alone, but I can do that with only one hand!" Blood Sea Dragon King laughed proudly, "Only one of these non-humankind beings is powerful, hehe. He seems to be an old friend of ours, doesn’t he?"

Ao Li held his hands behind, showing his teeth while looking at that mirror, and responded, "Grandpas, be patient. You will get your chance to kill. I am just waiting for them to spread their military forces all out, then we will destroy their portals and leave

them no way to run."

Corpse Mountain Dragon King and Blood Sea Dragon King both had their eyes shining as they said, "Kill every last one of them, such things, we like!"

All dragon warrior leaders curved their mouth corners upwards. They were so arrogant that they had been seeing that Yu Clan army as a group of vulnerable chickens and dogs.

Chapter 993: Ignore

Ao Li raised the long spear in his hands, and following him, nearly a hundred dragon warrior commanders standing behind him roared resonantly.

Whole ten thousand pure-blood dragon warriors transformed into their original shapes of hundreds of meters long dragons, rising into the sky as they wielded their sharp claws towards the vast water. Silently, thousands of meters tall waves were raised within a blink of an eye.

Ten-thousand flood dragon warriors, who were over six meters tall, were wearing heavy armors and had sharp blades held in their hands. Mounted on armed see horses, they were treading on those waves while roaring thunderously. The strong dragon power was released from these flood dragon warriors, condensing into large watery clouds, puffing up into the air. These transformed into a thousands of meters wide, dark cloud, drifting in the sky.

Thin bolts of lightning emerged from the dark cloud, while blade-sharp gusts of wind were blowing out from it. Muffled thunders could be heard without an end. Meanwhile, black gusts of wind screamed ear-piercingly, and thunder-like warrior roars came out from the deep ocean of Pan Jia world, in a chorus.

Square formations popped out from the water one after another, each with ten-thousand warriors. Shrimp warriors, shark warriors, whale warriors, turtles, electric eels...All kinds of odd shaped water-kind spirit creatures rushed up to those enormous waves and lined up orderly while releasing dense, watery mist.

God knew how many warriors did Ao Li bring to Pan Jia world. All these warriors were under his direct command, and countless ten-thousand-warrior square formations lined perfectly on the waves. The edge of this great army was indiscernible.

This was a regular water-kind army under the command of the

dragon-kind. With the dragon-kind's wealth, the armors and weapons used by these warriors were all top-grade. Those aquatic warriors defeated by Ji Hao, Yao Meng, and other human earls back in Pan Gu world couldn’t be compared with these water-kind warriors brought by Ao Li.

The dragon-kind was extraordinarily wealthy, and had an unimaginably great hidden power. Back in the ancient heaven, powerful ancient divine dragons used to hold important positions. After the heaven fell, those greedy dragons had gotten quite a lot of treasures out of the heaven.

At the moment, lined up in front of the water-kind army were a whole three-thousand thunder chariots. These chariots used to be driven by Gods from the department of thunder of the ancient heaven. Every single chariot was surrounded by dazzling thunderbolts, as it was condensed from pure thunder power.

Each chariot was around three-hundred meters in size, with three layers of countless milestone-sized thunder spell symbols sparkling on it, releasing bowl-sized thunderbolts. The sizzling noise vibrated the world. Following an ear-piercing noise, a bolt of thunder would occasionally fall on the water surface, and thunderbolts would immediately spread out swiftly through the water. Within the area of tens of miles, a giant quantity of water would be evaporated.

"Kill!" Ao Li roared, rushing to a thunder chariot while wielding his long spear.

The three-thousand thunder chariots tore the space apart and showed up directly in front of those patrolling Jia Clan warriors who trod on metal plates. A bright stream of light was left in the sky.

Following a roar of Ao Li, tens of cold beams of light were raised by that long spear in his hands, while over ten heavily armored Jia Clan warriors howled in pain, and had their chests penetrated by

it. Countless bolts of thunder burst from that spear and destroyed the strong life-force of these Jia Clan warriors within a single moment, then tore their bodies into pieces, which then fell into the water.

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

Nearly a hundred dragon warrior commanders each stood on a thunder chariot, wielding their divine weapons, which had been creating dreadfully great power vibrations. They were madly launching attacks, with blood-red, glowing pairs of eyes.

In this area, over a thousand Jia Clan warriors and tens of thousands of dark-kind and non-humankind slave warriors had completely no power of resistance. They were being chopped into pieces by these violent dragons as easily as chopping melons.

Tens of thousands of meters tall waves crushed down towards the metal fort of the non-humankind, which had just been built upon the water surface. Under the control of these water-kind warriors, the crystal clear waves had turned black, looking like enormous mountains. In the metal fort, countless Jia Clan warriors leaped into the sky, while tens of thousands of different sized Blood Moon divine towers suddenly started glowing.

Buzz! The erect blood-red eyes floating upon all those divine towers opened simultaneously, releasing dense blood-red light streams with varied width, from three meters to the size of a mountain. Those blood-red lights dazzled out and struck into those roaring waves.

The blood-red streams exploded and split those waves up, also destroying those ten-thousand-warrior square formations on top of those waves. Among those water-kind warriors, the strongest ones could rival Senior Magi, while the weakest ones were just the same as ordinary human beings. None of these aquatic creatures could ever survive that blood-red light.

However, Ao Li and his people hadn’t been expecting these weak

aquatic creatures under their commands to do much.

Thousands of water spheres popped out from a distance away, within which, water streams surged, and a bloody scent spread out. Meanwhile, long shrill howls reached straight into the sky. An overwhelming pressure, which belonged to prehistorical monsters, crushed down in all directions.

One, two, three...A hundred, a thousand, ten thousand...

Ten-thousand octopuses that were over ninety-thousand-meter-long reached their enormous bodies out from underwater. They opened their mouthparts, and each took a long and deep breath. Then, the blood and broken body pieces of those killed aquatic warriors rose into the sky and flew into their mouths.

After these octopuses with terrifying power vibrations swallowed so many bodies and spirit blood, from the middle of their bodies, an odd-shaped, translucent tentacle slowly moved, reaching out of the water.

Along with a long-lasting, ear-piercing swishing noise, fifteen meters wide transparent eggs were released from the middle tentacle of each giant octopus. In the air, these eggs quickly hatched while they were still flying, and next, countless hundreds of meters long little octopuses with the power vibrations as great as peak-level Senior Magi rushed into the army of the non-humankind while screaming.

Those long tentacles slapped and coiled, as hundreds of thousands of little octopuses started an intense fight against those non-humankind warriors.

From behind, a streak of fiery light flashed over. That was Feng Qinxin, as she stood on the back of a seven-colored phoenix, screaming to Ao Li, "Ao Li, that kid Ji Hao sent a message. Human beings are suffering a massive flood, and many water-kind creatures have been causing trouble all over the world. Do you think we should help them?"

Hearing Feng Qinxin, Ao Li pierced his long spear into the chest of a weak non-humankind slave, then swung his arm aside and beheaded a dark-kind salve warrior. Next, he slightly paused and shouted ‘kill’, leading his army marching to the non-humankind army.

Feng Qinxin curved her pinky limps downwards, then narrowed her eyes and smiled coldly as she murmured, "Hmm, I knew it... Alright, our dear Earl Yao Ji Hao, you shall pray for yourself. The humankind is suffering a disaster...Hehe, asking our phoenix-kind and dragon-kind for help without paying a great price, who would save them for nothing?"

"Let’s go. Keep looking around. I don’t believe that no useful resources can be found in this world but water!" Dishi Yanmo stood on the tallest watchtower, carelessly crumbling a blood-red crystal in his hand.

"Take the expeditionary force and return to Pan Gu world to prepare for war? What a joke! I worked so hard for this opportunity. I have such a great elite force under my command now...Dishi Yanluo, my dear brother, how can I ever give this great army back to you?"

Turning around, Dishi Yanmo looked at a non-humankind salve kneeling on the ground and said blandly, "Send the message back. We’re attacked by the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind. The fight is intense and we...have no chance to retreat."

Chapter 994: The Rise of the Water-Kind

In Pan Zhuo world, nine dim suns floated in the sky, seeming to be extremely far away from the ground, weakly glowing with a faint light. On the ground, dark-green mountains were barely lightened up by the sunlight through dark-green toxic clouds, just like those dark-green hills, rivers, grasslands, plain areas...

This world was filled with the color of dark-green, which looked quite unsettling. Countless types of toxins mixed together, being processed under the effects of the natural laws of this world for countless years, then turned into this weird dark-green color.

Mountains, hills, rivers, plains, these terrains were common in Pan Gu world. Here in Pan Zhuo world, they occupied around thirty percent of the world.

On these mountains, hills and plain areas, lived countless odd types of poisonous bugs, birds and beasts. They released thin poisonous gases from their mouths, that had been rising into the sky and condensing into faint, dark-green poisonous clouds.

Numerous strangely-shaped highly poisonous serpents had been wriggling around.They raised their heads from time to time and excitedly spurted vividly colorful streams of poisonous mist towards the sky, creating rainbows under the dim sunlight.

The other half of Pan Zhuo world was occupied by water, boundless light-green water. It looked completely lifeless, and had colorful foams drifting on its surface.

Countless poisonous creatures lived in this water area, with all kinds of toxins. These creatures had been crazily devouring those poisonous floating grasses and algae, which were growling rapidly in the water. These creatures also devoured each other; the bigger ones fed on the smaller ones, the fierce ones fed on the mild ones, and the living ones fed on the dead ones...

Same as the army under Dishi Yanmo’s command, a large-scale non-humankind metal-city floated on the sticky poisonous sea.

The army commander of the expeditionary force from Nether Moon, Fan Di, who was the most powerful one among the entire Fan Family aside of Fan Hai, had been standing on a watchtower in the metal fort at the moment, pleasantly breathing the toxic air.

Fan Di was pale and scrawny, and looked like a zombie. He laughed with a creepy hissing voice as he crumbled a white messaging crystal in his hand.

"Bring my expeditionary force back to Pan Gu world? Hmm, it seems that Fan Hai has encountered a true trouble." Fan Di narrowed his eyes and murmured to himself. "Alright, alright, what a magical world! I’ve just sent out by expeditionary troops for a couple of days, how can a trouble happen so soon?"

Proudly raising his head, Fan Di laughed, "I like troubles, I really do. Troubles mean death, and death...The great Nether Moon, death, sweet death... I can’t wait!"

A few Nether Moon warrior commanders standing behind Fan Di excitedly opened their erect eyes and let spheres of grey mist drift out of those erect eyes.

Hoarse and deep horns sounded while Fan Di giving out his orders. Except for a small number of expeditionary troops from Nether Moon staying in Pan Zhuo world, the main force returned to Pan Gu world, waiting for Fan Hai’s orders.

When the first enormous metal warship glowed with a gray-white light and slowly rose from the ground, a stream of dark-green liquid surged over from a thousand miles away and struck on the head of the ship.

Following a sizzling noise, thousands of dark-kind and non-humankind salve warriors standing on the deck screamed in pain, as their bodies quickly melted down in the dark-green liquid and

turned into puddled of black blood.

Streams of highly poisonous liquid spurted over from a distance away, pouring on the fleet of Nether Moon like a heavy rain. Defensive magic formations were not triggered, because metal warships didn’t suffer a great damage from the poisonous liquid. However, dark-kind warriors and non-humankind slaves standing on decks were almost wiped out.

Fan Di and the group of warrior commanders raised their heads in shock, and saw tens of tremendous serpents slowly reaching their bodies out from the sticky seawater hundreds of miles away.

These enormous creatures were colorful, with their whole bodies covered in dark-green poisonous mist. Unlike ordinary snakes and serpents, these serpents had fork-shaped, curved tails that looked like hooks. Clearly, these were hook snakes, famous for their deathly poisons venom back in Pan Gu world.

Following the strange water clattering noise, thousands of meters tall, green-colored waves rose from the sticky and poisonous sea of Pan Zhuo world. Countless oddly-shaped aquatic and poisonous creatures trod on those waves, releasing toxic mists and gases, marching towards the non-humankind army.

A nearly hundred-mile long, enormous hook snake coiled in the air, staring at Fan Di coldly and fiercely.

"Lord Gong Gong said that since you’re already here, don’t leave. This place will be your burial ground."

Fan Di grinned scornfully, looking at that enormous hook snake as he responded blandly, "Gong Gong? Gong Gong had a senior minister under his command who is a hook snake, called Snake Gou. I believe that is you, right? You don’t think that you can defeat the children of the great Nether Moon, do you?"

Snake Gou smiled, opened his jaws and let down a poisonous rain as he taunted, "In Pan Gu world, I dared not to fight a face-to-face

battle against you. But this is Pan Zhuo world, silly non-humankind monsters. This is Pan Zhuo world, and we have lived in here for hundreds of years! We are more familiar with the natural laws of this world."

Snake Gou laughed out loud in pride, "More importantly, during the past hundreds of years, we have created countless adorable babies in here!"

A buzzing noise came from all directions, following which, giant groups of poisonous insects that looked like dense dark-green clouds, overwhelmingly crushed down on Fan Di's army.

Waves rose one after another, treading on which, all kinds of poisonous aquatic creatures who had cultivated themselves into spiritual animals wielded their roughly crafted weapons, showing their sharp teeth as they marched along the waves.

Fan Di looked at the formidable water-kind army, took out a messaging crystal and sent what he saw back to Pan Gu world along with a message, 'Tell Fan Hai that I've encountered a small trouble here, and might not be able to bring my army back to help him."

At almost the same time when Fan Di's army was suddenly attacked by a water-kind army in Pan Zhuo world, in the rust-red Pan Shi world, sky-devouring waves rose in the rust-red ocean which occupied seventy to eighty percent of the world's total acreage and possessed a great corrosive ability.

Countless aquatic creatures with thick scales stood on those waves, with their mounts opened and releasing sharp streams of corrosive water. They were striking on the non-humankind army from High Moon, which was under the command of A Xiudi.

Countless metal warships and tens of metal floating forts had faint smokes rising from them in the corrosive rain. These metal warships and forts had been corroding slowly layer by layer, and the decks of many warships already had holes on them.

Even worse, the armors worn by High Moon warriors had been weakening due to the corrosive water. A Xiudi roared hoarsely in rage, and helplessly sent a message back to Liang Zhu City, telling his people that he and his army had no chancee to return safely at all.

Pan Zhuo, Pan Shi, Pan Li, Pan He...

Except for Pan Jia world, where Ao Li and Feng Qinxin were present, water-kind armies emerged in all of the rest eleven worlds provided to the eleven families in power by Dishi Cha and entangled those non-humankind armies.

Not even a single non-humankind warrior managed to return to Liang Zhu City!

Chapter 995: Unite by Marriage

In Liang Zhu City, all emperors in power were totally irritated because of the messages they received from their expeditionary armies in the twelve new worlds.

In Pu Ban City, everyone seemed to be happy. People were walking on the streets with quick pace, while showing bright smiles on their faces.

Jingles could be heard everywhere, as busy people filled every corner of Pu Ban City, and everybody was smiling. They were digging foundations, building pillars and walls, roofing their houses. Many houses were destroyed by the flood earlier, and at the moment, people were rebuilding their homeland.

Groups of Magi in black robes had been walking slowly on the land of Pu Ban City in an ordered, long line. They were waving the long streamers in their hands while incanting a blessing spell. Wherever these Magi walked past, colorful strands of mist would rise from the soft mud and be absorbed by their long streamers.

The toxins brought by the long-lasting rain were dispelled by these Magi from the Magi Palace. In addition to that, Magi with earth power had been casting their magics, making the soaked and dried earth rich and fertile again.

Everyone was busy, with passion and hope.

From these busy people, one could hear things from time to time.

"You Chong Clan is going to unite with Tushan Family by marriage... The brave deserve the fair!"

"Tell me about it! For a man like Minister Si Wen Ming, only such a fair lady can be good enough!"

"Haha, I saw Tushan Princess with my own eyes, that beautiful girl," This man clicked his tongue and continued, "She is just like a legendary goddess."

"Eh? Like you've seen a goddess before. But, that girl is truly beautiful. I assume only a hero like Minister Si Wen Ming can be good enough for a girl like that, right?"

The thoughts of these ordinary human beings were just simple and honest.

Si Xi had stopped the endless train with water-sealing magic formations and saved countless people from the disaster. Therefore, everyone was so grateful to him. Si Wen Ming had been serving as the manager of the Magi Palace all these years. With his efforts, the Magi Palace was growing stronger and more influential, and the humankind had benefited from it without a doubt. Therefore, people were grateful to Si Wen Ming as well.

In the eyes of these simple human beings, Si Wen Ming was a hero, and he deserved a breathtakingly beautiful woman to share his life with. They would live happily ever after, and have a bunch of healthy adorable babies; these were the simple good wishes of ordinary people.

However, the feelings of those clan leaders who had been guiding their people for the reconstruction works in Pu Ban City were clearly much more complicated.

Si Xi had a great reputation, and so did Si Wen Ming, in addition, they both had made remarkable achievements. You Chong Clan was a top-grade large human clan, originated from the bloodline of Emperor Xuanyuan, this clan could even be count as royal. Not many ordinary human beings knew about Tushan Family, but which one of those high-level human beings didn't know that Tushan Family was actually as wealthy as the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind? According to the legends, Tushan Family had a tight connection with the kind of sky fox. Tushan Family people inherited the smartness and cunningness of sky foxes, which was the reason why they were the best businessmen in the world. Not a single human clan could ever be compared with them in terms of business skills.

Through countless years of accumulation, the wealthiness of Tushan Family had reached an unimaginable level, such that people said even their barns were filled with gold. But more importantly, Tushan Family had their own forging factory that produced armors and weapons of good qualities. However, the most important thing was that after Tushan old man became a partner of Ji Hao, Tushan family craftsmen and blacksmiths were luckily guided by those Xiu Clan masters that Ji Hao purchased from the non-humankind. Thus, the quality of weapons and armors produced by Tushan Family was much better than before.

Nearly inexhaustible financial resources, countless mines and the forging factory, all these together meant that Tushan Family could have as many armaments as they wanted, not to mention the fact that the quality of those armaments was much higher than the ordinary ones.

Si Xi and his son, Si Wen Ming, they headed a top-grade large human clan and a good network. Many top-grade human clans were supporters of Si Wen Ming. These large human clans never lacked brave warriors, but all clans lacked strong armors and sharp weapons!

The marriage of Si Wen Ming and Tushan Princess was a marriage of countless elite warriors and good-quality armaments!

This was huge. A well-equipped human warrior could at least defeat five same-level warriors with low-grade equipments, this was a proven fact.

"Marquis Chong Si Xi has just made a great contribution!"

"Indeed, no one can compete him and his son for reputation now."

"Hmm, if Gong Gong Wuyou and Zhu Rong Tianming were still alive, probably..."

"Why are you mentioning those two useless idiots? All in all,

after You Chong Clan unites with Tushan Family, those kids pushed up by all the other clans to compete for the throne of the human emperor won't be happy."

Similar conversations happened in every part of Pu Ban City. People who were on Si Wen Ming's side were naturally happy and delighted; they even walked faster than the others. People with neutral positions felt nothing, as all these had nothing to do with them. Therefore, they were simply expecting the wedding. As for the ones who were against Si Wen Ming, they had been anxiously dashing around these days, and no one knew what were they up to.

In Tushan Palace at Pu Ban City, Tushan Princess was wearing a long white silk dress, with a warm red long slip beneath it. She sat straight in a large armchair, with her hands on her knees, slightly lowering her head without saying a word.

She was stunningly beautiful without a doubt. But that elegance shown by her from the inside was more attractive. She was like a warm, flawless pearl with a magical glow; even every single hair and slight move of her seemed to be perfect.

Si Wen Ming sat in front of Tushan Princess, seeming to be a bit shy. From time to time, he raised his head and took a glance at Tushan Princess, then turned around and looked at the few elders sitting next to him.

Emperor Shun was sitting aside with a few elders in a line; they were invited as witnesses.

Si Xi and Tushan old man sat before the group of witnesses, facing Si Wen Ming and Tushan Princess. Si Xi was smiling, while Tushan old man was grinning so happily that he couldn't even close his mouth at the moment.

Si Wen Ming's face twitched as he took another quick glance at Tushan Princess's beautiful face, then twisted his body on the chair, as if his butt was on fire, making him so uncomfortable.

According to Si Xi’s suggestion, as the humankind was still threatened by the passed flood, there should not be an extravagant wedding. Instead, a few highly respected human elders would be invited as witnesses, then a simple small-scale banquet would be held to celebrate.

Tushan old man accepted Si Xi’s suggestion, and today was the day for these two clans to unite by the marriage of Si Wen Ming and Tushan Princess.

Si Wen Ming had always been a forthright and straightforward, but today, he seemed to be bashful. He did not have a clear mind at the moment either, as he couldn’t even describe his feelings right now.

Outside the building, Man Man was holding Yemo Shanye’s hand, while the two of them sneakily stood by the door, leaning their heads and looking at Tushan Princess’s blushed face.

A while later, Yemo Shanye chuckled and said, "Uncle Si Wen Ming is shy, hehe... So interesting!"

Man Man laughed, slapped straight on Yemo Shanye’s butt and responded, "We’ll see if you’re going to be shy as well when you get married!"

Man Man slapped her butt so loudly that it almost made Yemo Shanye leap up from the ground. She turned around, popped out her eyes and stared at Man Man.

Man Man carelessly looked back at Yemo Shanye, as if nothing had happened at all. As these two girls were about to start a not so intense fight, a vicious voice came from a distance away.

"Tushan Princess...I love you so much. But today, you’re marrying yourself to someone else?"

Chapter 996: Snatching the Bride

When that voice came, Man Man's eyes suddenly shone. Her beautiful black eyes suddenly turned into a pair of burning rubies, dazzling with a red glow that people couldn't even look at directly. Instantly, the facial expression on Man Man's tender face changed hugely, as her pair of eyebrows raised like two fierce flood dragons in excitement.

"Snatching the bride, someone is snatching the bride! Yeah!!"

Man Man laughed out wildly, her pair of eyes narrowed to curved lines. Bright fiery light spurted out from them, and even twisted the air before her face.

"Snatching the bride?" Yemo Shanye looked at Man Man confusedly and asked, "What does that mean? Why snatch the bride? Man Man, why are you so excited?"

"That! That! That!" Man Man excitedly threw another slap on Yemo Shanye's round and tight booty, then quickly rubbed her palms and began explaining this strange wedding custom of Southern Wasteland clans with a low voice.

Snatching the bride was a wedding custom for all Southern Wasteland clans!

Frankly speaking, Southern Wasteland girls were all strong and muscular with wheat colored skins. Not many of them were like Ji Hao's mother, Qing Fu, who was so slim and had snow-white skin. Southern Wasteland warriors, especially those powerful elites, they were simple, straightforward and honest. They believed in the most original law of the jungle — The most powerful one can have the best hunting ground, the best preys and the most beautiful woman!

Therefore, during the past thousands of centuries, a strange wedding custom emerged among the Southern Wasteland clans —

Snatching the bride!

When a well-known beautiful girl got married, large groups of single elite warriors from her clan and surrounding clans would always come to the wedding with their brothers and clansmen, and they would beat up the bridegroom. They would hurt him so badly, even disabling him from recovering. Then, those single elite warriors would fight each other, and at last, the most powerful warrior could bring the girl home, letting the girl carry his children for him!

This was the most primitive and bloody version of snatching the bride. By now, ‘snatching a bride’ had gradually become a special display of splendor. When a girl from a large clan got marries, without enough numbers of outstanding single young men coming with their brothers and clansmen to try to snatch the bride, the bride herself and people from her clan and the bridegroom’s clan would all feel humiliated!

A strong warrior should be able to defeat all elite young men who came to snatch the bride, and successfully marry the girl he loved, so he could be honored.

The more people came to try to snatch the bride, the more could the bride prove her own excellence. The more elite young men, who came to snatch the bride, could a bridegroom defeat, the more could he prove his own powerfulness, and the power of his clan.

"I thought no one would come to snatch the bride at the wedding of uncle Wen Ming and sister Tushan." yelled Man Man in excitement, "After all, this is Midland, this is Pu Ban City. Things might be different from the way they are in our Southern Wasteland!"

Laughing out loud, Man Man’s long hair even rose into the air. Thin streams of fiery light spurted out from the roots of her hair and soon turned her hair glowing red. A great heat was released from her head. That her little head was like a torch, sending up a

meters tall flakes of fire.

Yemo Shanye was slightly annoyed. She took a few steps aside, looked at Man Man and asked in a low voice, "Eh? So when you marry to Earl Yao?"

Man Man narrowed her eyes, seriously nodded and said, "So my Abba told me that before Ji Hao is powerful enough, he won't let me marry him. My Abba has already given his word that when I marry to Ji Hao, all top one-thousand clans in Southern Wasteland have to send a hundred top-grade young men to snatch the bride. Otherwise, my Abba wouldn't be happy!"

Yemo Shanye wildly opened her mouth and eyes in shock, and stared at Man Man. Quite a while later, she murmured to herself, "Lord Ji Hao is...so poor!"

Man Man thumped her chest rumblingly, as if she was beating a drum, then she raised her head and said in a high spirit, "I knew someone will come to snatch the bride. Therefore, according to the rules of our Southern Wasteland, I've prepared! Haha, come on, let's go, let's go have a look. See who's trying to snatch our bride!"

Man Man and Yemo Shanye weren't talking with low voices at all. Therefore, everyone sitting in the hall had heard every word they said. Emperor Shun's face twitched slightly, then he laughed and said, "Hehe, be the son-in-law of Zhu Rong, hehe!"

Emperor Shun seemed to realize that he was somehow taking pleasure in Ji Hao's misfortune. But as the human emperor, he shouldn't be like this. Therefore, he raised his arm and wiped his mouth corner hard.

Si Xi's face turned dark. This was a lucky day, the wedding day of Si Wen Ming and Tushan Princess. An important great ceremony would also be held in this day for the uniting of You Chong Clan and Tushan Family. But suddenly, someone came to make trouble...

This wasn’t Southern Wasteland, no such thing as snatching the bride existed in here. Therefore, if someone tried to snatch a bride in Pu Ban City, he should be causing trouble on purpose.

Si Xi unpleasantly took a glance at Tushan old man, then looked at Tushan Princess.

Tushan old man raised his right hand, also with a sulky face. He slowly straightened his fingers, then wielded his hand downwards, as if that were a blade. Then, he said, "This little girl of mine, she was spoiled ever since she was little. Tens of maids followed her at all times. Wen Ming, she is marrying you now, so you can’t spoil her like we did. Housekeeping, bearing children, those will be her responsibilities. You can be strict with her if you have to."

Si Xi’s tense looked eased instantly.

When he glanced at Tushan old man and Tushan Princess, he meant something particularly. He was questioning Tushan Princess, as he wondered if Tushan Princess had a lover who now showed up to make a scene.

Tushan old man’s response was smart. He told Si Xi that Tushan Princess was followed by tens of maids every since she was little. Without question, she would never do anything to degrade her family.

Seeing Tushan old man’s hand movement, Si Xi laughed out loud, "Hahaha, it seems someone is joking with us today. In this case..."

Before Si Xi finished his speech, Man Man’s loud and proud yells could be heard from a distance.

"Nah! Do you even understand the rules? If you want to snatch the bride, you shall pass these few barriers set by your Lord Man Man first!"

"According to our Southern Wasteland rules, the ones come to snatch the bride have to win the drinking competition at first.

Your Lord Man Man am kindly telling you that the booze you're going to drink is infused with dragon-drunken grass, god-loosing fruit, bone-soften flowers, blood-breaking veins and the other ninety-five kinds of herbs. A single cup of this booze can put down an ordinary human being, who might never wake back up!"

"Come, Yu Mu, you go first. Get these boys!"

Outside Tushan Palace, Yi Tian was furiously staring at Man Man, who blocked his way. Behind Yi Tian, nearly ten-thousand Eastern Wasteland archers slightly lowered their upper bodies and carried their longbows, seeming ready to launch an attack at any time.

"Little girl, move away!"

Looking at Man Man, Shaosi, Yemo Shanye, Yu Mu and the others standing in the way, Yi Tian shouted coldly and pushed Man Man on a shoulder.

Chapter 997: Crazy and Fierce

Yu Tian pushed quickly as eye-piercing thunderbolts emerged on his fingertips, along with a deafening thunder that disabled people from standing steadily. Within the sizzling thunderbolts, his right palm turned weirdly cyan-purple and translucent, looking like a crystal piece condensed from thunderbolts.

Within the area three-hundred meters around him, the air was suddenly filled with tiny electric bolts that made Man Man, Shaosi and Yemo Shanye's long hair stand straight up. Inch-long purple electric bolts extended out from the ends of their hair, while a strong numbness slowed their reaction speed by a couple of times.

"Ah!" Man Man didn't think that Yi Tian would completely go against the rules of Southern Wasteland. This was snatching the bride. How could he attack without saying a word?

A raging fire was released from Man Man's body. Meanwhile, a flame-shaped divine spell symbol glowed between her eyebrows. The glow of the golden-red divine spell symbol spread quickly out, as beautiful and complicated golden-red symbols emerged on Man Man's skin one after another. Her body was burning like an erupting volcano, spreading a despairing and dreadful heat.

"If you don't drink, you don't get to snatch the bride!" Man Man growled deeply while throwing a punch towards Yi Tian's palm.

Man Man's right fist was coiled in raging flames, and that tiny fist was transparent like a glowing ruby. Circles of flame spurted out from it like shooting stars descending from the sky, fiercely striking onto the palm of Yi Tian.

Followed by a thunderous boom, a wave of thunderbolts and streams of flame entangled each other, clashing against each other and causing muffled booms, spreading in all directions. The ground outside Tushan Palace cracked, and the white-jade-paved square was destroyed.

Hundreds of maids standing on the square to welcome guests screamed in fear. They were pushed to the ground by the strong and violent airstreams and rolled all over the ground like balls.

Man Man’s little hand trembled intensely while she stepped back quickly. The fire burning on her body dimmed down suddenly, while a few dazzling thunderbolts drilled into her body through her hand, made her shake without being able to stop.

Yi Shen quivered slightly. The electric bolts coiling on his fingers dimmed a little, then lit back up. Five-foot-long electric bolts dazzled on his right fingers, making loud sizzling and popping noise.

From his long and narrow eyes, a few electric bolts burst, while Yi Tian stared at Man Man with a vicious twisted look and growled, "Piss off!"

Before Man Man could steady her own body, Yi Tian slapped down again towards Man Man’s head. This time, he didn’t want to hurt her. Instead, he wanted to kill her. Without restraining his power at all, he slapped his palm down. The great thunder power he released created dense dark clouds in the sky. All of a sudden, tens of thunderbolts descended from the sky, merged with his palm, and made his move even more effective.

Shaosi put one hand on Man Man’s shoulder and held Yemo Shanye’s hand with another hand, then flashed across the air, teleporting all three of them silently nearly a mile away, from the gate of the palace straight to the door of the hall, where Si Wen Ming and the others sat in.

Yu Mu shouted out loud while raising the large iron pot carried on his back against Yi Tian’s palm attack.

Ear-piercing sizzling noises were generated.

Hundreds of electric bolts burst from the large iron pot, while Yu Mu’s body was penetrated by electric currents that made his body

glow like a torch. The terrifying electric currents drilled into every corner of his body and turned him translucent. Through that translucent body of his, one could clearly see his internal organs of bones.

"It hurts!" Yu Mu screamed, then opened his mouth and sprayed a mouthful of dark-green mist to Yi Tian. "Man Man...You did this to me," shouted Yu Mu, "When you described this snatching the bride thing, you never mentioned that someone might attempt to kill a friend of the bride!"

Bong! Electric bolts lingering on Yu Mu's body exploded as he drew back as quickly as he could while black smoke puffed up from him. His meat-ball-like chubby body had shrunk largely. Obviously, some of his fat was burned out by the electric currents in his body.

The dark-green mist enveloped Yi Tian, but a bright thunderbolt rose from his body, transformed into a flame-shaped thunder force field, and shielded him in the middle. The poisonous mist was burned and gasified by those electric bolts sizzling on Yi Tian's body, turned into streams of colorless, odorless smoke that dissipated in the air.

Following a loud series of noise, Yu Mu took tens of steps back in a row, then finally failed to steady his own body and had his butt thudded on the ground.

"Die!" Yi Tian pointed at Yu Mu and shouted, "Tushan Princess is mine! Whoever dares to touch her will die!"

As he pointed his finger out, electric bolts burst and quickly condensed into a purple transparent arrow. Along with an earth-shaking thunder, the arrow was released and reached to the spot between Yu Mu's eyebrows within a twinkling of an eye, followed by a shrill swishing noise.

A pale, translucent hand abruptly appeared before Yu Mu's eyes and stopped this arrow. That was Taisi, who was just like a ghost,

without showing any signs of life, and had faintly visible, strange air ripples around his body. He seemed to not even exist in the world at all. The arrow condensed from electric bolts disappeared once it touched Taisi's hand, as if he had ever existed.

Taisi largely popped out his completely colorless pale eyes, expressionlessly looking at Yi Tian, and said, "Uncle Wen Ming is more handsome than you...Why did you come to cause trouble?"

Si Wen Ming had just rushed out of the hall. Hearing Taisi, he paused for a second, then rubbed his square, manly and serious face. He had lived for tens of years. Some people said that he had an imperatorial face and some said that he looked reliable. There were some who said he looked older than he actually was, while others even said he looked like his ancestor, Emperor Xuanyuan...

Nevertheless, this was the very first time for someone to say that he was handsome!

Si Wen Ming shook his head with a bitter smile on his face and said loudly, "Taisi, you're not good at close combat, just stay back!"

Taisi grabbed Yu Mu's shoulder. His pale hand was as frigid as ice, that made Yu Mu quiver in coldness. Even his layers of fat began shaking intensely. Taisi swayed slowly, and easily carried Yu Mu, airily drifting to beside Shaosi and Man Man, exactly like a ghost.

Yi Tian raised his head, staring at Si Wen Ming with a pair of dazzling eyes.

"Si Wen Ming! Tushan Princess is mine! I've loved her ever since I was a little kid! She was meant to be mine!"

"I know that Marquis Chong Si Xi has made a major contribution to the humankind, and as his son, you have also become famous. But your achievements cannot take place of love. The thing between Tushan Princess and me is true love! Give Tushan Princess back to me! Give her back to me!"

Yi Tian roared towards the sky, then a pair of purple thunder wings spread behind his body. Next, his entire body transformed into a fierce thunderbolt, striking to the hall. Within the thunderbolt, an enormous thunder roc was faintly visible. Meanwhile, Yi Tian roared ferociously, "Anyone dares to stand in my way will die! I will only marry the Tushan Princess!"

Sideway, Feng Xing’s bright shouts could be heard. He stood on a hill ten miles away, with his bow pulled open.

Pop! Followed by a resonant noise, that divine bow of Feng Xing sent out a beam of golden light, piercing towards Yi Tian’s neck.

Chapter 998: The Dao of Taiji

Beyond the sky of Pan Gu world, in the Chaos, where the time didn't exist...

In the Dachi sky, the exquisite small tower floating above Priest Dachi's head glowed with a bright light, releasing a yellow and black mist that suffused the air. Above his head, a cloud floated, upon which, an elderly priest, a middle-aged priest and a young priest sat with crossed legs. Each had a halo behind their heads, lighting up the entire sky magically and indescribably.

Under the effect of Priest Dachi's immeasurably great power, both the time and space were frozen completely.

A flick of his finger could be same as eternity.

Ji Hao's body was frozen as well, same as the time and space of the Dachi sky. Only his seed of Dao had been quaking intensely. Priest Dachi gazed at Ji Hao's eyes, as endless mysteriousness of the great Dao had been flowing between the former's eyes, rotating like the two parts of Taiji. The Dao of Priest Dachi was way too profound and mysterious, that Ji Hao couldn't even grasp a shadow it.

It was unlike the Dao of Priest Qing Wei, which was detailed yet broad, just like countless flowers blooming on the surface of an ocean, and the life and death of countless living beings existing between those slightly shaking, tender petals.

It was unlike Yu Yu's Dao, which was obvious, like a roaring thunderbolt in dark clouds, that could tear the sky apart and lighten up the darkness of nights. That light happened momentarily, but it could reach straight to eternity.

The Dao of priest Dachi was indescribable. Compared to priest Qing Wei and Priest Yu Yu, Ji Hao somehow felt that priest Dachi had already stepped into a higher level. The term, so-called

‘shapeless grade Dao’ might be created for priest Dachi.

Endless power of Dao surged out from Priest Dachi’s eyes into Ji Hao’s eyes, into his seed of Dao of sun through his eyes, and then merging with his entire body. Ji Hao trembled slightly. He couldn’t understand priest Dachi’s Dao, but priest Dachi had been forcibly merging his Dao into Ji Hao’s body, even by risking losing a part of his own power.

Ji Hao felt like an extremely dumb pig, while priest Dachi was a knowledgable professor, who had been trying his best to teach him to read and write. The pig couldn’t write, but priest Dachi grabbed its hoof and drew lines on the moist muddy ground over and over again. Once, twice, three, four times, five times, six times, seven times...

After billions of times of repetitions, the dumb pig finally learned to write the character ‘one’, which was a simple straight line!

All of Ji Hao’s treasures were taken out. Yu Yu and Qing Wei took those treasures behind priest Dachi’s palace of Dao. There was nothing but a thin wooden wall between Yu Yu, Qing Wei, Priest Dachi, and Ji Hao.

The wooden wall was dark and mottled, thickly covered in countless strange patterns. Every one of these patterns seemed to be representing an eternal principle of Pan Gu world. From behind this wooden wall, a sense of power that was even stronger, more profound, mysterious and indescribable than the sense of power of priest Dachi himself, spread out. That feeling was strange...If priest Dachi were a vast, immeasurably broad, starry void, the thing behind that wooden wall would be the universe, that had included this starry void.

Ji Hao had a rough idea about the identity of this being. However, he dared not to say it out, not to even think about it. He could neither talk nor think about that dreadful being.

He had only been staring at priest Dachi without blinking his

eyes. He stared at those eyes of Priest Dachi, letting the essence of Priest Dachi's Dao slowly merge with his whole body.

Except the golden bridge, all treasures of Ji Hao were removed from his body, including the Pan Xi divine mirror, nine suns devil-destroying sword, nine suns spear, nine suns stainless cloak, immortal sun streamer, deep dark soul cauldron, pre-world Liu Ren bottle, dark killing flags, Moho staff and all those treasures with different grades that he snatched from enemies or gained through other means.

From pre-world supreme treasures to pre-world spirit treasures, after-world divine weapons, holy weapons, Divine-Magus-level treasures, Magus-King-level treasures, even Senior-level weapons and those strange products of the non-humankind were taken away.

All Ji Hao had, even those ordinary magic crystals, were taken away by Yu Yu and Qing Wei, except one.

The small cauldron surrounded by five-colored flames in Ji Hao's lower abdomen, Priest Dachi, Priest Qing Wei and Priest Yu Yu joined hands and searched through Ji Hao's body. However, they still failed to discover the cauldron in Ji Hao's lower belly.

Ji Hao didn't know what Priest Qing Wei and Yu Yu were going to do with those treasures of his, but he could sense something from behind the thin wooden wall. He sensed an unspeakably strong power vibration from behind that wall, as if a giant alchemy stove existed in there, with a raging fire burning inside.

Gradually, Ji Hao felt that his body was as light as a cloud.

Under Priest Dachi's generous cultivation, Ji Hao's seed of Dao of sun had gone through a magical transformation. Surrounding the seed of Dao of sun, magic chains condensed from the great Dao of sun melted one after another, transforming into warm streams of red glow that merged with the seed of Dao of sun.

The seed of Dao of sun grew larger and larger, turned dimmer and dimmer, and slowly turned red from golden.

Apart from the purely positive power of Dao, streams of extremely negative power silently emerged and combined with the positive power, just like the fire merging with water. The fierceness generated by Ji Hao's cultivation based on the great Dao of sun after he reached a certain level was slowly restrained.

"Ji Hao, regarding the worldly affairs, you shall do your best, but no need to insist on doing what you can't do." Priest Dachi's voice abruptly resounded in Ji Hao's spiritual space, "If things are going well, you can do whatever you want. If not, you shall know when to retreat...The great Dao is all in your mind, you have to remember this!"

Priest Dachi slowly reached out a finger and gently flicked between Ji Hao's eyebrows.

Buzz! Nine clear clouds rose from Ji Hao's head in a row and merged together, holding up a, hundreds of meters radius red sun. This sun was warm, yet without any dazzling glow, seeming to be even more magical and mysterious than the seed of Dao of sun.

Ji Hao clearly felt that his primordial spirit had been through a fundamental transformation.

Behind Priest Dachi, behind that thin wooden wall, a slight humming noise came from the palace of Dao. Soon, a few streams of light flew out, quickly hovering around Ji Hao's body.

A mist-like defensive magic cloak that was black and white in color, called the Taiji cloak.

An eight feet long, sharp sword, as sharp as a bolt of lightning, flickering in the air, called the Taiji divine sword.

A large four-legged cauldron, as heavy as a mountain and releasing dense mist, called the Taiji Creation.

A thick divine mirror glowing with a bright divine light, called

Taiji Universe.

The cloak airily landed on Ji Hao's body and transformed into an ordinary-looking long shirt, soft and weightless.

The eight-foot longsword fell into Ji Hao's hand, sometimes bone-piercingly cold and sometimes unbearably hot. When it landed in Ji Hao's hands, it was as light as a feather, but when he tried to wield it, it was as heavy as the tallest mountain in the world.

The large cauldron floated in the left side of the red sun, continually releasing dense mist, and seemed to be super mysterious. The secrets of this cauldron would have to be figured them out by Ji Hao himself.

The divine mirror flashed, showing all the stars, mountains and rivers in the world. This was the Pan Xi divine mirror without question, but somehow, it was now many times more powerful than before. The Pan Xi divine mirror contained forty-nine natural inhibitions, but by now, just like the golden bridge, the number of natural inhibitions contained in the mirror had turned fifty!

"The great Dao of Taiji is all in your heart...Go, this great disaster is actually an opportunity for you." The voices of Priest Dachi, Priest Qing Wei, and Priest Yu Yu could be heard simultaneously, while a gentle force pushed Ji Hao out of the Dachi Sky.

During this whole process, Ji Hao felt that a mysterious pair of eyes had been fixed on him all the time, until he left.

Once he left the Dachi Sky, a jade talisman in his sleeve quaked intensely.

Chapter 999: Taiji Creation

Beyond the sky of Pan Gu world, nothing but countless stars existed in the void.They kept moving along their original tracks internally.

Ji Hao touched the jade talismans in his sleeve and chuckled. Si Wen Ming was getting married? This was good!

The starlight poured on Ji Hao's body. The Taiji cloak looked as clear as water. On its surface, countless starlights sparkled while being quietly absorbed by the cloak. Ji Hao didn't cast any magic, but the Taiji cloak had been automatically purifying the starlight, creating strands of silver mist, and sending into Ji Hao's body. It was thus constantly improving his physical strength, power of Dao and primordial spirit power.

Ji Hao held the Taiji divine sword in his hand. The sword was cool, and through its edge, streams of starlight were being absorbed by the sword. Ji Hao clearly sensed that the sword was just like a living creature which had been cultivating and strengthening itself.

The Taiji Creation cauldron and Taiji Universe mirror floated above Ji Hao's head, while starlight transformed into large clouds of mist, drifting into the cauldron. The surface of the mirror looked like an enormous whirlpool, as beams of visible starlight rushed over from extremely far away to be absorbed by the mirror.

Ji Hao didn't know how much efforts Priest Qing Wei and Yu Yu, and that dreadful being he sensed yet dared not to even think about, spent to turn those treasures of his into these four top-grade supreme pieces. Neither did Ji Hao know how much this cost Qing Wei and Yu Yu.

Nine suns devil-destroying sword, nine suns spear and the other treasures of Ji Hao had the power of the great Dao of sun, and the power of the great Dao of sun was indeed great. Yet it was also way

too violent and fierce. Before, with the help of those treasures, the great Dao Ji Hao pursued was an extreme of Dao. But now, those treasures of his were remolded, turned into the current four pieces Ji Hao had. These four treasures had both positive and negative powers, which were also known as Yin and Yang. Yin and Yang supported each other, and somehow, these four pieces had already shown a so-called ‘spirit of great Dao’ mentioned by the mysterious man before.

"Hmm!" The mysterious man’s voice abruptly came from Ji Hao’s spiritual space.

"Didn’t they discover you?" Ji Hao immediately asked.

"Who? Dachi? Qing Wei? Yu Yu? Or the one who has been hiding all the time?" The mysterious man laughed rumblingly and said, "Little guy, let me ask you a question...Can mortal people see ghosts?"

"Surely...not!" Ji Hao didn’t know why the mysterious man asked such a strange question. Ordinary human beings surely couldn’t see any ghost. Not to mention ordinary human beings, even Maguspriests beneath the senior-level couldn’t see those things called ‘ghosts’ by mortal people, unless they cultivated themselves based on the great Dao of ghost.

"Ah, that’s right." laughed the mysterious man, "To them, I’m a ghost. I’m dead. If mortal people can’t see ghosts, how could they possibly see me?"

Eh? Eh? Eh??

Ji Hao was badly confused. This old man sounded somehow reasonable. Mortal people couldn’t see ghosts. If one counted Priest Dachi and the others as mortal people, and if the mysterious man was at the same level, after he died, it seemed that...

But this wasn’t right. "Old man!" Ji Hao yelled in his spiritual space, "Old Man, who are you trying to fool here? They’re..."

The mysterious man chuckled and said, "What are they? Was I weaker than them back then?"

Sighing slightly, the mysterious man continued blandly, "However, it’s obvious that this time, they have encountered a major trouble. Dachi has forcibly cultivated you, even by risking losing a part of his own cultivation. Dachi could be counted as the one who respects nature the most, but even he was willing to do things against nature like this. It seems that this time, the trouble they encountered is not small at all."

Without giving Ji Hao a chance to ask further questions, the mysterious man directly changed the topic.

"Then..." Ji Hao gasped in shock and asked with a deep voice.

The mysterious man interrupted him and said, "You’re not qualified enough to step into that. Protect yourself and those people valued by you...All in all, just follow your heart. I think, this is also the real intention of Priest Dachi, for the efforts he made on you, right?"

Pausing for a second, the mysterious man continued with that deep yet strong voice, "Go to Buzhou Mountain. These four pieces of yours are not bad. They’re already supreme pre-world treasures. But after all, they’re made by others, that means on using them, your own power will still limit the powers of these treasures. You still need a real spirit treasure."

The mysterious man sighed and helplessly murmured, "In fact, if you’re strong enough, you won't be needing these things. But you, little guy, you’re so weak... Why are you so weak? Now, you can only rely on these treasures and weapons to defend yourself. This is just..."

Ji Hao was almost driven mad by the mysterious man’s words. Cultivated by Priest Dachi, his seed of Dao of sun had already successfully started to generate a rudiment of Dao. The red sun had the extremely positive power on the outside and the extremely

negative power on the inside, Ying and Yang had been merging together, which meant Ji Hao already had a foot stepped into the grade of rudiment of Dao, which equaled to the level of Supreme Magi.

Once Yin and Yang merged completely together, the Dao of Taiji would be created by the combination of Yin and Yang. Thus, Ji Hao would formally step into the grade of rudiment of Dao.

Despite such a high level he was going to reach, the mysterious man still thought that he was too weak? How high did this old man set his sights?

Shaking his head, Ji Hao didn't continue the conversation with the mysterious man. Instead, he let the golden bridge dart out from between his eyebrows, then transformed his body into a clear golden light, flashed across the air and disappeared.

Being cultivated by Priest Dachi, Ji Hao's cultivation of Dao improved largely. Although he didn't know which exact grade he was in at the moment, and he couldn't understand any of things regarding the great Dao which Priest Dachi forcibly put inside his head, it was a fact that his power had been improved by more than a hundred times.

He sensed an immeasurably great power from his own body, which made him feel incomparably powerful. But at the same time, that great power was so easy to control.

With the power of the golden bridge, Ji Hao spent a small half a day to come down to the remaining half of Buzhou Mountain from above the sky.

The bottom half of Buzhou Mountain was dark, standing straight on the ground. Compared to the melted upper half of Buzhou Mountain, the bottom half was thicker and larger. Although the mountaintop had already collapsed, it was still amazingly tall, reaching straight into the clouds.

Floating in front of Buzhou Mountain, Ji Hao felt that indescribable power of that mountain once again. It was like the whole world crushed down on him.

A watery cloud swooshed down from above his head. Those were a few enormous aquatic creatures diving down with tens of thousands of water-kind warriors from the gate of the heaven. An aquatic creature, who had his face covered in black scales, and a long tongue reaching out of his mouth, growled loudly, "Earl Yao Ji Hao, did you come to die?"

Ji Hao snorted coldly, as nine clouds rose from his head and carried up a hundreds of meters wide red sun. From the red sun, the Taiji Creation cauldron darted out, releasing streams of mist. They wrapped those aquatic creatures up and suddenly dragged them back into the cauldron.

Dong! Dong! Dong! Three thunderous noises came from the cauldron in a row, then following a clattering sound, Ji Hao pointed at the cauldron. Next, thousands of fist-sized top-grade water magic crystal pieces, thousands of square-shaped metal blocks and hundreds of thumb-sized blood-red pills flew out from the cauldron.

The few low-grade Divine-Magus-level aquatic creatures and tens of thousands of weaker water-kind creatures were turned into those things.

The Taiji creation cauldron extracted the water power from their bodies, then compressed it into water magi crystals. The armors worn by those water-kind warriors were turned back into metal blocks, while their spirit blood became spirit creature blood pills, which could largely improve the powers of spirit creatures!

Chapter 1000: A Big Half

Ji Hao picked up a spirit creature blood pill, sniffed it, and sensed a nice aroma. Through his nose, a strong warm power drilled straight into his internal organs. Before swallowing the pill, Ji Hao had already felt the great power in it.

The spirit blood of tens of thousands of aquatic creatures was turned into merely hundreds of blood pills. It was not hard to imagine how powerful these blood pills were.

"Take it, all yours!" Ji Hao gave the blood pill in his hand to Mr. Crow, who stood on his shoulder, and the two baby fire snakes coiling around his arms.

Mr. Crow picked the blood pill with his beak and swallowed. Then, his feathers stood straight up one after another and tinkled against each other. The pair of snakes each swallowed over ten blood pills, then their bodies froze suddenly, as thin streams of flame spurted out from their bodies. Next, the power vibration released from them started to grow stronger and stronger, as their pairs of eyes shone brightly, that made them look fierce and extraordinary.

Packing the rest of the blood pills, Ji Hao raised his head and looked at the higher sky, then straightened the five fingers of his right hand and moved it across his own neck.

He knew that Gong Gong could see him. He did that on purpose to let Gong Gong see!

‘You can send more people down to try to kill me!’

‘Or you can come down yourself to get me!’

A drifting cloud moved across from above Ji Hao’s head. A strong gale rose, pushing the cloud to the edge of the sky. A few enormous floating mountains swayingly flew across, and on the edge of those floating mountains, groups of human beings with coarse clothes

tremblingly reached out their heads, curiously looking at Ji Hao standing under Buzhou Mountain.

Some people were yelling loudly. These people lived on floating mountains survived the flood and the endless rain. At the moment, they had been excitedly discussing the amazingly tall Buzhou Mountain, which was too high to reach for them.

Those enormous floating mountains slowly drifted by. A floating mountain scratched a corner of Buzhou Mountain, causing a few giant rocks to fall off from the former, smashing to the ground. Along with shouts and screams of those human beings living on it, this floating mountain slowly spun in the air, while being pushed away by the gale, behind that drifting cloud.

"Taiji Creation, up!" Ji Hao gave a long and resonant growl. Following his voice, the Taiji creation cauldron rose into the sky from above his head. The higher the cauldron flew, the larger it became. By the time it reached to the top of the bottom half of Buzhou Mountain, the opening of the cauldron had already turned tens of million of miles in radius, like a tremendous mouth floating on top of Buzhou Mountain.

"Old man, back then, Spirit Wa, Dong Gong, Ximu and my two uncles combined their powers, and even with that, they only managed to take the upper half of Buzhou Mountain!" Ji Hao cautiously asked the mysterious man in his spiritual space, "The upper half of the mountain was a lot thinner than the bottom half, and also much shorter..."

"Much shorter?" responded the mysterious man, "The collapsed half of Buzhou Mountain was only less than one-tenth of the entire mountain. The mountain is also called Sky Pillar, and a pillar needs its foundation. Sixty percent of Buzhou Mountain is buried in the ground of Midland...The part taken by Priest Qing Wei was only a small piece."

Pausing slightly, the mysterious man sighed and continued,

"However, the undamaged Sky Pillar is the hardest to move, because it is the core of the world, and was supported by the powers of countless earth meridians and natural laws. Now that the Sky Pillar is broken, and all of its power has been restrained by itself, therefore, the remaining part of it, is actually easy to deal with."

Ji Hao was enlightened. He pointed at the Taiji Creation cauldron and let it release a dense stream of mist that coiled around the Buzhou Mountain like countless enormous dragons, from top to bottom. Within half an hour, the part of the mountain above the ground was entirely wrapped up by the mist. Afterwards, the mist broke the earth around the mountain, and drilled into the ground.

Rumbling noises could be heard without an end. Ji Hao worryingly asked the mysterious man, "Nothing bad will happen after I take the remaining part of Buzhou Mountain, right?"

The mysterious man laughed blandly and responded, "It’s like a broken bowl. It’s a broken piece now, so what bad thing could happen? After all, this mountain is transformed from Pan Gu’s spine. Ninety percent of Pan Gu’s spine as your spirit treasure, it’s more than enough."

Ji Hao laughed and threw out another question, "If so, why didn’t anyone take it?"

Spirit Wa, Dong Gong, Xi Mu, Priest Dachi, Priest Qing Wei, they must know that the remaining part of Buzhou Mountain is a true treasure! They were probably too embarrassed to do it, because who were they? But what about Priest Hua and Priest Mu? Those two were no kind ones. Such a giant piece of Buzhou Mountain, it could be made into an incomparably powerful supreme treasure. But why didn’t they try to take it?

The mysterious man didn’t say a word, not a single word.

Above the sky of Pan Gu world, in the misty Dachi sky.

By the gate of Preist Dachi's Palace of Dao, Priest Dachi, Priest Qing Wei, and Priest Yu Yu stood in a straight line with their eyes popped out. Through the immeasurable chaos and the sky of Pan Gu world, they seemed to be stunned, as they were watching Ji Hao taking the remaining part of Buzhou Mountain with the power of the Taiji Creation Cauldron that he had just attained.

A stream of purple mist coiled above their heads, within which, a misty gray pair of eyes had been blinking slowly, also in a slight surprise. This pair of eyes was watching Ji Hao.

A while later, Priest Dachi laughed loudly and said, "Good!"

Priest Qing Wei rubbed his own beard and silently shook his head.

As for Yu Yu, he held his belly with his hands and laughed out wildly. He even bent his body and showed his shining white teeth. "Hahaha, you all valued your faces so much. With an excuse of saving all living beings in the world, you took the upper half of Buzhou Mountain, but you had no excuse to take the other part... My disciple is the best. Since it's a treasure, just take it, what do you want your faces for?"

Yu Yu laughed so happily that he even had saliva spurted out from his mouth corners as he said, "Look, look, this is the true natural way of cultivation, this is the true heart!"

While shaking his head with pride, Yu Yu grinned and continued, "Just like a newborn, once it sees the breasts of its mother, it would try to bite. This is the true nature, the true instinct, the real Dao of nature! Why do you have to restrain your own desire? Why do you have to pretend? This disciple of mine may not have other specialties, but this true heart of his, it's quite my thing!"

The purple mist above the three of them coiled, then the misty gray pair of eyes closed. The owner of these eyes seemed to be quite speechless. Priest Dachi shook his head and gave a bitter smile as he raised his head. He took a glance at that purple mist and asked,

"Shifu, those two younger brothers?"

A warm, mild yet completely emotionless and bland voice responded, "Earlier, they went down at night and tried to take the remaining part of Buzhou Mountain. I struck them back to the west with a divine thunderbolt...Within three to five years, they won't come out again."

Priest Dachi, Priest Qing Wei, and Priest Yu Yu glanced at each other and smiled together.

In the Midland, the Taiji Creation cauldron slightly trembled. Then, following a series of rumbling noise, the remaining half of Buzhou Mountain flew up, section by section, and flew into the cauldron.

In the air, a strong gale roared while dark clouds gathered. The dense dark clouds condensed into Gong Gong's face. That face glared at Ji Hao furiously with his teeth gnashed, seeming to be saying something. Ji Hao didn't want to pay any attention to Gong Gong. Instead, he only focused on what he was doing, moving the buried larger half of Buzhou Mountain into the Taiji Creation cauldron.

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man said slowly, "Ah, little guy, what kind of spirit treasure do you like?"

"A bell? A tower? A magic seal? Or, do you like any other odd type? Such as...Hmm, you choose!"

Table of Contents

- The Magus Era
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 901: Gong Gong’s Power
  - Chapter 902: Hundred Dragons Take up the Water
  - Chapter 903: The Silence of Tianming
  - Chapter 904: The Holy Blood From Xuanyuan
  - Chapter 905: Lotus Body
  - Chapter 906: Gong Sun Tianming
  - Chapter 907: Disturbances
  - Chapter 908: The Beginning of Unrest
  - Chapter 909: Departing
  - Chapter 910: The Great Formation Activated
  - Chapter 911: The Weapon Chooses Its Owner
  - Chapter 912: You Xiong City
  - Chapter 913: Possessed by Sky Devil
  - Chapter 914: Divine Thunder Descend
  - Chapter 915: Facing The Sky Devil
  - Chapter 916: All Attack
  - Chapter 917: Killed by Gong Gong
  - Chapter 918: A Fight Between Fire and The Water
  - Chapter 919: Mountain Collapsing
  - Chapter 920: Hit the Mountain
  - Chapter 921: Heroes
  - Chapter 922: Guard
  - Chapter 923: Join Hands
  - Chapter 924: Give A Suggestion Under the Danger
  - Chapter 925: Sky-Turning Seal
  - Chapter 926: A Heavy Rain
  - Chapter 927: Torrents of Rain
  - Chapter 928: Interrogate
  - Chapter 929: The Change in Pan Jia World
  - Chapter 930: A Sign of the Flood
  - Chapter 931: Worlds Connected
  - Chapter 932: A Great Disaster

Chapter 933: Volunteering
Chapter 934: A Gleam of Light
Chapter 935: Asking Help From the Sect
Chapter 936: Work Together
Chapter 937: Violently Break
Chapter 938: The Directory of Treasures
Chapter 939: Sit and Watch
Chapter 940: Henggong Bars the Road
Chapter 941: Weapon-proof
Chapter 942: Bringing Henggong Fish Under Control
Chapter 943: An Unexpected Change in The Divine Origin Pool
Chapter 944: The Heart of Chaos
Chapter 945: Taking The Divine Pivot Hall
Chapter 946: One to Three
Chapter 947: Gong Gong gets Beaten
Chapter 948: Get Away Safely
Chapter 949: The Beginning Stage of Water-control
Chapter 950: Ten-Thousand Dragons Seal the Water
Chapter 951: The Army of Water Creatures
Chapter 952: The Enormous Shark, King of Aquatic Creatures
Chapter 953: Shark Brothers
Chapter 954: The Disaster of the Water-kind
Chapter 955: Boiling Water
Chapter 956: The God of Si Water
Chapter 957: Thrilling Fight Against the River God
Chapter 958: Cut the River God
Chapter 959: Catch Alive
Chapter 960: Roasted Octopus
Chapter 961: The Miserable Situation After the Disaster
Chapter 962: Sweep Across and Put Down
Chapter 963: Ambition of the Dragon King
Chapter 964: Sneak Attack Again
Chapter 965: Bao Shu and Bao Yin
Chapter 966: The Destruction of Both of Them
Chapter 967: Bewilder with A Secret Magic
Chapter 968: Have Ample Food and Clothing
Chapter 969: Ominous Omen
Chapter 970: Unexpected
Chapter 971: Go Alone

Chapter 972: Dark Killing Thread
Chapter 973: Going in the House
Chapter 974: The River God and His Sons
Chapter 975: Dark Killing Flags
Chapter 976: Immeasurable Dark Power
Chapter 977: Eat His Own Bitter Fruit
Chapter 978: Deep Dark Soul Cauldron
Chapter 979: Here Comes Yemo Tian
Chapter 980: The Real Purpose
Chapter 981: Take the Cauldron And the Bottle
Chapter 982: Take the Souls
Chapter 983: Kill Si Wen Ming
Chapter 984: A Body of Breathing Earth
Chapter 985: Devour Each Other
Chapter 986: Deep Dark Soul Cauldron
Chapter 987: Shapeless Deep Dark
Chapter 988: Destructive Weapon
Chapter 989: Shaking the World
Chapter 990: Dachi Makes a Move
Chapter 991: The Twelve Emperors in Power
Chapter 992: Pride
Chapter 993: Ignore
Chapter 994: The Rise of the Water-Kind
Chapter 995: Unite by Marriage
Chapter 996: Snatching the Bride
Chapter 997: Crazy and Fierce
Chapter 998: The Dao of Taiji
Chapter 999: Taiji Creation
Chapter 1000: A Big Half